PERSPECTIVES IN SOCIOLOGY

PERSPECTIVES IN SOCIOLOGY

Herman R. Lantz, GENERAL EDITOR

ADVISORY EDITORS

Alvin W. Goulder, *Washington University*
Robert A. Nisbet, *University of California*
Melvin M. Tumin, *Princeton University*

[p. ii]

Negroes in Brazil

000

A Study of Race Contact at Bahia

Donald Pierson

Foreword by Herman R. Lantz

SOUTHERN ILLINOIS UNIVERSITY PRESS
Carbondale and Edwardsville
FEFFER & SIMONS, INC.
London and Amsterdam

[Title Page]

[P. iii]

009

COPYRIGHT 1942 BY THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
FOREWORD BY HERMAN R. LANTZ, PREFACE TO THIS EDITION, AND INTRODUCTION TO THIS EDITION COPYRIGHT © 1967 BY SOUTHERN ILLINOIS UNIVERSITY PRESS
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CARD NUMBER 66-15058
THIS EDITION MANUFACTURED BY OFFSET LITHOGRAPHY IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

FOREWORD

NEGROES IN BRAZIL: *A Study of Race Contact at Bahia* was originally published at a time when the world was confronted with basic decisions in regard to the kind of social order it hoped to build, and the basic values that would govern the relationships between its inhabitants. As a case history of a pattern of race relations which differed radically from that in the United States, *Negroes in Brazil* was especially significant because it emerged at a time when American sociological concerns with problems of race were still largely preoccupied with relations in this country. The impact was to raise immediately basic questions about the historic inevitability of Negro-white relations as patterned in the United States. 121 *

Although much may have been settled in World War II, it is clear that a great deal remains to be resolved in the field of race relations. Thus, the republication of the present work is especially timely in view of the present crises in race relations, both here and abroad. In a period of drastic upheavals, when traditionally underprivileged groups are thirsting for power and dominance, an understanding of the ways in which societies have dealt with race differences becomes an ongoing necessity for group survival. That new and, in some instances, radically different perceptions of race relations will continue to emerge is reasonably clear. While such changes at any single point in time appear to take on unique characteristics, a closer view often reveals a basis in history and cultural experience. It is perhaps in this sense that this edition of *Negroes in Brazil* is so significant. Brazilian na-

*

121 tional policy chose to assimilate the Negro rather than to segregate him; thus, with a significantly large Negro population, Brazil has no real race problem. Moreover, any Negro in Brazil who is qualified is given a status to which his abilities entitle him.

128 [114] We are fortunate to have the original author, Dr. Donald Pierson, write the new introduction to the present work. Dr. Pierson, a man widely published in sociology, is a distinguished scholar, who has spent many years studying the Brazilian racial situation. In his new introduction, Donald Pierson has carefully reanalyzed his original work in terms [127] of events which have transpired. In so doing he has integrated the significant scholarly publications which have emerged over the years. Although significant social changes have transpired in Brazil since the original publication of this work, the original formulations regarding race relations still remain valid, a testimony to the original perceptions of the author. The result is one of the most up-to-date analyses of race relations in Brazil today.

The author's original preface and the original introduction by Robert E. Park have been retained. Each gives a sense of historical continuity to the effort; and each contains comments for the present. Indeed, as suggested by Park, the task of maintaining an effective social order in the context of drastic social change constitutes one of man's greatest challenges; this observation is surely of contemporary relevance.

Herman R. Lantz

Southern Illinois University
January, 1966

PREFACE TO THIS EDITION

FOLLOWING several impressions, this book has been 128 out-of-print for some time; and, accordingly, I am grateful to Professor Herman R. Lantz and to Southern Illinois University Press for making it available again.

In preparation for the new Introduction a limited and preliminary survey was made of the criteria of rank in Brazil, with particular attention to the role of color. For assistance in this effort I am indebted to Professor Thales de Azevedo of Bahia, Professors Levy Cruz and Cecilia Sanioto DiLascio of Recife, Professors Santos Neves and Renato José Costa Pacheco of Vitória, and Professor Hiroshi Saito of São Paulo. 121* [114]

As the manuscript for the original book was being completed, in 1939, I was invited to São Paulo to help build up a pioneer school in Brazil in the social sciences; and I remained in that country for nearly two decades. At the time of this return, however, and for many years thereafter, there was little interest, in educational circles or elsewhere, in the study of the local racial situation. My time became so absorbed by an extensive round of other activities that for many years it was possible to give only limited attention to this problem.

By 1951, however, interest had built up in certain intellectual circles to the point where the UNESCO studies in several parts of the country were possible; but I was at that time also engaged, along with a considerable number of students and young professors whom I had helped train, in a series of studies in the São Francisco valley, so that it was not possible to accept the invitation to join the UNESCO

7

121 research. With its appearance, and with that of other studies carried out since that time—but also including a few which had appeared previously, in addition to the pioneer work of Professor Gilberto Freyre and of others which antedated this book—a considerable body of materials on the Brazilian racial situation is now available, especially in Portuguese. 122 In an attempt to extend and to bring more up-to-date my knowledge and understanding of this situation, I have consulted a rather extensive bibliography, in so far as it was possible to gain access to it by diligent effort in both Brazil and the United States. For patient and considerate assistance with this task, I am under especial obligation to Dr. Zacharias Pithon Barreto and Thales de Azevedo of Bahia, Nell W. Herbert of the reference department of Pack Memorial Library in Asheville, Professor Edgar T. Thompson of Duke University, Professor Mario Wagner Vieira da Cunha, Maria Isabel dos Santos Carvalho, and Maria Aparecida Madeira Kerbeg of São Paulo, and, most especially of all, Professor Emilio Willems of Vanderbilt University. For suggestions regarding bibliography and other encouragement, I am grateful to Professors Richard M. Morse of Yale University, Charles Wagley of Columbia University, and T. Lynn Smith of the University of Florida.

128 Some of the materials from a paper prepared for the World Conference on Race Relations, held in Honolulu in 1954, and which appeared in *Race Relations in World Perspective*, edited by Andrew W. Lind and published the next year by the University of Hawaii Press, appear in altered form in this new Introduction. That book is now out-of-print; and I am grateful to Professor Lind, and to Thomas Nickerson, director of the University of Hawaii Press, for permission to use these materials here.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

Thales de Azevedo, anthropologist and director of the *Faculdade de Filosofia* of the University of Bahia, a lifetime resident of that city and a researcher whose studies of the local racial situation have received considerable attention, has honored me by reading the new Introduction in manuscript; as also have Emilio Willems, whose researches and publications during a long residence in Brazil are well known, and Professor Herbert Blumer of the University of California, who has carried on research in Brazil in a related field. Obviously, however, no one except the present author is responsible for any imprecision or inadequacy which the reader may note; nor are these specialists necessarily in agreement with the author on all points. For painstaking attention to numerous tasks in connection with the preparation of the new Introduction, and especially to the typing of extensive notes and to manuscript detail, I am much indebted to my wife, Helen Batchelor Pierson.

JULY, 1965 DONALD PIERSON

[P. X is blank]

PREFACE

ONE of the more significant consequences of World War I was a material reduction in the isolation of the United States, at least in so far as European peoples and European problems were concerned. Until very recently, however, our ignorance of almost everything south of Panama has been profound. In common with the other South American countries, Brazil has remained for us largely terra incognita. Even today, when tourists are discovering that Rio de Janeiro is one of the world's most beautiful cities, many intelligent and usually well-informed persons are surprised to learn, for instance, that Portuguese and not Spanish is the language of Brazil and that by reason of Brazil's European language-speaking population being greater than that of all other South American countries combined, or approximately equal to the population of France, Portuguese is the most-spoken language in South America.

This book, it is hoped, will contribute toward making better known and understood one aspect of Brazilian life, namely, the career of the Brazilian Negro. It makes no pretense of being a systematic and exhaustive inquiry into assimilation and acculturation as these processes operate in Brazil. It has rather the character of a general reconnaisance which conceivably might lay some of the groundwork for future investigation. It is designed to furnish at least a preliminary answer to the question: What has happened to the Africans who were imported in such large numbers into this part of the New World?

* 121 [114] In 1934, while I was a Fellow in sociology at the University of Chicago, my attention was called by Dr. Herbert Blumer to the possibilities of Brazil as a locus for the study of racial and cultural contacts, and I subsequently received encouragement from Drs. Robert Redfield, Louis Wirth, and Ellsworth Faris to consider these possibilities seriously. As I subsequently went through the available literature in several languages, I became increasingly interested in Brazil, particularly as a locus for investigating, in an intimate and detailed way, what appeared to be a racial situation sufficiently distinct from that in India, for example, where the social order is based upon caste, or that in the United States, where the Negro is now escaping from a caste status and becoming a racial minority similar to the Jew in Europe and elsewhere, to constitute, along with, perhaps, the Hawaiian and certain other similar racial situations, a distinct type. At approximately this same time Dr. Robert E. Park returned from an extended world-tour, during which he had observed at first hand a number of the more important centers of racial and cultural contact, including Brazil, in which he also had for some time been particularly interested.

[114] [122] The outgrowth of these converging interests was a two-year period of field work in Brazil (from 1935 to 1937) as research assistant of the Social Science Research Committee of the University of Chicago, to which organization, together with the Rosenwald Fund, I am indebted for making this study financially possible. Twenty-two months of this period of residence were spent in intimate study of the social order of one city, the old seaport of Bahia.

This focusing of attention upon one particular locus is, in my opinion, an inescapable procedure, since the sentiments which determine human and personal relations are so invariably crystallized in the customs and habits of each locality that any portrayal of race relations which seeks to be comprehensible must of necessity make some analysis of local folkways and mores. 121*

000

To name all the Bahian friends from whose characteristic courtesy, so proverbial in Brazil, I profited during my field work would be an exceedingly difficult task. For extensive and continuous assistance I am under obligation particularly to Zacharias Pithon Barretto, João Canna Brasil, Hosannah de Oliveira, Alfredo Gonsalves Amorim, Nestor Duarte, Aloysio de Carvalho Filho, Laura Schlaepfer, João da Silva Campos, Friars Tomaz and Protasius, Canon Manoel Barbosa, Francisco Sá, Euvaldo Diniz Gonçalves, José Lourenço de A. Costa, Edison Carneiro, Edgar de Britto, André Leon Achdjian, Martiniano, Mãe Anninha, and Zázá. In addition, for other important contributions, I am indebted to Anisio Teixeira, Innocencio de Goes Calmon, Theodoro Sampaio, Waldemar and Maria Lages, Braz do Amaral, Oscar Caetano, Belfort Saraiva, Jayme Junqueira Ayres, Elysio Lisboa, Pamphilo de Carvalho, Dantas Junior, Pedro de Mello, Jorge de Menezes Berenguer, Alfredo Pimentel, Francisco da Conceição Menezes, Oscar Cordeiro, Ignacio Tosta Filho, João Mendonça, Edgard Matta, Corypheu de Azevedo Marques, Antonio Barretto, Licia Barretto, Eliezer and Carmen Santos, Reginaldo Guimarães, Enoch Torres, Silvio de São Paulo, Sergio Maranhão, Enoch Carteado, Tharcicio Telles, João Varella, George Hasselmann, Socrates Marback, Frederico de Ferreira Bandeira, Pedro Rodrigues Bandeira, Vicente Café, and Galba Araujo; to a number of foreign residents at Bahia, especially the vice-consul of the United States, Lee Worley, and his successor, Robert Janz, Bruno Reitman, Margot and Gaby

000 Gleig, M. G. and Kate White, Peter and Irene Baker, Ralph and Catherine Varhaug, and "Slim" Jordan; and to a host of others, including Maria Bádá, Maria do Carmo, Pae Procopio, Pae Bernardinho, Pae Joazinho, Pae Manoel Paim, Mãe Mininինha, Mãe Sabina, Dona Germania, Felisbertus, Hypolito, Bimba, Rodolfo, Marciano, Nestor, Edgar, Satyro, Estanislau, Antonio, Bábê, Angelo, Joanna, Dédé, Adalberto, and Eulalia.

128 For the clarification of several obscure points raised in reading, observation, or investigation I am grateful to such able interpreters of the Brazilian scene as Gilberto Freyre, Affonso de E. Taunay, Oliveira Vianna, Pedro Calmon, Rüdiger Bilden, and Lois Williams. Dr. Arthur Ramos, who is intimately acquainted with the Bahian Negro, and Dr. Hugh C. Tucker, who during fifty-four years' residence in Brazil has become acquainted with the country as have few North Americans, read the manuscript and offered pertinent comment. Drs. Robert Redfield, Herbert Blumer, Louis Wirth, Ellsworth Faris, and William F. Ogburn have from the inception of the study extended me many courtesies, the most important of which have been their unsparingly critical but always constructive suggestions. I am deeply indebted to Dr. Charles Johnson and Fisk University for the leisure to prepare the manuscript for publication and to Mrs. Martha Harris for patient and careful attention to manuscript detail. I am under perhaps the greatest obligation to Dr. Robert E. Park, whose seminal mind, long-range patience as a teacher, and rich research experience have contributed in fundamental ways to this study. My wife, Helen Batchelor Pierson, has been an invaluable assistant.

DONALD PIERSON

ESCOLA LIVRE DE SOCIOLOGIA E POLITICA
DE SÃO PAULO
October 1939

CONTENTS

000

Foreword v
Preface to this Edition vii
Preface to Original Edition xi
List of Tables xvii
Introduction to this Edition xix
Introduction to Original Edition lxxiii

I THE SETTING

I The Seaport of Bahia 3

II SLAVERY

II The Coming of the Africans 29
III *Casa Grande* and *Senzala* 71

III MISCEGENATION

IV Race Mixture and the Crumbling of the Color Line 111
V Intermarriage 141

000

IV RACE AND SOCIAL STATUS

VI The Rise of the Mixed-Blood 159
VII The Present Ethnic Composition of the Classes in Bahian Society 177
VIII Racial Ideology and Racial Attitudes 206

V THE AFRICAN HERITAGE

IX *Os Africanos* 237
X The *Candomblé* 275

VI THE BAHIAN RACIAL SITUATION

XI Black and White at Bahia 321

Appendixes

A An Autobiographical Sketch of a Colored Citizen 353
B Common Sayings Regarding the Negro 362
C The Bomfim Festival 366
Glossary 369
Selected Bibliography 379
Supplementary Bibliography 387
Index to Names 409
Subject Index 413

LIST OF TABLES

TABLE — PAGE

1. Families Dwelling along the Avenida Sete de Setembro Classified According to Ethnic Composition, Bahia, 1936 23
2. Probable Ethnic Origin of the First Five Hundred Inviduals Listed as *Brancos* in the Files of the Gabinete de identificação, Bahia, 1937 129
3. Births According to Color, Bahia, 1932 130
4. Deaths According to Color, Bahia, 1932 130
5. Ethnic Origin (as Determined by Inspection) of Five Thousand Participants in the "Micarêta" Festival, Bahia, 1936 132
6. Variation in Physical Characteristics between Children and Their Mothers, Bahia, 1936 133
7. Probable Ethnic Origin of the First Five Hundred Women Classified as *Morenas* in the Files of the Gabinete de identificação, Bahia, 1936 138
8. Racial Distribution in Those Employments at Bahia in Which Blacks Appear To Be Predominant, 1936 . 178
9. Racial Distribution in Those Employments at Bahia in Which Mulattoes Appear To Be Predominant over Blacks, 1936 179
10. Racial Distribution in Those Employments at Bahia in Which Mulattoes Appear To Be Predominant over Whites, 1936 180
11. Racial Distribution in Those Employments at Bahia in Which Whites Appear To Be Predominant, 1936 . 181
12. Racial Distribution of Spectators at a Sports Event, Bahia, 1936 184

LIST OF TABLES

TABLE PAGE

13. Comparative School Attendance of the Ethnic Units at Bahia, 1936 188

14. Participation by Ethnic Units, Carnival Parade, Bahia, 1936 203

15. Principal *Orixás* of the Gêge-Nagô Fetish Cults at Bahia 282

16. Racial Distribution in the Classes at Bahia, 1936 . 338

INTRODUCTION TO THIS EDITION BB *

IN CONSIDERATION of the general lack of knowledge 121
in the United States at the time regarding anything south 128
of the Rio Grande, the original publisher used "Brazil"
in the title of this book, although the author never claimed
so wide a coverage for it. A more precise indication appeared
in the subtitle which the original publisher considerately permitted—and which again appears in this edition—"A Study
of Race Contact at Bahia." In other words, this is a case BB *
study, in a given place, of a more general situation.

To one who picks up this study, undertaken as it was in 121
1935, or thirty years ago, several questions will perhaps
occur: How precise was the identification of the Bahian
racial situation at the time? Has this situation changed
since? How representative of the situation throughout Brazil
was, and is, that of Bahia? Do we know any more today
than we did then regarding the circumstances which pro- B
duced it? BB *

Each of these questions is all the more pertinent because 121 *
some persons have been puzzled by conflicting reports, in 563 *
more recent years, regarding the precise character of the
Brazilian racial situation. The confusion is due, in our judgment, to the heterogeneity of a vast land; to the rather subtle
character of the Brazilian racial situation; to the role of
semantics in the process of communication; to the limited
amount of empirical research which has been carried out
with reference to this problem; and to variations in the
objectives, approaches and methods of writers in the field,
some of whom, by emphasizing, unduly, certain aspects of

B
BB
*121
*563

the total situation, have thrown the "picture" out of perspective and unwittingly distorted it.

B
*184
121
BB
*121
B
BB
*121
*166
*563

Brazil is an enormous country; and, in spite of its culture being homogeneous to a surprising extent, considerable variation in historical, ecological, economic and sociological circumstance exists from region to region.[1] Moreover, the extensive changes which have taken place since this study was made increase some of the differences between various parts of the country. A sizeable internal migration has been occurring (cf. Vicente Unzer de Almeida and Octávio Teixeira Mendes Sobrinho, 1952), as individuals have left the rural areas and moved to the towns,[2] and from there, ordinarily later, in considerable numbers and including a high percentage of persons of color, to the larger cities, par-

---

B
[567]
[571]

[1] For one thing, the character and effects of slavery perhaps were not uniform, especially in the more isolated areas on the fringes of settlement, in contrast to the more settled areas, where the controls of public opinion and law were more effective. Little attention has been given to possible variations in the character of the personal relations developed during this period in the coastal plantation areas, with their probable higher degree of primary contacts, in contrast to the mining areas of the interior, with their perhaps more impersonal relations, and to the pastoral areas, where the opportunities for the escape of slaves were perhaps greatest of all. This is not to say that some investigators are not aware of these possible differences, but that there is still lacking any systematic attempt to trace these variations in detail; and especially in terms of *personal*, rather than of merely economic, or power, relationships. The more recent attention to part of this problem has been directed to illustrating the evolution of a historical process whose unfolding is preconceived and hence known in advance, so that the investigator tends to be insulated from new knowledge and new hypotheses.

[2] Cf. Charles Wagley, 1960a: 210. For recent changes in Brazil see, particularly, that illuminating essay, and also L. A. Costa Pinto (1958), Albert O. Hirshman (1963), Rollie E. Poppino (1963), and Irving Louis Horowitz (1964). For bibliographical references in this Introduction, see the appended "Supplementary Bibliography."

B BB *

ticularly São Paulo and Rio de Janeiro but also Belo 121 *
Horizonte, Recife, Porto Alegre, and others, including 166
Bahia.[3] For, stimulated by needs which could not be satisfied 563*
by importation from Europe or the United States under the B
conditions existing during two World Wars—and more par- BB *
ticularly during the last one—and also by growing internal 121
demand, industrialization has been assuming a continually 178
larger role in what has previously been a predominantly agri- 433
cultural and pastoral country. Concomitant with this in- [439]
creased industrialization—but not to be confused with it, B
since, for one thing, it began long before—there also has BB
occurred a rapid and extensive growth of the cities. A high 121*
rate of natural increase of the population has meanwhile con- 178
tinued in all parts of the country, so that it is now estimated [369]
that approximately two and a half million persons are being [161]
added annually to the Brazilian people. New primary, sec-
ondary, technological and professional schools have been set B
up, in an urgent, but not yet adequate attempt—since it BB
began with a huge deficit—to keep up with expanding educa- (871)
tional needs.

The emergence of new employment opportunities, espe-

---

[3] Since the matter may have puzzled some readers, it perhaps should BB
be pointed out that, in keeping with the traditional patterns in such cases 103
during colonization and later, the term "Bahia" was long used to indicate, 128
on the one hand, the Capitania, Province or State of Bahia and, on the other, its capital city, even though the latter had another (and less used) name—Salvador. At the time of our research, the capital city of the State of Bahia—where most of our research was carried on—was widely and commonly known also as "Bahia"; and this name is still being employed. Since this name was used in the original study, it will be retained in this Introduction, in order to avoid possible confusion when consulting different parts of this edition. Incidentally, the spelling of "Bahia" is correctly given here and throughout this book, although, for a time during the "spelling reform" in Brazil (but only temporarily), an effort was made in some quarters to write the name differently.

B The
BB emergence of new employment opportunities, espe-
*121 cially in the centers of industry but also elsewhere, not only
178 has stimulated internal migration but—more importantly for
166 our interest here—has also facilitated social mobility. This
464 has brought significant change, particularly to persons in the
565 lower ranks, who are extensively (but far from exclusively)
of dark color, and whose economic position has long been, on
B the whole, stagnant. There is clearly evident in Brazil what
BB perhaps is the principal long-range trend in the modern
*121 world, namely, the rise of the underprivileged classes into
178 increasingly greater economic and political power; while the
565 growing anonymity of the developing cities is making human
571 relations more impersonal and categoric, and this has led to
a heightened sense of insecurity while also aiding the escape
of individuals of color from the controls of the old superordinate and subordinate relationships developed during
slavery and giving these individuals new conceptions of themselves and of others.

BB
*121
178
565
369

Until comparatively recent years, a middle class like that known in Europe or the United States scarcely existed. At the time of our research at Bahia, for instance, there were only two clearly-defined classes in the city, as attested (see pp. 15 ff.) by the popular division of the inhabitants into *ricos* (literally, "the rich") and *pobres* ("the poor"). There were many families, however, whose occupation, skills, education, or level of living placed them above the lower class but who were not attached by kinship or achievement to the upper ranks. They thus occupied an intermediate position between the two extremes of the social pyramid, although they tended to identify themselves with the interests and values of the upper class. In recent decades, however, the changes mentioned above have produced occupational and educational opportunities never before known, and also greatly stimulated those previously existent, so that, in the large and more

BB *
121
178
565

industrialized cities at least, these intermediate ranks have developed into a definite middle class.

[369]

The so-called "traditional" families, who for so long virtually constituted almost the entire upper class, still play an important role in industrial, commercial, intellectual, and political activities; but although they perhaps were never a completely closed unit, they now are having to accept into their ranks as never before an increasing number of persons who have risen from the intermediate tiers by reason of occupational or educational achievement, acquired wealth, or political influence.

B

BB
121 *
178
565
571

Brazil is thus in process of transition from a predominantly rural, agricultural and pastoral society, with a rather rigid class system, to an urban and industrialized society, where class lines are somewhat less important, and other elements of the economic, political and sociological structures are changing. There is a considerable degree of fluidity, in the midst of which the high value formerly placed upon primary relations, particularly the intimate attachments of members of large kinship, godparent or friendship groups, upon exclusiveness toward groups outside those of immediate personal contact, upon class membership, and upon loyalty is giving away, and new values are emerging. These changes are so extensive that Charles Wagley (1960a) has referred to them as "the Brazilian revolution."

B

BB
121 *
563 *

Owing also to the complex and rather subtle character of the Brazilian racial situation, its analysis is not an easy or simple procedure. Regarding the fact that this differs from that in the United States there is no disagreement. But there is disagreement regarding the character of this difference, its extent, and the circumstances which produced it.

B

BB
[192]

A sizable obstacle to analyzing this situation, and also to making it intelligible to persons in the United States, is a

B
BB
*121
*563
192

confusion over terms, particularly those whose form is identical but whose meaning varies in the two situations. So powerful is the grip of habit over the mind that the connotation of a word in our own culture tends automatically to be carried over into our thinking about an apparent referent elsewhere, even though we may be aware of the difference in meaning. This is particularly true of the general public; but it is also true to some extent of specialists and occurs even in spite of their normal caution.

B
BB
*121
*563
192
171

The simple use of the term "Negro," for instance, when describing the Bahian racial situation, automatically conveys to many persons United States meanings from which it is difficult to escape (cf. E. Franklin Frazier 1942:465). Moreover, the unwarranted assumption on the part of those who use the English language, or who are familiar with it, that the Brazilian term "prêto" can be translated by "Negro," and "branco" by "white," adds to the confusion.

These terms are not interchangeable. In the United States "white" means "of undiluted Caucasian descent"; but in Brazil "branco" can mean "a predominantly white person, no matter what his racial origin," including thousands of light mixed-bloods and, in the case of prestige-bearing individuals, darker mixed-bloods and even an occasional black; or it can mean, at times, merely "a person of prestige" or simply "my friend." On the other hand, "Negro" in the United States means "anyone descended in any degree from an African, *including all mixed-bloods*" (provided origin is known); while "prêto" in Brazil may mean "a person with noticeably Negroid traits" or, at times, merely "a person of low status"[4] or simply "a personal enemy."

B
BB
[574]

[4] Particularly revealing in this respect is an incident witnessed in Sergipe by Felte Bezerra (1950:252). On the beach at a seaside town a

"Branco" and "prêto" are, therefore, first of all, categories of *physical appearance* rather than of race, so that a child will not necessarily be identified with the same "race" as one, or even both, of his parents. These terms also are categories of *social position*, so that rising in rank can take a colored person out of the colored category, a fact observed long ago at Recife by "the careful Koster," as Sir Richard Burton called him (see p. 219 of this book). These and similar terms employed in Brazil are descriptive not only of racial descent but of other and more important (to local individuals) phenomena; and, even more significantly, as we (1955:434) and others have pointed out, the use of these terms *varies with individuals*, in keeping with varying personal relationships, and also with the *same* individual at different times, in keeping with different moods or other circumstances.

B
BB
121*
563*
192.
[554]
B
BB
[571]

In the United States one ordinarily hears only two terms being employed regularly in this connection: "Negro" and "white." "Mulatto" also is used but less often, as are certain other terms in popular speech. Nevertheless, as far as the behavior of the superordinate group is concerned, the principal terms are two; and all persons will be classified with reference to these two categories and behavior will be oriented in keeping with that classification.

B
BB
[171]

In Brazil, on the other hand, the situation is quite different; for one thing, there exists a whole series of what at

B
BB
[826]

---

group of persons from the lower class were engaged in a folk dance, accompanied by singing, known as *cururu*. Although composed largely (but not exclusively) of colored persons, this group was led by a lower-class white. Approaching several other persons nearby, who were spending their vacation at the seaside, and asking if they would like his group to sing and dance where they could be seen and heard more easily, the white leader referred to himself and to the other members of his group as "Nois prêtos" (We blacks).

B
BB
[571]

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

BRAZIL SL1

B
*BB
121
*563
192
826

first sight appears to be racial terms. "It is not simply a matter of black and white," Harry W. Hutchinson (1957: 120) has observed, "but of all the shades in between." In 1935, without making any particular effort, we set down at Bahia twenty terms being used to describe the different "colors" (135-40 and elsewhere in this book); and, in 1951, Thales de Azevedo (1955a:25-32) recorded a considerable number being used at that time in Bahia. In 1951 also, Hutchinson (1963) noted, according to our calculation, twenty-one of these terms in the old plantation area near the city; Marvin Harris (1963) recorded nine at Minas Velhas, also in the Bahian interior; and Ben Zimmerman (1963), fifteen at Monte Serrat in another part of the State. More recently after setting out to track down all such terms, Harris and Kottak (203n) reported thirty-nine (according to our reckoning) in common use at the fishing village of Arembepe on the Bahian coast. Manuel Diégues Júnior (1956:74-76) mentions twenty-four terms employed for mixed-bloods, alone, in various parts of Brazil, only five of which are referred to by any of these investigators.

To refer, then, to persons of African descent in Brazil as "Negroes," as some investigators from the United States and also some writers in Brazil tend to do, distorts the "picture"; and to refer to the vast range of Negro-European mixed-bloods as "mulattoes," as some of these writers also do, is equally an erroneous procedure. At the same time, this series of terms is highly significant for an analysis of the Brazilian racial situation, particularly in indicating some of its differences from those in South Africa and the United States.

B
*BB
121
*563

What, then, is the meaning, as far as actual behavior is concerned, of this extensive series of what appears to be

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1

B
BB *
racial terms? In the first place, they are not racial terms at 121
all; and, in the second place, they are only in part terms 563*
even of physical appearance. Although the classification of a B
given individual appears *at first sight* to be made on the basis BB
of race, or at least of physical appearance, it actually is ar- 121 *
rived at in a more complex way, as was implied in our Ba- 563 *
hian study, as Harris (1964) and Harris and Kottak (1963) 554
have since pointed out more specifically and in greater detail. It may, of course, be derived in part from physical appearance; but it also is derived from the possession of one or more of the other criteria of rank; for instance, personal, occupational or educational achievement; or the accumulation of wealth. This fact has long been reflected at Bahia in the common saying, "A rich black is a white man, and a poor white is a black"; in Koster's oft-quoted remark of his servant's disputing the ascription of "mulatto" to a man of high administrative position at Recife, by asking "How can a Head-Captain be a mulatto?"; and in Wagley's report of a dark mixed-blood of rank at Itá who is considered to be a
branca (1964:134). Moreover, it reflects the personal re- B
lationship, at the time, of the speaker to the one spoken BB
about. As Emilio Willems[5] reminds us, a person "who is one's 121 *
friend tends to be a branco; or if he is too dark to be called 563 *
that, he will be at least a *moreno* (brunette). But if he be- 571
comes one's enemy, he is called 'that mulatto' or 'that 554
black,' " with pejorative adjectives attached.

Brazilians are not blind to physical differences. No in- B
vestigator has indicated any doubt that a person's appear- BB
ance—particularly the texture of his hair and the color of 121*
his skin—are observed, and at least occasionally referred to, 563*
by all Brazilians, whatever their rank. However, at Arem- 826

---

[5] In a letter to the author.

B
BB
*121
*563
826

bepe Harris and Kottak (204) found "as many as thirteen different terms" being applied to the same person by different members of the community; and these terms, although used to describe a single individual, were "spread out across practically the entire spectrum of theoretical racial types" (Harris 1964:57). This variation could not have been due to differences in economic condition, educational achievement or similar circumstance, because, Harris and Kottak further point out (204), Arembepe is "a socially homogeneous, one-class peasant community." Moreover, there was a variation from individual to individual regarding the precise meaning of these terms; and, in addition, an informant might alter his previous classification at a later time. Thus, the use of these terms, Harris and Kottak write, in summarizing their study, "varies from individual to individual, from place to place, time to time, test to test, observer to observer." Agreement was found with reference to the two terms which describe the opposite poles of the color scale, but informants disagreed regarding all the other thirty-seven terms (206n). Wagley (1964:133-34) found similar inconsistencies at Itá in the Amazon valley.

B
BB
*121
*563
[565]

What does all this ambiguity and inconsistency mean? It means, first of all, that, in Bahia and Brazil, among the lower class and perhaps beyond it, neither race nor color is an important consideration. Although persons often refer to a given individual as "that branco" or "that prêto," this is done, Wagley (1964:133) observed at Itá, "in about the same way that we might say 'that short fat fellow.' " [illegible]r things exist of at least as great importance, including ed[illegible]ational achievement, family origin, type of occupation, financial resources, living level, and possibly other criteria. When a given individual is classified by another in any rank of the

B
BB
*121
*563
554

B

88

social order, all of these—and, *in addition*, physical appearance—are taken into consideration; but the term then used for him, although it appears at first sight to be a racial term, or at least a term of physical appearance, is, in fact, something more complex. As Caio Prado (104) puts it, "the ethnic classification of an individual in Brazil is made . . . on the basis of social position; and race, at least in the upper classes, is more a function of that position than of somatic characters." Whatever these so-called "racial" terms may be, then, as Harris and Kottak recognize, "they are not means by which to classify descent groups"; nor are they terms merely of physical appearance. 121* 563* 554

In consideration of these facts—and in spite of the title of this present book—it seems to us that communication would be improved if we were to abandon the use of the term "Negro" and "white" when describing the Brazilian situation and use the terms Bahians and other Brazilians employ in popular speech, namely, "prêto," "branco," etc., giving these terms the local connotations as indicated above or in the glossary; and this we will do henceforth, in this Introduction. 121* 563*

Moreover, it is possible that when describing Brazil, the term "race" itself also ought to be abandoned. The perceptive Brazilian, Hernane Tavares de Sá (32), tells us that the expression "a member of your race," when translated into Portuguese, "is perfectly meaningless" to the general population, except in terms of "a *Brazilian* race";[6] and he maintains that "if the ordinary uneducated Brazilian listened to a discussion of racial problems with the terminology employed in the United States, he would not have the faintest idea of what anyone was talking about." One recalls in this con-

---

[6] Italics ours.

B

BB
*121 nection also, the report by Felte Bezerra (1950:266–67) of
*563 the bewilderment of several colored girls at Aracaju upon
seeing a film concerned with the racial situation in the
United States. Wagley is seeking to escape from some of the
ambiguities involved when he uses the term "social race"
B (e.g., 1963b:14): and several investigators either begin by
BB using "color" instead of "race," or shift to color in the course
* of research or in subsequent publications.

121 Moreover, as Robert E. Park (3) has pointed out in an
186 illuminating analysis, "race relations . . . are not so much
*563 the relations that exist between individuals of different races
as between individuals *conscious* of these differences."[7] Frazier (1942:469) records that none of the colored persons he
B interviewed during several months residence in Bahia, in
BB 1940, "regarded themselves as Negroes but simply as Brazil-
[171] ians." In the United States, "we expect all persons of color to
feel a mutual bond," Ruth Landes (1947:60) reminds us; but in Bahia "no such assumption is ever dreamed of." As Gilberto Freyre (1959:144) puts it, the colored man in Brazil can "express himself as a Brazilian and not . . . as an ethnic [racial] and cultural intruder." Several of Austin J. Staley's (1959:82) Brazilian informants "thought it humorous, and genuinely so, that someone should take time out to inquire about such an obviously unimportant issue as race and race prejudice." "As far as actual behavior is concerned," Harris (1964:64) also recognizes, " 'races' do not exist for the Brazilians." In fact, solidarity along racial or even color lines is of so low an order in Bahia and Brazil that those interested in "mobilizing the colored masses" are in despair. Considering these circumstances, as Frazier (1944:255) also has observed, "one may not properly speak of race relations in Brazil" at all.

---

[7] Italics ours.

BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
121*
563*
826

However, if we substitute for "race" the term "color," we find other and equally significant ambiguities. In fact, in order to be better understood by persons who are not familiar at first hand with the Brazilian, or with some other Latin-American "racial" situation, we need a more precise term even than color. "Color" is, of course, the literal translation of the widely-used Portuguese *côr*. As employed in Brazil in this connection, however, it connotes more than pigmentation, including, first of all, a number of other physical characteristics: hair-type (perhaps most importantly), as well as facial features. It thus might be well to employ in English the phrase "physical appearance" instead of "color," except that, in the first place, this term also is somewhat ambiguous, since extraneous connotations of cleanliness or neatness, deformity or other abnormality, and beauty or ugliness can be inferred from it; and except that, in the second place (and more importantly), "color," as used in Brazil in this connection, does not refer, as we have seen, merely to physical appearance. Faced with these facts, H. Hoetink (638) suggests the substitution of the phrase, "somatic norm-image" for "race"; and Oracy Nogueira (1959), in a related connection, uses "mark" for physical appearance and "origin" for racial descent, although James G. Leyburn (179) and Lloyd Braithwaite (182) see objections to this usage.

In an effort to describe more precisely the multi-racial societies in the Caribbean, M. G. Smith (51 ff.) distinguishes between four different types of "color." With reference to genetic aspects, he employs "phenotypical color" to refer to appearance, and "genealogical color" to refer to racial descent. Two appearance-type persons may be dissimilar in terms of "genealogical color," then, while two genealogically identical individuals (for example, siblings) frequently are

B
BB
*121
*563

appearance distinct. To refer to the *social* significance of "color," Smith suggests the term "associational color," to identify an individual in terms of the "color" of those persons with whom he customarily associates "on terms of equality, familiarity and intimacy." As Nogueira (1955:513n) observed at Itapetininga, in the State of São Paulo, "the identification of an individual's color depends, to a certain extent, upon the color of his associates." A person may be "genealogically black" since his ancestors came from Africa, and "phenotypically black" by reason of his physical appearance, but also "associationally *white*" by reason of his achievement of high social position and the predominantly white color of his associates, whose company he habitually keeps by reason of that achievement. Taking also into consideration "the cultural mold," where "the racial divisions are, or until recently have formed, culturally distinct groups," M. G. Smith also distinguishes "cultural color," to be noted on "a scale . . . in which 'white' and 'black' cultures provide the poles." In a given "racial" situation, therefore, four types of "color" may be involved; and, if so, Smith reminds us, there will be a tendency for "genealogical" and "phenotypical" "color" to correspond, and also for "associational" and "cultural" "color" to correspond. The basis, character, and range of the variations in these four types will be significant aspects of the social system in question, the definition of which gives us, in M. G. Smith's terminology, "structural color" (56).

In addition to the ambiguity which the meaning of the term "color" injects into any attempt to describe the Brazilian situation, this term is inadequate in still another way. If there be no strictly racial *groups* in Brazil, there also are not even color groups; or if there be, they are in an amorphous, tentative, and unstable form. What one finds is more a series

B
BB
121*
563*

of statistical aggregates, as Nogueira (1955:546) has observed, "clear to the observer but not so clear to the observed," as someone has said, and as census takers (e.g., IBGE 8–9) and many other careful investigators have discovered.

Another source of confusion is the extensive and uncritical attention given by some writers to race (or color) prejudice. For there are those who maintain that there is prejudice in Brazil, and there are those who maintain that there is not; but there is also a third group who admit that prejudice exists but who see it as only a part of the total situation, and certainly not causal to it, as some writers appear to do; and who also insist—and most importantly—upon an analysis regarding its precise character and extent.

At Bahia, in 1935, prejudice seemed to play so small a part in the total social situation that we gave little attention to it; and we have been somewhat surprised to see how much that little attention has attracted the interest of some commentators, occasionally to the exclusion of the rest of the study. Since so much has been written in recent years about prejudice in Brazil, particularly with reference to the central and southern portions of the country, and since this is, in our judgment, one of the sources of confusion, it may be useful to give some consideration here to just what is involved in that concept.

"Prejudice" and "discrimination" are similar, but different, terms. Yet they are employed synonymously by some writers. In literature, the use of synonyms is a useful and defensible procedure; but, in science, concepts must be defined with care and used with precision. Fruitful discussion is impossible if different observers attach different meanings to the same terms.

Discrimination is an act; prejudice is an attitude. An act

E
*EB
*121
563

can be observed; prejudice can only be inferred. In any given case of discrimination, therefore, all observers can agree upon it, granted only that their criteria are common. In cases of prejudice, however, agreement is more difficult: as with all attitudes, it is not easy to determine with accuracy and precision why a person behaves in a certain way. Prejudice can be arrived at only by observing discrimination; and the inference may be wrong.

Discrimination is inequality of treatment. It occurs in many cases, one thing or another being responsible. It may be either individual or social in origin, and either in favor of or against a given individual or group. In an ordinarily light form it may be observed in the treatment, for instance, of parents toward children. A child in many, if not most, cultures is not permitted to do everything that an adult is allowed to do. However, to ascribe prejudice against children to this parental behavior in most cases would be absurd; prejudice may at times be present, but it is comparatively rare.

Brazil is full of discrimination—as, in fact, are all countries. There is discrimination with reference to children; to women (cf. Luis Edmundo 153, 211 ff., 240); to foreigners; to "Cariocas" (residents of Rio de Janeiro) and to "Nortistas" (inhabitants of the "North") on the part of "Paulistas" (residents of São Paulo); to Protestant belief and practice; to class, a particularly rigorous discrimination, one of long standing and a tenacious one; with reference to color, owing to color's long identification with a slave condition and its current role as a criterion of rank; and also, at times, with reference to race, in the case of an occasional intellectual influenced by racist literature or by political ideologies with racist content; or certain European immigrants new to

B
BB
121*
563*

Brazil and "shocked" (cf. Roger Bastide 1955:130) upon meeting colored persons for the first time, and those whom they may have influenced; or certain families of the upper and middle classes who are extremely proud of their Caucasian, or near-Caucasian, descent, and especially those who are sensitive to their country incorrectly being called by Argentines or others a "Negro country"; or business men concerned about the attitudes of prospective customers from countries like the United States where race is a crucial issue; or, occasionally, even of persons whose unfavorable attitudes have been derived from their own individual experiences.

This limited amount of discrimination in Brazil on the basis of race, however, let us hasten to point out, is of individual—and not general—character. It is doubtful if it springs from the local mores, either as these were developed historically in Brazil's past or currently are present. This is borne out by the fact that discrimination on the basis of either race or color, when made known, receives widespread condemnation, as witness the mob action outside a German-owned store in Rio de Janeiro in 1940 (Tavares de Sá 1947: 30–31), and the vigorous condemnation in local organs of public opinion—and the law which Brazilian legislators then hastened to pass—when a hotel-keeper in São Paulo, in 1950, refused rooms to a colored actress from the United States and her troop.[8]

B
[626]
[656]

---

[8] In our judgment, the motivation of this discrimination—as also that in a similar case at a hotel in Rio de Janeiro—has sometimes been misinterpreted. Since the discrimination occurred at the city's most "traditional" hotel of the time, it is likely that there also may have been involved the traditional conception of, and depreciatory attitudes toward, actresses, especially when travelling in mixed groups of men and women—attitudes long characteristic of the Brazilian mores. The discrimination may also

B
[536]
[183]
[834]

BRAZIL SL1

B
B8

*121
*563

Although discrimination may reflect prejudice, however, it is not itself prejudice. Consequently, it is erroneous to use these terms interchangeably. It also is a questionable procedure always to see race prejudice, as some authors tend to do, in every case of discrimination which involves a colored person; or, if not race prejudice, at least prejudice on the basis of color. Any given case in Brazil is apt to be complex and to "merit further study," as Edgard T. Santana (1951), a perceptive colored physician in São Paulo, reminds us, and as is recognized also by Thales de Azevedo (e.g., 1955a:111) in Bahia; René Ribeiro (1956: 136 ff.) in Recife; L. A. Costa Pinto (1952:324) in Rio de Janeiro; Oracy Nogueira (1955: 548n) at Itapetininga; and Roger Bastide (1943a:32) in São Paulo. One or another type of prejudice may be present but not necessarily so, as we believe will be clear from the paragraphs that follow.

Race prejudice is an attitude; in other words, it is a tendency to act. It is a tendency to act in an adverse way toward a member of another actual or assumed racial group, automatically and, in some cases, even against one's will. Although held by individuals, it is not however an individual attitude, but a product of group experience; it is held, in general, by all members of the racial group in question; and it is directed against all members of another racial group. Being

---

B
[536]
[183]
[834]

have been motivated, in part, by business considerations, in anticipation of the attitudes of white guests from the United States who at that time were arriving in São Paulo and Rio de Janeiro in increasing numbers (cf. Frazier 1944:268). At least it is true that a colored professor and his wife, both of whom in the local conception would have been classified as prêtos (but whose dress and manners clearly indicated that they were of at least middle-class position) previously had been guests for more than a week in this same hotel, and had taken meals in the main dining room (one in the company of the present author and his wife), without the slightest evidence of any discrimination.

B
BB
121*
563*

thus a collective phenomenon, it lies in the field of public opinion and public sentiment, as Ellsworth Faris has pointed out (355). It is "the other end of one type of loyalty" to one's own group, a fact which makes it easy for individuals to rationalize even the most bizarre behavior and to offer plausible (to them) reasons for it; and any manifestation of this race prejudice, in turn, intensifies loyalty to the group.

However, as Herbert Blumer (1939) reminds us, race prejudice is not a unitary attitude; that is, it is not a single feeling, like dislike or hatred, but, instead, as the study of racial situations has shown, it is made up of a number of different feelings and also impulses, including, perhaps, distrust, apprehension, fear, dread, envy, resentment, feelings of obligation and of guilt, sexual and possessive impulses as well as even destructive impulses.

The origin of race prejudice is not to be found in biological aversion to the members of another race, a conclusion which confuses instinct with custom; and, although cultural differences and the ethnocentrism which they evoke, as well as also economic competition, as we have pointed out in another connection (1950), may be predisposing circumstances for the appearance of race prejudice in any given case—and perhaps even necessary ones—these are *not* the determining conditions. Analyses of social orders in which race prejudice is most pronounced indicate that another—and absolutely indispensable—characteristic must also be present; and that is a shared feeling, on the part of the members of a superordinate racial group, that there exists either an actual or an immediately potential threat of their being displaced from an established social position. The greater and more imminent the threat that is sensed, the greater is likely to be the race prejudice.

B
BB
*121
*563

In a more recent publication (1958), Blumer has emphasized this "sense of group position." Although there ordinarily are present in the minds of the members of any dominant racial group "a feeling that the subordinate race is intrinsically different and alien," and also a feeling of superiority toward the members of this subordinate race, these two feelings alone, as Blumer clearly points out, do *not* constitute race prejudice. They amount merely to ethnocentrism, a common characteristic of all groups.[9] There ordinarily is present also "a feeling of proprietary claim to certain areas of privilege and advantage"; and this feeling is usually quite strong. But even when this is added to the sense of superiority and of distinctiveness mentioned above, we do not yet have race prejudice. As Blumer (4) reminds us, these three feelings are often present in social orders "showing no prejudice"; for example, in settled and long-established relations between conquerors and conquered in certain forms of feudalism; in caste structures; and in societies of chiefs and commoners.

---

[9] From this point of view, common sayings regarding colored persons which are mentioned with a smile and in jocular tone (see pp. 362–65 of this book) are not necessarily evidence of race prejudice; as also are not those pejorative words or phrases which accompany them or are sometimes used alone. Survivals of a slave epoch, they are now merely verbal behavior which ordinarily is belied by conduct, as several observers have noted (e.g., Thales de Azevedo 1959:154; Wagley 1963a:140; 1963b:150; Harris 1964:60), and they often are employed by colored persons themselves in banter, even in the presence of brancos (cf. Nogueira 1955:508n). At most, these sayings and terms reflect the ethnocentrism characteristic of all groups. To see them in perspective, one should recall the extensive use in Brazil of similar terms and sayings with reference to the *Portuguese* and, in Portugal, with reference to the *Brazilians;* as well as the use in the United States of "city slicker," "country bumpkin," "flatlander," and "the great unwashed." These all are pejorative terms; and they also are ethnocentric terms, reflecting a sense of superiority and of satisfaction that "We are not as thou art."

B
BB
[186]

B
BB
121*
563*

In addition to these three prerequisite (but not yet determining) conditions, there also has to be present a fourth *and determining* one, namely, fear or apprehension that the subordinate racial group threatens, or is about to threaten, the privileged position of the dominant group. Race prejudice is thus a defense mechanism in the face of a *threatened group position,*[10] and it refers to the position of group to group and not merely of individual to individual, like one finds in Brazil.

BB
121*
563*

As we have been disposed to use the term in this book and elsewhere (cf. Pierson 1944, 1950), then, it is doubtful if there is in Bahia anything which can justifiably be called *race prejudice.* Instructive in this respect is the fact that, from interviews, and also a study of news dispatches, editorials and advertisements in local newspapers, of books published locally, and of local folklore, Thales de Azevedo (1959:149) found the following terms used to describe prêtos at Bahia: "natural kindness," "sweetness of disposition," "loyalty," "seriousness," "humility," "submission," "resignation," "a white soul," "ignorance," "little intelligence," "boldness," and "credulity." Although a few of these terms evidently reflect the sense of superiority characteristic of ethnocentrism and others reflect an undoubted lack of prestige on the part of many prêtos, they hardly reflect any degree whatever of distrust, apprehension, fear, dread, or resentment; nor any degree of aversion, antipathy, antagonism, hostility, or hate, such as one also ordinarily finds in cases of race prejudice.

B
BB
121*
563*

There is no question that *discrimination* exists; and also

---

[10] This sense of group position is not a sense of status, as this is ordinarily conceived, "for it refers not merely to vertical positioning but to many other lines of position independent of the vertical dimension" (Blumer 1958:5).

13
BB
121
* 563
[114]

that this discrimination at times involves colored persons. In this study undertaken thirty years ago that fact is stated (e.g., p. 350): and it has been extensively documented since.[11] The question is regarding the ascription of the reasons for this discrimination. Obviously, there are involved at times colored persons, the darker in such cases ordinarily the more, the lighter ordinarily the less. But this discrimination is automatically—and unjustifiably—assumed by some writers to be synonymous with race prejudice.

In the present author's judgment, based upon a careful and sympathetic reading and analysis of all these men have written in this respect, they are not dealing with race prejudice at all, at least as we have defined that term above. They are dealing instead, in different connections, with two sets of circumstances: a large number of cases where the referent is color, because color, in Brazil, is one of the criteria of rank; and, in the second place, a limited number of cases where the referent definitely is race but the attitudes are *individual* attitudes, individually derived and individually supported, and not general attitudes, originating in, and implemented by, the mores, as is the case with race prejudice.

Although race purists occasionally are to be found in Brazil, they represent, as Freyre has observed (1945:153),

---

[11] See, for example, Thales de Azevedo (1955a:95 ff.; 1956:84–85; 1959:97–101), Nelson de Souza Sampaio (1944), and Aniela Ginsberg (1947) for Bahia; René Ribeiro (1956) for Recife; Oracy Nogueira (1942), Virginia Bicudo (1955), Roger Bastide and Florestan Fernandes (1955), Aniela Ginsberg (1955), and Carolina Martuscelli (1950) for São Paulo; Stanley Stein (1957) for Vassouras in the Paraíba valley; L. A. Costa Pinto (1953) for Rio de Janeiro; Octávio Ianni (1962), Fernando Henrique Cardoso (1960, 1962), and these two authors jointly (1960) for southern Brazil; and C. R. Boxer (1953, 1962, 1963), particularly in historical retrospect, both in Brazil and among Portuguese colonies in Asia and Africa.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11 .

BRAZIL SLI

B
B B

"a very small and even ridiculous group"; and—what is even 121* more important for our interest here—the attitudes involved 563* are individually derived attitudes: they are held by discrete individuals or by an occasional family or group of families; they are not general attitudes which have been derived from the experience of the Brazilian people as a whole, and especially in the midst of grave apprehension that an established group position is threatened.

In those cases where the referent is color, these authors are dealing, as we suggested many years ago, with the color B overtones of class distinction, for color is one of the criteria B B of rank. However, it is only *one* criterion; and its value in relation [554] to the other criteria will vary with the individual in question, with his personal experience and relationships, and —what is most important—it *can be overbalanced* by the demonstrated possession of other and compensatory criteria of rank.[12] These are not the characteristics of a situation of race prejudice.

It is the opinion of Emilio Willems (1949:407), a shrewd observer of the Brazilian scene for many years, particularly in São Paulo, that adverse positioning with reference to persons of color exists "only as a discreet attitude among small minorities of white middle- and upper-class people"; and that, even among these individuals, there is considerable B doubt that "any kind of consensus" has emerged regarding B B either the forms or the degree of discrimination. In other [565] words, we are dealing here with a basically class—and not a [571] strictly racial or even a strictly color—phenomenon; and

---

[12] Conversely, its value can be *intensified* by a lack of other criteria. "Light-skinned individuals who rank extremely low in terms of educational and occupational criteria," as Harris (1962:59) also has observed, "are frequently regarded as actually being darker in color than they really are."

BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
*121
*563
565
[571]

also with a series of attitudes characteristic of a *statistical aggregate* rather than of a group, in the sociological sense of that term. Melville J. Herskovits (1942:35) also noted that this attitude "is personal and not institutionalized."

Mario de Andrade (1939), a perceptive man of color and of prestige in São Paulo, called our attention many years ago to a tendency to exaggerate the role of color and thus to confuse discrimination based strictly on color differences with discrimination on the basis of class differences. Referring to "a very curious documentation" presented by "a writer of colored origin" during a public address in São Paulo, Mario de Andrade writes that "in spite of its being very interesting," this documentation "appeared to be little convincing as evidence of color prejudice. . . . It was a documentation of class and not of color." Tavares de Sá (36) also has noted that "a coincidence between social position and the amount of colored blood makes one sometimes take for race prejudice what is merely class prejudice"; and this is the opinion also of Guerreiro Ramos when he writes that the frustrations of men of color in Brazil "are attributed to racial prejudice when, many times, they should be attributed to that of class."[13]

Noting what has impressed many persons, namely, that class in Brazil coincides largely with color, Nestor Duarte (171-72) of Bahia reminds us, however, that "it is more an economic and social than a color criterion that divides brancos, prêtos and mixed-bloods in Brazilian society"; while Felte Bezerra (1956:504) of Aracaju, observing that color and class largely coincide there also, reminds us, nevertheless, that "he who rises in class frees himself from the peril of slights or barriers by reason of color." Bastide also

B
BB
[113]

---

[13] Interview in *Diário Trabalhista* (Rio de Janeiro), March 24, 1946.

B
BB
121*
563*
565

long held this position. "The line which separates him (the man of color) from the branco," Bastide (1943a:29–30) once wrote, "is not a caste line but one of class; and the proof is that, as the descendant of the African rises in the community, the doors of the houses of the brancos open to him." This certainly does not describe a situation of race prejudice. The shrewd observer, James Bryce (470), also saw the distinction, in a similar situation, as one "of rank or class rather than of color."

In their analyses of the local "racial" situation several writers in Brazil refer of course to the relationship of the colored with the brancos; but almost without exception the relationship described is with the brancos of the *upper* and *middle* classes,[14] almost never with the brancos of the lower class. This is one of the reasons why there is a tendency to see a racial, or at least a color, struggle where in many—if not most—cases class competition is involved; class competition into which color of course enters, since it is a criterion of rank, but not *per se*, alone, and determinantly.

There is no doubt that color is one of the criteria of rank in Brazil; and, *all else being equal*, the darker the pigmentation, the lower the rank, and the less the pigmentation, the higher the rank. However, this is merely the same situation that exists with reference to all the other criteria: the lower the status of the family to which one belongs, all else being equal, the lower the rank, and the higher the social standing of that family, all else being equal, the higher the rank; the less a person's education, all else being equal, the lower his

---

[14] This limiting feature extends to several of the attitude and "social distance" studies reported to date in the Brazilian literature. This is clearly stated by Thales de Azevedo (1959:146) and René Ribeiro (1956:157); but unfortunately it is not so clearly recognized by several other writers.

BRAZIL SL1

B
* BB
121
* 563
565

rank, and the more extensive that education, all else being equal, the higher the rank; etc.

The principal difficulty in this connection—and one which sometimes leads to a misinterpretation of the Brazilian scene—is that of giving inadequate attention to the determinants of rank in a given case. One sees a person who is not fully accepted, or even is discriminated against, and one also notes that this person is of African ancestry. The observer—particularly if he be from the United States—then assumes that the discrimination is due to race; or, if not to race, at least to color. In other words, D (discrimination) is immediately linked in a casual connection with R (race), or with C (color).

Usually, however, the situation in any given case in Brazil is more complex: D may be due also to E (low educational level); or to L (low economic condition); or to F (membership in a family of low status); or to P (certain unfavorable personal characteristics which carry low-status value); or to PF, PE, or PL; or to FE, or FL; or to EL; or to PEF, PEL, or EFL; or, still further, to PFEL or, even, PFELX.[15] Any given case is likely to be quite complex and to require careful and thorough analysis.

But if the fact that color is one of the several criteria of rank is to be cited as evidence of color *prejudice*, then one logically must conclude that all the other criteria of rank also have their prejudice counterparts; so that there is low-family-origin prejudice, low-financial-condition prejudice, low-educational-achievement prejudice, and inadequate-personal-characteristics prejudice. Perhaps so. But does this not represent an overworking of the term? Would it not be more

---

[15] We thus arrive at the extreme case—which unfortunately is that of many descendants of former slaves—namely, PFELXC.

B
BB
121*
563*
565

accurate to say that there is discrimination in Brazil on the basis of family origin, financial condition, educational achievement, personal characteristics—*and color?*

It nevertheless is true that the indelible character of color makes it somewhat different from the other criteria of rank. Always visible, it automatically and inevitably carries over into any situation of improved status. It cannot be hidden in new contacts nor entirely forgotten in the old, as readily occurs to a former condition of poverty, a former lack of education, or formerly immature or otherwise inadequate personal characteristics. Even relationship to a low-status family can be put "out of sight" to some extent merely by moving to a new community where one's family origin is unknown; or, if known, often imperfectly so.

That none of these former marks of low status continue to cling in the same way as color to the individual who has risen in rank in one of the reasons for some of the confusion regarding the precise character of the Brazilian "racial" situation. Some observers point out the undoubted opportunities of rising in rank, *in spite of color*; while others stress the difficulties in the way—difficulties not only of a colored person rising in rank at all but also with reference to the after-effects, sociologically, in his group relations (Florestan Fernandes 1955; 1964), and psychologically, as far as his inner life is concerned (Bastide 1943b), especially if he be a particularly sensitive or perhaps a pathological individual, as the poet Cruz e Sousa may have been.[16]

B
BB
121*
56

Moreover, it is more difficult for a colored woman to rise in rank than for a colored man, because one more criterion of status is thus brought into play, namely, female sex; for, traditionally in Brazil male sex has been valorized and female

---

[16] See Emiliano Pernetta, p. 3, *apud Ianni* (1962:264).

B
BB
*121
56

sex depreciated, although this situation, in more recent years and especially in the cities, is changing.

B
BB
*121
*563
565

That we are not dealing with merely racial phenomena, then, is borne out by the thousands of persons scattered across the colored continuum, of at least partial and sometimes of considerable African descent, who have escaped socially (and openly) into the branco category and been accepted by brancos;[17] and that we are also dealing with a class, rather than with a color phenomenon alone, is borne out, first of all, by the fact that the discrimination[18] which all observers note—and which some think either constitutes or reflects prejudice—virtually does not exist among the *lower* class, but tends to appear only as one proceeds up the class scale.[19] In Brazil, as Bastide has pointed out with reference to São Paulo, to see a race problem among members of the lower class would be absurd. "In the poorer sections of the city," Bastide (1955:137) has written, "where the brancos live in promiscuity with blacks, any prejudice would be ridiculous." Frazier (1944:266) also recognized this absence of discrimination in the lower class; and that was our conclusion at Cruz das Almas (cf. 1951:190 ff.).

B
BB
[171]

[17] If it be suggested that many light-colored persons also escape into the white group in the United States, the difference is that, in every case, this is not known to the whites; and, if it does become known later, the individual will automatically be put back into the "Negro" category, a possibility which, in Brazil, would everywhere be considered absurd, as Freyre long ago pointed out.

[18] It should of course be clear that we are using "discrimination" here only as defined above, and that we do not imply that persons in the lower class are unaware of physical differences.

B
BB
[186]

[19] Although it may be possible to find an occasional branco among the lower-status groups who shows some measure of withdrawal from colored persons, and who even may speak disapprovingly of them, he will in all likelihood turn out to be a person with an ambitious desire to rise in rank, who holds similar attitudes toward all "pobres" (the lower-class poor), regardless of color (cf. Virginia Bicudo 1955:270).

B
BB
121*
563*
565
[184]

In fact, the great mass of lower-class brancos, mixed-bloods and prêtos share very much a common life. As Nogueira (1955:513) observed at Itapetininga, there is a "more complete fraternization between colored and brancos in the less-favored stratum." This situation is *just the reverse* of that in South Africa, or of that in the United States, where the most intense and implacable race prejudice in each country is to be found among the "poor whites." Whatever be the type of "prejudice" which those who write about "prejudice" in Brazil are dealing with, then, it is almost without exception "prejudice" in the upper and middle classes; and consequently it is more of class, rather than of strictly racial, or even of merely color, character. For, if discrimination is comparatively absent in the lower class but, as Bastide (1955: 131, 132) observed in São Paulo even with reference to immigrants, "increases as one climbs up the class scale," are we not observing a primarily class phenomenon?

B
BB
121*
563*
565
186

That we are dealing more with class than with color, *per se*, is further borne out by the comparative lack of either race- or color-consciousness among colored persons in the lower ranks[20] and by their widespread insistence, on the contrary, that "there is no prejudice in Brazil," an attitude which puzzles (and even gives concern) to some observers. It also is borne out by the strong adverse feeling which lower-class colored sometimes direct toward other colored persons who have managed to rise in class and who, like successful newcomers to New York, tend to "forget" former friends "back

BB
[668]

[20] Some informants at Bahia say that political agitators have attempted to foster and to exploit color antagonism as an aid in the class struggle which they hope to exacerbate (Thales de Azevedo 1955a:106); but, although this agitation has had some effect, particularly among frustrated individuals, it apparently has had little to feed upon except resentment against the world in general.

B

BB

*121 home" (Florestan Fernandes 1955:160; Bastide 1955:163);
*563 and also by the acceptance—and use—on the part of certain
565 individuals of dark color who have risen in rank of deroga-
186 tory statements regarding colored persons, but only with
B reference to those in ranks *below* themselves (Bastide 1955:
BB 163).

*121 Much emphasis is laid by some writers upon the presence
* in the lower ranks of the Brazilian economic order of a large
563 mass of underprivileged colored; and this fact repeatedly is
565 cited as evidence of a disharmonious racial situation in Brazil, and even of race, or at least color, prejudice. It is claimed that this fact defines the racial situation. In a restricted sense, it may do so to some extent, in that it points out the economic effects coming down to today of the long "shadow of the plantation," in the expressive phrase of Charles S. Johnson;[21] but in a more inclusive sense it is only one aspect of the total situation. Moreover, it often is either assumed or left to be assumed by implication that this unequal distribution is due entirely to discrimination, hostility, and prejudice on the part of brancos. This is too simple a conclusion. It should not be forgotten that hundreds of thousands of brancos are themselves in these lower ranks. In fact, the great mass of the Brazilian population, *both colored and branco*, is still concentrated on these low economic levels, "belonging to the same class, without regard to color," as Willems has observed, "and not to two different class systems, as in the United States."

Besides, there always has been a great "gulf" between the lower and the upper classes in Brazil, a "gulf" which is
B extremely difficult to cross, whatever be the color of the
BB individual. Except in recent years—and only in a few metro-

---

[113] [21] *Shadow of the Plantation* (Chicago, 1934).

B
BB
121 *
563 *
565
[556]

politan areas even then—as we have pointed out above, there has scarcely been anything like a "middle class," to help individuals from the lower ranks cross over this "gulf." One should also recall that during the colonial period and long thereafter rural properties were extensively in the hands of the dominant class, so that the means of wealth in a predominantly agricultural country, except as it derived from a comparatively low scale of wages, from share cropping, or from small holdings (particularly in São Paulo and Minas Gerais), were largely out of the reach of all persons in the lower and intermediate ranks, whatever their color. This situation presented an almost insuperable problem to slaves and their descendants, who began competing in a free society with slender or no financial resources, minus, in most cases, even the occupational skills possessed by many immigrants, without even a "foot" on or even near the "ladder," so to speak. It also required Herculean effort to educate themselves or their children under conditions of an inadequate school system even for the upper ranks, to acquire skills, and to improve their personal and occupational competence so as to obtain the ability to compete, without which it would be impossible to rise. The basic problem in this respect therefore, has been—and still is—an *economic* and *educational* problem, not a racial problem at all. William L. Schurz (106) sees it as a "time lag."

Some authors point to the use of the derogatory term "*mulatto pernóstico*" (p. 230 of this book) as indicative of race, or at least color, prejudice. However, Thales de Azevedo more correctly reminds us (1955a:60) that the disapproval and even at times hostility revealed in the use of this term is not directed against the mulattoes as a group at all. Instead, the judgments involved are applied to certain individuals, *as*

B
BB
*121
*563
565

individuals. In a society with aristocratic traditions like that of Bahia, Thales de Azevedo (73–74) reminds us, the etiquette between persons of different levels is an extremely important consideration, so that a person whose manners imply a degree of intimacy or a conception of role out of keeping with the actual situation as commonly defined is always looked upon with disfavor, even if he be a white. It is not race, nor is it color, which is actually involved here; it is a matter far more inclusive, namely, good form for *any* person.

Just how important *is* color as a criterion of rank in Brazil? Some writers, particularly those acquainted at first hand with the United States, or who are unconsciously influenced by a knowledge of the racial situation here or elsewhere, give it primary attention. In this justified?

B
BB
*121
125
*563
565

As indicated in the Preface, a brief survey of the role of certain criteria in determining social rank in Brazil was made, previous to preparing this Introduction. Five of the presumably most significant criteria were employed: family affiliation, economic condition, personal competence, educational achievement—and color.[22] The respondents were university students in Bahia and four other Brazilian cities: Recife, João Pessoa, Vitória and São Paulo. Each of these criteria was paired with each of the others; and respondents were then asked their preference between, for instance, 1) being poor and belonging to a family of prestige and 2) being rich and belonging to a family of low standing; or between 1) having little education and being a branco and 2) having a "good" education and being a prêto; etc. In addition, prefer-

[22] This is, of course, not a complete list of criteria used in Brazil. To it should probably be added: type of occupation, living level, certain personal and social characteristics of capital importance in determining prestige and position (cf., for instance, p. 205 of this book; Pierson 1951: 200–205), and perhaps others.

B
BB
121*
125*
563
565

ences were asked regarding the "most important" characteristic in a marriage partner, the "second most important" characteristic, and the "least important."

This preliminary inquiry is probably not worthy of being published in full here or elsewhere, since the replies are too limited in number, the samples need greater care regarding their representativeness, and the presentation of questions perhaps was not under the rigorous control necessary to obtain common situations of response. Nevertheless, if we bear in mind that these are preliminary and tentative data, they do at least afford some clues regarding the "racial" situation in Brazil, at least sufficiently to raise hypotheses for further testing.

BB
121*
125
563*
565

Pending further and more thorough investigation, then, at least certain tendencies in these samples may be quoted, especially where the stated preferences were as high as approximately five to one. In Bahia, for instance, this decidedly clear preference appeared in two cases (considering only those choices in which color figured): an approximately five to one preference for "belonging to a family with prestige and being a mixed-blood," in contrast to "belonging to a family of low standing and being a branco"; and an approximately five to one preference also for "having a 'good' education and being a mixed-blood," in contrast to "having little education and being a branco." At least a three to one preference was indicated also for "being rich and a mixed-blood," in contrast to "being poor and a branco"; and also for "having a 'good' education and being a prêto," in contrast to "having little education and being a branco." The approximately two to one preference for "belonging to a family of prestige and being a prêto," in contrast to "belonging to a family of low standing and being a branco," and the approximately equal preference between "being rich and a

*BB
121
125
*563
565

prêto" and "being poor and a branco," are perhaps too indecisive for statistical validity, considering the smallness of the sample.

Whatever the limitations of this preliminary survey, however, there would appear to be a strong presumption—at least this hypothesis might be advanced for further testing—that, in determining rank at Bahia, the possession of white color is of *less* importance than certain other criteria.

BB
*121
*125
563
565
581

In choosing a marriage partner, students at Bahia considered to be "most important" personal competence, followed closely by extent of education. Only three respondents selected family affiliation (indicating, probably, that a shift in the traditional attitudes in this respect is well under way); and none selected economic condition. Nor did anyone mention color as the "most important" criterion. Chosen as the "second most important" was extent of education, closely followed by personal competence, family affiliation, and economic condition, in that order. Color was selected as "second most important" by only two respondents. Given as "*least* important" was color, a striking fact, since, in such a situation as that involved in these selections many observers think the so-called "acid test" of any racial situation lies.

B
BB
*121
125

Although the sample from each of the five cities is too small to measure the variations between these cities with any reliability, the five samples taken as a whole, at least in those cases where consistencies appear throughout, can perhaps give us at least preliminary data on possible tendencies in Brazil, pending, of course, further and more complete investigation.

B
*BB
121
*125
563
565
581

When choosing a life partner, these students in all five cities considered the "most important" criterion to be: first, extent of education; and, then, personal competence, family

B
BB *

affiliation, economic condition, and color, in that order. 121
There was a surprisingly high degree of concordance in all 125
five cities, the highest number of selections in each case being 563 *
either personal competence or educational achievement. 565
These two criteria were also most chosen as the "second most 581
important" in all cities except one (where economic condition
received the highest number of preferences for second
place). As the "least important" criterion in a marriage partner,
color was overwhelmingly selected in all cities, without B
exception. BB

What do these data mean? Are they illusory, by reason of 121 *
flaws in the investigative tool? Do they point even more 125
sharply to what some careful investigators have suggested 563 *
regarding the differences between verbal and actual behavior?
Or, taking into due consideration the admitted
limitations of this preliminary survey, and taking also into
consideration possible variants in verbal as contrasted with
actual behavior, does there not still remain a strong likelihood
that the role of color has been exaggerated by certain
investigators who are familiar with other racial situations
and simply cannot believe what lies before them? Or by local
investigators who are in revolt regarding what they consider
to be an overemphasis on Brazil's being a "racial democracy"
and have deliberately set out to prove the reverse and in so
doing have emphasized unduly certain limited aspects of the B
total situation and thus thrown the "picture" out of focus? BB

Wagley (1963b:152) reports that the hypotheses which 121 *
emerged out of our study of Bahia were reaffirmed, in general, 563 *
by the studies which he and his associates made in the 565
same state and in the Amazon valley. They appear to be acceptable [114]
to the Bahian researcher, Thales de Azevedo; as
well as to Fèlte Bezerra (1950; 1956), with reference to the

B
BB
* 121
* 563
565

neighboring state of Sergipe.[23] Wagley (1963b:152–53) considered as "among the most important" of these generalizations portions of hypotheses 17 and 22, as well as the concluding paragraph, and restated them as follows: 1) "Brazil is a multi-racial class[24] society distinct from India, for example, where the social order is based upon the principle of caste and from those parts of the world where a national or racial minority (or minorities) is in free association with, but not accepted by, a dominant national or racial majority"; 2) "prejudice exists in Brazil; but it is *class* rather than *race* prejudice"; 3) "this does not mean that there are no social distinctions in Brazil. . . . Neither does it mean that there is no discrimination or that blacks or mixed-bloods are completely satisfied with their lot. But it does mean (a) that a man of color may, by reason of individual merit or favorable circumstances, improve his status and even achieve position in the upper levels of society, and (b) that this position will then be with reference not merely to the darker group whose color he shares but to the total community."

* BB
121
466
178
571

In the Recôncavo area around the city of Bahia, Hutchinson (1957) and Costa Pinto (1958) report a shift under way in the relations between laborer and employer, from the formerly personal and face-to-face relations of the colonial and subsequent periods to those of a more contractual character,

---

[23] The statement on p. 134 of this book to the effect that a strictly-drawn color line would have to pass through families also has been noted by many other observers, including Frazier (1944:266) and Nelson de Souza Sampaio (1944) at Bahia; Freyre (1959:8) at Recife; and Willems (1949:407) at São Paulo.

[24] It is perhaps obvious that neither Wagley nor the present author uses the term "class" in the sense popular today in certain circles, wherein the "classes" and the "masses" are distinguished. On the contrary, it seems legitimate to include all persons in the class structure, whatever their rank.

BB

as the old patriarchal order continues to decline and indus- 121*
trialization increases; a shift which is intensified by the 178
secularization deriving from the increasingly metropolitan 466
character of the area and by the gradual emergence of new 571
social groups. Have these and the other changes sketched BB*
above been sufficient to alter the character of the "racial" [563]
situation at Bahia since our original study was made? After
a careful survey of the studies in the area in recent years, it
seems to us that the evidence would lead one to agree with
Wagley:[25] "Change has occurred, but *not* that much." BB

As Thales de Azevedo has pointed out (1955a:197), how- 121*
ever, the possibilities of colored persons rising in class are 178
increasing at Bahia; and many observers believe that this 565
rise will continue to increase in the future. As this alteration
in rank extends to continually larger and larger numbers of 563*
previously underprivileged individuals, greater strains and 571
pressures probably will be exerted throughout the social
order. For one thing, as Bahia continues to grow into a
larger and larger metropolitan center, relations will be more
difficult to maintain on a primary and face-to-face basis; BB
and, for another, the anticipated industrialization, deriving [315]
from the extraction of petroleum resources in the area and
the utilization of the recently-developed electric power on [377]
the São Francisco river, will in all likelihood augment the
presently increasing anonymity and make relations more BB
contractual and categoric. Moreover, as educational oppor- [871]
tunities increase and extend downward further into the
masses of previously unlettered individuals, thus adding to
the effects of these other processes, the social order of Bahia B
may alter, perhaps markedly. BB

Wagley (1955:12) writes that "many" of the hypotheses 121*

---

[25] In a letter to the author. 563*

B
BB

* 563 advanced in our study also describe regions "located far beyond
B the limits of the city of Bahia." Do these hypotheses
BB also hold true, in general, for all Brazil? An extensive bibliography
[127] regarding the "racial" situation outside the Bahian
area was analyzed in preparation for this Introduction, but
limitations of space obviously make a detailed consideration
of these studies impossible here.[26] One might suggest briefly,
however, certain variants between Bahia, on the one hand,
EB and, for instance, São Paulo, on the other.

241 The development of plantations came relatively late to
567 the state of São Paulo, in comparison with northern Brazil;
175 in fact, not many years before emancipation. As Samuel H.
[171] Lowrie (1938:9) reminds us, this area throughout much of its
history saw few Africans or their descendants, in comparison
to the plantation areas of the northeast coast. The "extreme
poverty" of its early colonists did not permit the purchase
of African slaves; nor was there at that time much demand
for them, owing to the absence of plantations and the
EB relative facility with which Amerindian slaves could be obtained
175 for other services. The relations of master to slave
567 involving Africans and their descendants began for most São
571 Paulo owners when they were away from home, in search of
[316] gold or diamonds in Minas Gerais. These contacts on the
whole were probably more categoric and less primary than
EB those which ordinarily developed on the northern plantations.
563 Although miscegenation involving Amerindians was
175 basic to the formation of the original population of São
171 Paulo, miscegenation involving Africans and their descendants,
not only then but later, was much less here than in
Bahia, Sergipe, or Pernambuco. Besides, European immigra-

---

[26] Perhaps such will appear elsewhere. Attention already has been called to a few of these materials (Pierson 1955).

tion into these three old plantation areas has been negligible since the colonial era, while that into São Paulo and other parts of central and southern Brazil has been extensive. Occupational competition between immigrants and colored persons developed in São Paulo even before emancipation; and in the year preceding it, 1887, violence broke out in the capital city between colored persons and Italians (Richard M. Morse 1958:194n). Frazier (1944:266) was of the opinion that discrimination on the basis of color was more marked in São Paulo (as well as also in Santa Catarina and Paraná) than in the North (cf. also p. 342 of this present book with reference to Rio Grande do Sul). This variation Frazier ascribed to the presence of immigrants and the variant attitudes which they had brought into and disseminated in Brazil; to the competition of colored persons with these immigrants for jobs; and to the fact that colored persons here were "a conspicuous minority in a predominantly white population." In more recent years also, in areas of greater industrialization like that of São Paulo, a more extensive distribution of the descendants of slaves throughout the occupational structure has occurred (Florestan Fernandes 1955:53), and there has been a consequent increase in their acquisition of occupational skills and experience, in their incomes, and in the opportunities for the schooling of their children.

EB
563
175
171
[578]
[464]

SB
[563]
[171]

EB
178
464
563

It is thus possible that in central and southern Brazil—with the interrelated and cumulative effects of this improved occupational and educational position on the part of colored individuals and their perhaps more extensive rise into at least the intermediate ranks; with certain deviational conceptions, attitudes and behavior among white minorities (Willems 1949:402; Bastide 1955:128 ff.) and among other persons influenced by them; with the economic competition that long

EB
SB
178
563

4; Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians
East Brazil SN1
South Brazil SM1

EB
SB
178
563

has been in process between immigrants and their descendants, on the one hand, and the colored (particularly those of improved status), on the other; with the increasing shift, in the metropolitan and industrial centers, from a greater degree of primary contacts to a condition of increasing anonymity and of contractual relations; and with increasing knowledge, on the part of colored persons, of the emergence of full-fledged African nations, and of the occupational and political gains of colored persons in the United States—it is possible that, under these conditions, opposition based on color (since color is one of the criteria of rank) has been more noted and resented by colored individuals; more noted and resented by an originally limited but perhaps now increasing number, particularly among the middle class, who feel frustrated for one reason or another, including at times either actual or suspected discrimination on the basis of color, as is reflected in the organizations set up occasionally by group-conscious individuals, although these organizations ordinarily turn out to be on the whole rather amorphous, ineffectual, and impermanent.

EB
SB
121
563

Nevertheless, a careful but sympathetic analysis will show, we believe, that much[27] that has been written in recent years about the "racial" situation in central and southern Brazil is both a limited and a negative approach to the problem. Interest arises as a natural—and even healthy—reaction to overstatements about "racial democracy" in Brazil. It then takes the narrow channel of a partially conscious but largely unwitting effort to prove that prejudice exists. The more careful investigators, however, as we have noted, start with "color prejudice," rather than with "race prejudice," or switch to the former in the course of research or in subsequent

---

[27] But not all.

EB
SB
121
563

writing. Nevertheless, little attempt is made to define what is meant by prejudice, or to seek to differentiate between its types,[28] or—what is more important—to see it in perspective in the total situation.

EB
121
563

That this approach gives, in substance, a limited view of reality is suggested by one of these writers when Bastide warns us about his and Fernandes' 1951–53[29] studies. "These . . . deal with the problem of color in São Paulo," Bastide writes (1959:xviii). "It is therefore natural that that problem alone should be focalized. But these studies may give the reader a false idea if he supposes that everything revolves around color. One of the most interesting results of the life histories collected in which the narrator let himself be carried along without restriction by his memories was the verification that the problems or frictions produced by color were only *momentos* (moments), and that, in its entirety, the life of prêtos does not show anything of constant tragedy. It is necessary to have this fact in mind," Bastide concludes, "as one reads these studies regarding the racial situation in São Paulo."

B
BB
121*
563*

Owing to limitations of space, it is not possible to consider here in any adequate way the circumstances which produced the "racial" situation in Bahia and in Brazil. Perhaps a study of this problem will appear elsewhere.

---

[28] Oracy Nogueira, on the other hand, distinguishes between what he calls "prejudice of mark," based upon "visible and external characteristics," and "prejudice of origin," whose referent is the racial past of an individual and which, as Bezerra writes (1956:515), "disappears among us with the extinction or diminution of the physical traits [associated with it]." Nogueira thinks of the latter as characteristic of the United States, and the former as characteristic of Brazil; and he seeks to marshall the distinguishing variants in the two cases. More recently, Florestan Fernandes (1964:624n) has defined prejudice, as he visualizes it.

[29] Originally published in *Anhembi* (São Paulo). Reprinted, in book form, in 1955 and 1959.

of this problem will appear elsewhere. Particularly useful in considering the circumstances involved, it seems to us, are the works of Stanley Lane-Poole (1886), H. Morse Stephens (1903), S. P. Scott (1904), Sir Harry H. Johnston (1910), James Bryce (1912), Gilberto Freyre (especially 1936, 1937, 1959), Arthur Ramos (1939), E. Franklin Frazier (1944), Thales de Azevedo (1955a, 1955b, 1959), Frank Tannenbaum (1947, 1960), C. R. Boxer (1953), René Ribeiro (1956), Stanley M. Elkins (1959), Eric Williams (1960), Sidney W. Mintz (1961), and Marvin Harris (1964) among others, including a host of able travelers and observers in Brazil.

Since our original study at Bahia was made, the Brazilian slave trade, or the character and function of the slave institution on plantations, on smaller holdings and in the towns and cities, or the extent and significance of slave revolts, or the abolition movement and its aftermath, have been further studied by Affonso d'Escragnolle Taunay (1941), Alexander Marchant (1942), Caio Prado Júnior (1945), Edison Carneiro (1947), Maurício Goulart (1950), Florestan Fernandes (1955), Stanley Stein (1957), Octávio Ianni (1962), Fernando Henrique Cardoso (1962), C. R. Boxer (1962, 1963), and others. African cultural elements still extant in Brazil, particularly those associated with the Afro-Brazilian cult, but with attention at times also to present-day forms of language, music, songs, dances, games, and other cultural phenomena, have been further described and analyzed since our original study was undertaken by (among others) João da Silva Campos, Aydano de Couto Ferraz, Ruth Landes, Melville J. Herskovits, and Edison Carneiro (1940, 1944, 1961) at Bahia; Roger Bastide, also at Bahia and elsewhere in northern Brazil (1945, 1946, 1957b, 1960, 1961); René Ribeiro (1952a, 1954), and Waldemar Valente at Recife;

B
BB
113

Octavio da Costa Eduardo in Maranhão; Seth Leacock at Belém; Duglas Teixeira Monteiro at Vitória; Nelson de Senna in Minas Gerais; Candido Procópio Ferreira de Camargo in São Paulo; and several authors with a more general reference, including, especially, Arthur Ramos (1938b, 1942, 1943, 1949). Frazier (1942) studied the structure and function of the family among colored persons at Bahia.

BB
128

If this were a revised edition, certain alterations or additions would be made; for instance, it probably would be advantageous either to bring over into English or to identify more extensively several terms which were left in Portuguese, either because translation would have distorted meaning or because the author was in doubt regarding an *adequate* rendering in English and unable to resolve the problem by a return to the field or through correspondence, yet desirous to be as precise as possible. An effort was made to define each term when first introduced; but this is perhaps inadequate, especially where the term appears again, later, several pages away. To obviate this difficulty somewhat, a glossary is appended to the present edition.[30]

BB
128
563*
121*

Today, we probably would use a substitute for "branco da Bahia" (p. 139 and *passim*), since this term is ordinarily used only outside Bahia, and—more especially—since we subsequently have learned that it sometimes carries a certain depreciatory connotation.[31] Besides, it is subject to some ambiguity, as José Valadares (1943), in a perhaps humorous

BB
[104]

---

[30] A few words which were spelled according to the custom prevailing at the time, previous to the "spelling reform" some years later, should be altered; for example, cathedrático (p. 189), is now spelled "catedrático," and paranympho (p. 190), "paraninfo."

[31] Ribeiro (1956:128) reports this term used at Recife when scoffing at persons "the legitimacy of whose pretentions to being white is subject to question."

*121
128
*563

vein, has pointed out. It was used in our original study to refer to very light mixed-bloods whose racial origin was evident to an anthropologist but not so evident to others, in an effort to make more understandable to a United States audience the actual situation at Bahia.

114
*563
565
*121

Perhaps it would be helpful to clarify certain matters mentioned in this book which have led serious critics to erroneous conclusions. Citing a Portuguese version of Chapter VII, Bastide (1943a:31) quotes us as saying that "in Bahia race prejudice is linked inexplicably (sic) to that of class." This statement we are unable to find in the translation of that chapter or in any other of our publications; nor do we subscribe to it.[32] The need to define terms is imperative. In their criticism of hypothesis 22 (see p. 349), Bastide and Fernandes (1951)[33] do not refer to *race* prejudice at all but instead—and repeatedly—to *color* prejudice. Obviously, they have misunderstood our intention. In an article published in the United States, Bastide and Pierre van den Berghe (1957:693) claim to have invalidated this hypothesis, "so far as São Paulo is concerned." They also write, however, that "we have not been able to isolate the effects of class and racial prejudice." It is therefore difficult to understand the subsequent statement to the effect that "we can definitely assert that, after *having eliminated*[34] the effects of class prejudice against colored people, there would remain an important residue of properly racial prejudice."

The principal difference of opinion, however, would seem to be due to a variation in the use of terms. It is the implica-

---

[32] A similarly erroneous (if more acceptable) ascription to our authorship is made by Staley (18).

[33] Republished, 1959:333.

[34] Italics ours.

BB

114

tion of our research, confirmed, and much more clearly 563*
stated, by Wagley and his associates—particularly by Harris— 565
that one of the criteria of class is color. In so far as this 121 *
is true, class discrimination and color discrimination (but *not* race prejudice as defined above) are inevitably linked. Bastide and Van den Berghe contend that they are dealing with "race prejudice" when we believe they mean "discrimination on the basis of color."[35] That such exists by reason of color being one of the criteria of rank is admitted, in the same sense in which discrimination exists in the case of low family origin, or of low economic condition, or of low educational level, or of lack of personal competence. EB

Bastide and Van den Berghe also claim to have invalidated, 114
as far as São Paulo is concerned, another hypothesis 563
of this study which they identify as follows: "Prejudice BB
against Negroes is directly proportional to socio-economic 121*
status." It is not clear to what these authors refer. We do not recognize this hypothesis as being among those formulated B
by us, either in this book or elsewhere; nor do we subscribe to it, as stated. BB

The hypotheses which emerged out of our original study[36] 128
may require, however, certain qualifications and additions, 121*
in order to make the description and analysis more precise B
and complete. BB

With reference to hypotheses 1 and 2, Willems has called 114
our attention to the possibility that the mortality rate among 16
the lower (and extensively colored) ranks of the Brazilian 563*
population may be proportionately lower now than in the 121*

---

[35] Plus a few limited and atypical cases, as we have suggested above, of discrimination on the basis of race, neither derived from, however, nor supported by, the local mores.

[36] See pages 345–50 of this book.

B
BB
16
114
*121
*563

past, while the birth rate may have remained more or less constant. If this apparent shift in natural increase continues, it will of course slow down, or even reverse, the trend toward biological absorption evident in the past.[37]

B
BB
*563
583
582
*121

With reference to hypotheses 3, 4, and 5, one should note three qualifications. In the first place, although the originally unbalanced sex ratio undoubtedly played a definite role in colonial Brazil in developing a tradition of interracial unions, it became more normal shortly after first contact; in the second place, miscegenation, from the colonial period to the present, has proceeded considerably (but not exclusively) *outside* marriage, by way of informal unions; and, in the third place, the term "endogamy" in hypothesis 5 perhaps should be substituted by some such phrase as "the biological distinctiveness of the races." Endogamy still exists, however, among a numerically small segment of the upper class, including certain families which evidence an uncommon pride in their European origin and, even more particularly, certain families among the landed aristocracy which have long sought to keep property in the family and—for this and other reasons—to resist the intrusion of individuals from outside the kinship group, including native-born and immigrant whites as well as colored individuals. This has been accomplished by extensive and continuous marriage within the kinship group, including cousin with cousin and, until recent

B
BB
582
565
*121

---

[37] T. Lynn Smith (102–6) reminds us that the fertility index for brancos, according to the 1950 census, was at that time higher than that for prêtos in all but one of the Brazilian states and territories (the State of Rio de Janeiro, where the two were approximately even); and that the fertility index for brancos also was higher in fourteen states than that of even the pardos (browns). (In assessing these data, one must of course take into consideration the meaning of these supposedly racial terms, as indicated above.)

B
BB
565
582
121*

times, of uncle with niece and aunt with nephew, as observers have noted.

B
BB
563*
829*
121

With reference to hypothesis 20, a few highly sensitive mixed-bloods who have risen in rank have become obsessed by a repugnance for the color which continued to symbolize low status, a repugnance which is reflected, at least symbolically, in word and act. This feeling, however, does not seem to be the result of the internalization of external conflict. At least little, if any, evidence of this sort has been turned up. In discussing several of these cases, Bastide (1941a:32) makes an illuminating comment when he writes, "An interesting paradox is that the effect of prejudice upon the subconscious is stronger *the less visible* it is."[38] Moreover, as Frazier (1944:265) has observed, "there was no segregated colored community with which they could be identified" and in terms of which they would become "marginal men." The feelings in question resulted from brooding over a sense of inferiority which derived not so much from actual personal experiences of discrimination as from internally-generated pressures, a fact clearly evident if one contrasts the feelings of these men with the markedly different ones of a host of similar mixed-bloods, including Machado de Assis, André Rebouças and Theodoro Sampaio (who wrote the autobiographical sketch beginning on p. 353).

B
BB
563*
565
121*

For some reason, the matters mentioned in hypothesis 22 (p. 349) have attracted most attention, although they would not seem to us to be of that importance. As this hypothesis now stands, however, it perhaps is too brief for clarity; and for that reason we have given considerable attention above to the matters mentioned in it.

B
BB
[171]
B
BB
[113]

Frazier[39] has with justice called attention to a measure of

---

[38] Italics ours.

[39] *The Negro in the United States* (New York, 1949), p. 675.

B
BB
*563
565
171
*121

confusion which may emerge in the minds of persons in the United States from a reading of hypothesis 23. This is due to the variant meanings attached in Brazil and in the United States to the term "Negro," as pointed out above. Taking into consideration this fact, and also the unfavorable economic condition of underprivileged persons in Brazil mentioned previously, we might reformulate this hypothesis in the following way: It is possible that the darker persons of color, *considered as an aggregate*, have not risen as rapidly, perhaps, as the Negroes in the United States. This may be due : (a) to fewer economic opportunities in Brazil, in comparison to those afforded by an expansion of industry much earlier in the United States; (b) to the limited educational opportunities available in Brazil until comparatively recent years and the low value long placed upon education for all except the sons of the elite; (c) to the possibility that local prêtos, feeling themselves less under the necessity of demonstrating to a skeptical white world their personal competence and their ability to achieve, have had less social incentive for advancement; and (d) to certain structural differences in the two cases, as Willems has suggested, "especially the fact that most achievements of the American Negro occurred within his own class structure, while the Brazilian colored did not have these structural incentives and opportunities."

B
BB
*563
186
*121

With reference to hypothesis 24, Wagley (1963b:153) has well suggested that the absorption of the African and his descendants into the predominantly branco group (as referred to in hypothesis 1), and the process of whitening by which it is being accomplished (see pp. 120 ff.), are also part of the informal racial policy, so that "the common . . . statement that 'We Brazilians are becoming one people,' " Wagley writes, "seems to imply that Brazilians hope to become a nation more Caucasian in physical appearance."

B
BB

563*
121*

a nation more Caucasian in physical appearance." In addition, one should further note, as Willems has also suggested to us, that an aspect of this policy has become to some extent more formal and articulate in recent years. As we have defined it, this informal and unstated policy reflects a desire to absorb all minority groups—whether immigrant[40] or of color; but discrimination on the basis of either color or race obviously can stand in the way of its realization. It is with reference to this obstacle that Willems believes the policy has become more articulate, as reflected in the law of 1951, which gives legal negative sanction to discrimination in any form, a law passed overwhelmingly by the Brazilian Congress. It is reflected also in the committee reports and discussions inside and outside Congress which accompanied the enactment of this law; in the decidedly vocal and positive opposition on the part of Brazilian organs of public opinion to the occasional evidences of color discrimination upon which public attention becomes focused; and even, as Willems also points out, in the anti-racist militancy of colored organizations in Rio de Janeiro and São Paulo.

B
BB
563*
656
121*

Although the basic facts seem to have been observed and reported in the original study, not all were given, perhaps, the relative prominence they deserved in the hypotheses which terminated it. One might add to these hypotheses certain apparent facts to which attention is called, to some extent at least, in the course of this book:

B
BB
563*
121*
[114]

1. A large number of popular terms have arisen which seem to designate the various racial combinations in the population. However, a) these terms are descriptive not so much of racial descent as (1) of the actual physical appearance of the individual in question, and (2) of his social

B
BB
56
554
826
121*

---

[40] Cf., in this respect, Nogueira 1955:552; Pierson 1951:191.

B
B B
56
554
826
* 121

rank; b) they may vary with the person employing them, and with the same person at different times and under different circumstances, and especially with the status of the individual being referred to and with the relation of the speaker to him.

2. Caucasian physical traits possess prestige and also disproportionate aesthetic value among all social ranks and colors,[41] although the local "somatic norm-image," in the phrase of Hoetink (1961), is considerably "darker" than that in the United States, as is borne out, for instance, in attitudes toward the *morena* (see pp. 136-38).

3. The rise in rank of colored persons, a) occurs primarily by reason of demonstrated personal or occupational competence, educational achievement, the accumulation of financial resources, or fortuitous circumstance; b) is sometimes aided by brancos who are linked by parental, godparent or other bonds of sentiment to the individual in question (cf. pp. 353 ff.); and c) is accomplished by individuals *as individuals*, so that conflict on the basis of either color or class is relatively subdued (cf. Thales de Azevedo 1955a:195).

4. In their attempts to rise in rank, persons of color are handicapped by the fact that color has long been identified in Brazil with a slave condition and hence became, long ago, a criterion of rank. This is the role of dark color logically to be expected, given the history of slavery in Brazil and the Americas, where slaves for centuries were blacks taken from Africa by Europeans and their descendants, who possessed a more advanced technology, to labor on their plantations and

---

[41] With the possible exception of a few colored intellectuals, particularly in São Paulo and Rio de Janeiro, who deliberately seek to valorize "negritude" (blackness), although their attitudes in this respect seem to be rather ambivalent.

B
BB

in their placer mines. However, had this "historic accident" been of reverse character, that is, had Africa at the time of the discovery and early exploitation of the Americas itself possessed technological superiority, and had Africans and their descendants then discovered America and taken to work on *their* plantations European slaves from a Europe of less advanced technological development, dark color—and not white—would today, in all likelihood, carry prestige. Being white would then probably be a decided disadvantage, a definite handicap, since long ago white color would have become a criterion of inferior rank; and whites would then want to be black and to have children blacker than themselves.

56
554
826
121 *

5. However, the restraining influence of color in Brazil today, a) varies inversely with its intensity (as do all the other criteria of rank); b) is not the determining criterion, as in South Africa or the United States, but only one of a series of conditioning circumstances, similar (as far as most persons are concerned) to those with reference to age, sex, lack of personal competence, lack of skills, lack of financial resources, or lack of education; c) varies with the individual and with circumstance; d) may change permanently during an individual's lifetime; e) may be less significant than some observers have thought; and f) may be tending to decrease, as more individuals demonstrate their ability to overbalance the restraining influence of color by the accumulation of other criteria of rank (provided, of course, that changes now under way in the economic and sociological structures do not alter this trend).

B
BB

6. Although cases of discrimination involving colored persons undoubtedly occur, they are not necessarily due exclusively to color. In any given case, the circumstances are com-

563 *
121 *

B
BB

*563 plex and need further study. If the discrimination turns out
*121 to be due only (or largely) to color, it will in most cases be
B BB because color is one of the criteria of rank. However, nowhere
[626] in Brazil is it supported by public opinion. On the contrary,
it receives severe and widespread condemnation, in press
[656] and elsewhere, and legislators hasten to pass laws bringing
it under repressive legal sanction. In other words, public
opinion and public action invariably are *in favor of*—never
against—the darker portion of the population.

7. Nevertheless, in any conflict situation, the lack of one of
B the determinants of status—namely, light color—*just as any*
BB *other lack*, may be seized upon, to a person's disadvantage,
by competitors.

192 8. Numerous common sayings regarding Africans and their
*563 descendants (cf. pp. 362–65 of this book) which originated
*121 during the slave epoch, and which long ago lost all, or most,
of their function as stereotypes (cf. Florestan Fernandes
1959:328), occasionally are employed by brancos but ordinarily with a smile and in a humorous manner and when
colored persons are not present. Moreover, actual behavior
tends to belie these common sayings; and they are even used
in jocular fashion by colored persons themselves. Nevertheless, they are remnants of a superordinate-subordinate relationship in a former caste order and, as such, constitute
B threats to status in possible conflict situations, and also potential aids to the development of group-consciousness.

BB
*563 To these hypotheses, there might be added the following
565 one, suggested by Wagley (1963b:154):

*121 9. "The ability of 'people of color' to improve their status
. . . varies considerably from community to community ac-
[184] cording to the possibilities open to them."

Wagley's further statement that "rural Brazilian society

BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
563*
565
121*

has a rigid class structure" would seem to be valid for all Brazil outside pioneer areas. We might consider also in this connection the observations of Hutchinson (1963:45-46) at Vila Recôncavo to the effect that "the population is becoming . . . class-conscious" and that "there is an increasing desire to rise in the social hierarchy"; as well as the discovery by Harris (1963:79) of a degree of tension in the large middle group at Minas Velhas; and certain data turned up in the studies in central and southern Brazil. These (and other) considerations raise the following additional hypothesis:

10. Both social mobility and class-consciousness are increasing; and this increase may be heightening color-consciousness, particularly in the intermediate ranks, by reason of the comparative rigidity of class lines, and the fact that color is a criterion of rank.

JULY 1965

DONALD PIERSON

[P. lxxii is blank]

INTRODUCTION

121*

DURING the years in which it has been a subject of discussion and investigation in the United States, the conception of what constitutes a race problem has undergone an extraordinary number of changes—one might say transfigurations. In recent years interest and research in the problematic aspects of race have centered about what is called technically "race relations." But new studies of race relations have invariably revealed new complexities in racial situations and have added new dimensions to the problem as originally conceived. The consequence is that with every new inquiry the conception of what constitutes race relations has steadily expanded until the term seems to include all or most human relations that have anywhere been defined and given formal recognition in the social sciences.

The most obvious and elementary of these relations are ecological and biological, that is, the territorial distribution of races and the inevitable miscegenation or interbreeding which changes in distribution inevitably bring about. The term also includes, by implication at least, all the special problems that emerge on every other level of social integration (i.e., economic, political, personal, or religious) as a consequence of the migration and mixture of races.

I say "personal" or "religious" because it is only within the fold of a family or of a religious society that human relations have anywhere assumed a character that can be described in any exclusive sense as personal and moral. Economic and political relations of individuals and of peoples are always relatively impersonal and external.

Meanwhile, a growing awareness of the complexities of the problem has been accompanied by a continuous expansion of what one may describe as "the racial horizon." As the world has grown smaller and our relations with other races and peoples more intimate, the race problem is no longer conceived either in the United States or elsewhere as a local problem or one that is limited to the Negro.

It is obvious today, as it possibly never was before, that race problems are neither a temporary nor an isolated phenomenon. On the contrary, it seems that, wherever European economic expansion has brought European peoples and the peoples or races of the world outside Europe into an association sufficiently intimate to produce a mixed-blood population, the resulting racial situation has inevitably constituted a race problem.

But race problems are not confined to colonial countries. Similar conditions, or at least conditions which make complete assimilation difficult or impossible, have produced in recent years, in Germany and elsewhere in Europe, a more conspicuous and more poignant instance of a race problem than the world outside of Europe has ever known. In fact, it is fair to say that if the race problem of the United States is pre-eminently the problem of Negroes, the race problem of Europe is and has been, ever since the Roman Empire first sought not only to conquer but to denationalize them, the problem of Jews.

Stated abstractly, and from the point of view of the Jewish people in Europe and the Negro people in the United States rather than from the point of view of the dominant majorities with whom they are associated, the race problem

121*

is that of a racial or cultural minority seeking to achieve, in a community in which it is regarded as in some sense and to some degree an alien, a status that is at once secure and unqualified by the stigma of any sort of inferiority. Elsewhere the race problem may take the form of a nationalistic struggle in which the native peoples, within the limits of an imperium where they have been conquered but not assimilated, are seeking, if not national independence, then some further measure of self-determination. This is the case of India. It may presently be, if the present German government succeeds in carrying out its program, the case of Europe.

The expansion of the racial horizon, which has changed and is changing current conceptions of the race problem in the United States and elsewhere, has brought about—and this is particularly true of sociology and social anthropology—something like a reorientation of the social sciences, with respect to the race problem and to all that is ordinarily included under race relations.[1]

Social anthropology is, apparently, no longer regarded, to the extent that it once was, as a purely historical science, interested mainly in unraveling and tracing to their sources the varied threads that make up the cultural patterns of primitive societies.

Anthropology, as it has become "functional," has become less interested in cultural diffusion and more interested in acculturation and in the processes by which cultural traits have been not merely diffused but integrated into those larger and more complex cultural patterns we call civilizations.

---

[1] Edgar T. Thompson (ed.), *Race Relations and the Race Problem* (Durham, N.C.: Duke University Press, 1939).

[113]

*121 Anthropology has begun, also, in recent years to turn its attention to contemporary social problems, including that of education. In England anthropologists have become technical advisers in colonial administration.[2] In the United States they are beginning to study "marginal peoples," that is to say, peoples who, under the influence of European culture, are now in the process, sometimes slowly but more often rapidly, of being assimilated and incorporated into an emerging world-society—the society which the expansion of Europe has brought into existence.[3]

The race problem has assumed new dimensions and new significance, likewise, with the recent researches of sociologists in the field of race and culture and in areas of observation and research immediately contiguous. Probably nothing has been more influential than the publication of the monumental work by W. I. Thomas and Florian Znaniecki, *The Polish Peasant*, in directing the attention of sociological students to the possibility and the importance of studies in the field of race and culture. Thomas and Znaniecki were the first, or almost the first, to call attention to the fact that the situation of the European immigrant in the United States can be defined in terms that imply its logical relation to that of the Negro, even though the Negro, in the Americas, North and South and particularly in the West Indies, is not an alien or an immigrant but has become, in the course

---

[113] [2] See G. Gordon Brown and A. McD. Bruce Hutt, *Anthropology in Action: An Experiment in the Iringa District of the Iringa Province, Tanganyika Territory* (London: International Institute of African Languages and Cultures; Oxford University Press, 1935). See also unpublished papers contributed to a symposium on "Education and the Cultural Process," in connection with the celebration of the Seventy-fifth Anniversary of Fisk University, April, 1941.

[113] [3] See Robert Redfield, *The Folk Culture of Yucatan* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1941).

of some three hundred years' residence, an indigenous race intimately related by blood to the Indian who preceded him.

Perhaps I should add, now that I have mentioned the *Polish Peasant*, that it was the rather elaborate "methodological note" with which the authors prefaced that study which first defined "social attitudes" and indicated the way in which that concept could be used in characterizing local cultures as well as in measuring, in some fashion, cultural and institutional changes.[4]

If I have ventured by way of introduction to this study of race relations in Brazil to sketch the outlines of an expanding though as yet very little integrated field of sociological and anthropological research, it has been less with the purpose of reporting on the state of knowledge in that field at the moment than of indicating the context in which this study had been conceived and the place it seems to have in the sequence of studies that have preceded and which will presumably follow it.

In suggesting the possibility of future studies to follow this one, I am reckoning with two facts: (1) that Brazil is one of the more conspicuous melting-pots of races and cultures around the world where miscegenation and acculturation are obviously going on and (2) that a comparative study of the problematic aspects of race and culture is likely to have a special importance at this time when the structure of

---

[4] William I. Thomas and Florian Znaniecki, *The Polish Peasant in Europe and America* (1st ed.; Boston: Richard C. Badger, 1918–20; 2d ed.; New York: Alfred Knopf, 1927). Herbert Blumer, *Critiques of Research in the Social Sciences. I. An Appraisal of Thomas and Znaniecki's "The Polish Peasant in Europe and America"* (New York: Social Science Research Council, 1939). As an illustration of how "attitudes" have been used in measuring fundamental institutional changes see Alfred Winslow Jones, *Life, Liberty, and Property: A Story of Conflict and a Measurement of Conflicting Rights* (New York and London: J. B. Lippincott Co., 1941).

BB *121 the existing world-order seems to be crumbling with the dissolution of the distances, physical and social, upon which that order seems to rest.

It has become fairly obvious that, in a world which in the midst of wars is steadfastly seeking peace, a stable political order can be erected only on a moral order that does not terminate at the boundaries of national states. The problem that emerges is this: How is it possible to establish and maintain an effective social order in a more or less completely urbanized, industrialized, and cosmopolitan world?

In the past it has been, in the main, the task of religion and more especially of Christian missions to create within the limits of an expanding world-economy a moral order and moral solidarity commensurate with the economic and political interdependence which the expansion of European commerce has brought about. But the totalitarian states have now apparently seceded from the ecumenical councils of international Christianity, and the task of re-creating a moral order that includes all mankind has assumed an importance that it did not have when it was regarded not merely as a religious but as a religious denominational enterprise.

It is obvious that studies of race and culture are destined to assume increasing importance in a world in which the ancient local and tribal cultures, as an ineluctable incident of the rise of the so-called "great society," are visibly going into the melting-pot.

B BB *121 *563 One thing that makes the racial situation in Brazil interesting is the fact that, having a Negro population proportionally larger than the United States, Brazil has no race problem. This is, at any rate, what might be inferred from the occasional and apparently disinterested reports of visitors to that country who have ventured to inquire into the

B.
BB.
121*
563*
[114]

subject. Among these visitors there are two—James Bryce and Theodore Roosevelt—whose knowledge of conditions in the United States make their reports upon the situation in Brazil peculiarly interesting.

Viscount Bryce, whose "observations and impressions" of South America were first published in 1912, remarked that in Brazil, in contrast to the United States, the color line is nowhere sharply drawn and that "the fusion of whites and blacks by intermarriage goes steadily on." Mr. Roosevelt—Theodore and not Franklin Delano—who visited the country a few years later, is more explicit. He says: "If I were asked to name the one point in which there is a complete difference between the Brazilian and ourselves, I should say it was in the attitude to the black man."

B
BB
[554]

This attitude manifests itself in the fact that in Brazil "any Negro or mulatto who shows himself fit is without question given the place to which his abilities entitle him." However, the most conspicuous difference—the "one real difference"—is "the tendency of Brazil to absorb the Negro." This tendency is, however, not merely a historical and biological fact; it is rather an expression of a national policy, in so far as Brazil can be said to have a policy with respect to the Negro.

Statistics of population, which are never very accurate in this matter of race and less so perhaps in Brazil than in the United States, indicate that the number of Africans of unmixed blood is growing steadily less so that "with two or more racial crossings"—so say those Brazilians who are conscious of the Negro or concerned about his future—"the Negro blood tends to disappear." This so-called Aryanization of the African, from the point of view of Brazilian national policy, is a thing, perhaps one should say *the* thing, to be desired.

B
BB
*121
*563
829

to be desired. The policy of the United States, on the other hand, from the Brazilian point of view, particularly in so far as it counts every man a Negro who, to use the census definition, "is known to be a Negro in the community in which he lives," tends to perpetuate "a menacing element" —menacing not to the racial purity of the dominant race but to the political and cultural solidarity of the nation.

B
BB
[794]

As a matter of fact the attitude of the Brazilian people to the race problem so far as concerns the Negro seems, on the whole, to be academic rather than pragmatic and actual. There is a certain ethnological and archeological interest in the survivals of the African fetish cults, the so-called *candomblés*, of which there seem to be an extraordinary number, especially in and about the cities of Bahia and Pernambuco.

B
BB
[178]
[794]

This archeological interest in the African is evidenced by two successive *Congressos Afro-brasileiros* which met in Recife and in Bahia in 1934 and 1937.

Since most of these *candomblés* are living and functioning forms of African religious practices, although obviously in process of assimilation to the ritual and mythology of local Catholicism, perhaps they should not be classed as survivals.

B
BB
*121
*563

In any case it is a somewhat bizarre experience to a stranger in Bahia, walking along one of the ridges where *os ricos*, that is, the rich folk, live, to hear from the palm groves in the neighboring valleys where *os pobres*, the poor folk, live, the insistent boom of African drums. So narrow are the spatial distances that divide Europe on the ridges from Africa in the valleys that it is difficult to realize how wide the social distances are that separate them.

It is even more difficult for those of us whose conception of the Negro problem and of race relations generally has been

B
BB
121*
563*

formed in the United States to comprehend, in all its concreteness, the racial situation in a country with a different history and a different tradition. Comprehension in these matters is not something that can be achieved, it seems, through the medium of any formal statement. Insight and understanding come only with intimate and firsthand acquaintance—and not even then if those barriers which race consciousness invariably raises are not removed. That is why little children are likely in these matters of race relations to be wiser than their elders.

This observation seems pertinent here because, after reading the manuscript and proofs of this volume, I have come to the conclusion that the difference between Brazil and the United States in respect to race is due to the fact that the people of Brazil have, somehow, regained that paradisaic innocence, with respect to differences of race, which the people of the United States have somehow lost. I mention this fact, but I shall not attempt to explain it. The situation is complex and the explanations are only partial and not wholly convincing. One circumstance mentioned by the author, I am, however, disposed to underscore.

Brazil is a vast country and has been colonized, as has the United States, by a wide variety of peoples: Germans from northern Europe; Latins, particularly Italians, from southern Europe; not to mention the original settlers, the Portuguese. It has been colonized more recently by Orientals. There are now possibly some two hundred thousand Japanese in Brazil today. With the exception of the Italians, these different peoples have settled in more or less closed communities in widely separated parts of a vast territory. Dependent upon water transportation rather more than upon rail to maintain economic and political unity, Brazil has

BRAZIL SL

B
BB

*121
*563

been haunted by the fear that the country would some day fall apart. Under these circumstances it has seemed that the security and the solidarity of the nation depended upon its ability to assimilate and ultimately to amalgamate its different immigrant populations. From this point of view the Negro has not constituted a problem.

The first task of this, as of every other attempt to study the race problem rather than to solve it, has been to define the racial situation in the country and in the culture in which the problem exists. But the author of this volume has done something more, it seems, than that. He has, as he puts it, given an account of "the career of the Negro in Brazil," and he has made this account a chapter in the life-history of the Negro outside of Africa, in what one might, to use a term that has been usually applied to the Jewish people, call the Diaspora.

The term "diaspora" was first used by the Greeks to designate a nationality, or some part of it, dispersed among other nations but preserving its own culture. The Negro outside of Africa is neither a nation nor a nationality, and, with the exception of Brazil, there is no country outside of Africa, so far as I know, where a people of African origin has sought to preserve African customs or African culture. Nevertheless, the attitude of Europeans has imposed upon peoples of African origin under European domination, either in or outside of Africa, a certain degree of race consciousness and racial solidarity. It has tended to make them a nationality.

Living thus, as Booker Washington once said of the Negro in the United States, as "a nation within a nation," the Negro has been subjected to extraordinary changes of fortune but changes that are nonetheless typical not merely

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SLI

B
BB
121*
563*

of Negroes abroad but of other peoples who, in the interest of European commercial expansion, have been dispersed to widely separated parts of the world.

The diaspora, however, is no longer what it once was—an area of dispersion merely. It has become rather an area of integration, economic and cultural. It is in this sense that this history, I might better say natural history, of the career of the African in Brazil has sought to describe the processes by which the Negro has been assimilated and to measure the success he has had in finding a place in what was the diaspora but now is, to use Graham Wallas' term, *The Great Society.*

Robert E. Park

[P. lxxxiv is blank]

000

I

THE SETTING

7

[P. 1]
[P. 2 is blank]

[City of Salvador]

CHAPTER I B

THE SEAPORT OF BAHIA BB

JAMES BRYCE once wrote of the racial situation in 121* Brazil: "It is a subject of study all the more interesting 563* because the relations are . . . . different from those . . . . in the British colonies, in India, and in the United States."[1] Bryce might well have added that such differences constitute one of the more significant portions of any study of race relations. It is by investigating in intimate and concrete detail variant racial situations in different parts of the world and subsequently comparing and contrasting each set of conditions and circumstances that we are able to build up, case by case, a more complete knowledge of the race problem, its sources and nature. The more we see the United States and her problems through the perspective of a world-view—the more, in other words, we detach ourselves from the merely local and provincial—the more clearly will our BB own problems stand out.

If one looks about in Brazil for a door, so to speak, through 121* which he may enter to examine at first hand the Brazilian 563* racial situation, he may well choose the picturesque old seaport [103] of Bahia,[2] known affectionately in Brazil as "A Mulata Velha." For here the processes of racial adjustment have perhaps gone on longest and most persistently, have involved large numbers from each of the three basic human 2 BB [113] BB [104]

---

[1] *South America* (New York, 1912), p. 20.

[2] Bahia ("Bay") is pronounced *Bāh-ee'-uh* and is written, in "simplified" spelling, Baía. The city is also known as São Salvador or, more correctly, Salvador ("Savior").

[City of Salvador]

*

*121 races, and the ensuing termination is perhaps most clearly
563 discernible.

131 Bahia lies in the tropics of the Southern Hemisphere, ap-
361 proximately thirteen degrees south of the Equator, her nat-
[132] urally warm and humid climate almost constantly tempered
by the refreshing Southeast Trades. Located seven hundred
miles above Rio de Janeiro, the Brazilian capital, and four
hundred miles below the old sugar center of Pernambuco,
Bahia marks approximately the mid-point of Brazil's four
thousand miles of coast line which stretches from temperate
[167] Uruguay to the torrid Guianas. Some twenty-five hundred
miles to the northeast lie the Gold and Slave coasts of Africa,
once the home of the parents or grandparents of many
present-day Bahians; directly to the east is Angola, another
important source of the city's population.

175 In 1949 Bahia will celebrate her four hundredth anni-
361 versary. As cities go in the New World, she is an old city;
in fact, one of the very oldest. Permanently founded fifty-
[504] eight years before Jamestown and thirty-five years earlier
than St. Augustine, this outpost of Portuguese civilization
was one of the world's richest ports long before New York
had outgrown her swaddling clothes.

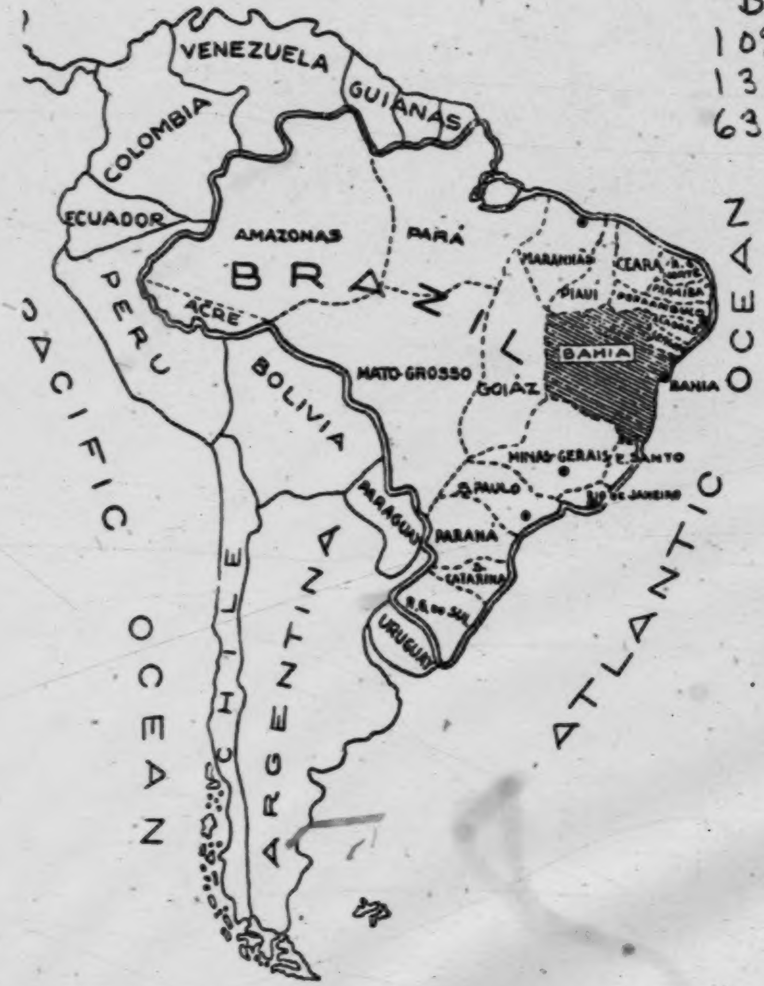
175 Here, shortly after 1500, set in the Portuguese transplan-
162 tation, at first composed of adventurers, shipwrecked and
*563 deserting sailors; *degredados* banished from Portugal for
criminal, political, or religious offenses; ambitious young
men chosen for physical fitness and freedom from marital
ties to serve in the colonial garrison; impoverished nobles
seeking to recuperate fortunes squandered at the Portuguese court; a few officials, Jesuits, and secular clergy; Jews
expelled by the Inquisition (who incidentally were to furnish
a considerable portion of the much-needed capital for the

[TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 6]

BRAZIL SL1

[P. 5]

BB
102
103
131
B
102
131
631


VENEZUELA
GUIANAS
COLOMBIA
ECUADOR
AMAZONAS
PARÁ
BRAZIL
MARANHÃO
CEARÁ
R. G. NORTE
PARAIBA
PIAUI
PERNAMBUCO
ACRE
PERU
BAHIA
BAHIA
MATO-GROSSO
GOIAZ
BOLIVIA
MINAS GERAIS
E. SANTO
S. PAULO
RIO DE JANEIRO
PARAGUAY
PARANÁ
S. CATARINA
R. G. DO SUL
URUGUAY
CHILE
ARGENTINA
PACIFIC OCEAN
ATLANTIC OCEAN

P OF SOUTH AMERICA SHOWING BAHIA AND SURROUNDING AREA

175
162
*563
colony's development); gypsies destined to play a role in the subsequent slave trade and to bequeath their name permanently to the section of the city in which they settled; prostitutes and orphan girls sent over in limited numbers as wives by the Crown; and a few hardy peasant colonists, with their families, from Portugal, the Cape Verde Islands, and the Azores.

175
*563
648
This incoming wave of European population met the indigenous Indians and eventually absorbed or expelled them from the coast. In and about Bahia they were the Tupinambás and the Tupiniquins, part of the earlier Tupí expansion from the south, and of very primitive culture. The wifeless soldiers and colonists took Indian or half-breed women, first for concubines and later for legally married wives, and soon a numerous mixed-blood population sprang up which was gradually absorbed into the dominant white. Indian males were annihilated in battle, died from the rigors of slavery, or were driven, together with their women and children, far back into the interior. When they put up too stubborn resistance, whole villages were deliberately exterminated, one of the most effective means being the planting of smallpox germs from the clothing of a recent victim of the disease. The Indians, previously strangers to this European malady, rapidly succumbed.

175
167
567
As early as the middle of the sixteenth century there began at Bahia extensive and prolonged Negro importation from Africa, and Bahia's Bay of All Saints subsequently served for generations as the principal port of entry into Brazil for this black commerce from the African coast. This involuntary population movement to Brazil eventually became what is, probably, the greatest intercontinental displacement of Negro peoples which ever occurred.

[City of Salvador]

At Bahia in 1807, 1809, 1813, 1816, 1826, 1827, 1828, and 175
1830, slave revolts broke out, terminating in the serious 567
Malê uprising of 1835. There existed here, particularly in [669]
the nineteenth century, a well-established group of Negro
disciples of the prophet Mohammed. Here Nagô was for a [792]
long time a Negro lingua franca (or, to use the corresponding
Portuguese expression, a *lingua geral*), and Nagô is still [197]
occasionally to be heard among some of the older blacks.
Here one might have encountered in the years just preceding [183]
abolition in 1888 an interesting paradox: while at home Bahia
clung tenaciously to slavery, she was known abroad for
the eloquence of her abolition orators.[3] Here, also, one might [771]
have observed the gradual fusion of Catholic belief and ritual [177]
with African mythology and religious practice, evidences
of which may be seen today in *candomblés*, or fetish-cult
centers, like that of Gantois, for example, whose ceremonies
have been carried on in the same sacred place for many
decades.

In the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries Bahia 175
became one of the world's great sugar centers where a small 249
aristocracy, as is attested today by the pretentious edifices
still standing, achieved great wealth. As early as 1587 there
were forty-seven sugar *engenhos*[4] in and about Bahia, and

---

[3] See Luiz Anselmo da Fonseca, *A escravidão, o clero e o abolicionismo* (Bahia, 1887), *passim*. This book, although obviously written as abolition propaganda, cites names, places, and dates to support its contentions and does not overlook negative cases. [113]

[4] Each *engenho* consisted of a sugar plantation and a mill for processing the cane. Those at Bahia often had a capacity of a thousand tons or more yearly. Each was largely a self-sustaining economic unit, dependent upon the labor of numbers of Negro slaves. H. Morse Stephens says (*Portugal* [New York, 1903], p. 228) that sugar cane was imported into Brazil from the Madeira Islands in 1548. [433] [464] [567] [137]

249 these, together with the plantations of Pernambuco, supplied a large part of the sugar for the tables of Europe.

175 By 1670 Bahia was a wealthy capital boasting that her
439 flag was known upon the seven seas. Ships from the Portu-
433 guese empire in the East called regularly on their way back
[162] to Portugal. By the early eighteenth century Bahia had
grown into a city of 70,000, her commerce protected by the
[34] cross-fire of fourteen forts. Six- and seven-story buildings
were common; the possession of carved ebony furniture had
[352] become a symbol of social standing; silks, palanquins, and
[554] the finest porcelain were imported from China. In the sur-
[567] rounding cane fields toiled, it is estimated, ten times as many
slaves as in Virginia. A century later, Lindley, an English smuggler, after admiring the abundance of gold jewelry worn by the women of Bahia, looked out over the shipping in the harbor and wrote of "a degree of wealth unknown in Europe."

Bahia continued to be the first commercial city of Brazil until about 1830,[1] when she finally yielded front rank to São Paulo, the rising young metropolis to the south. But during the entire colonial period (1549–1822), Bahia possessed the principal Brazilian firms and the largest Brazilian fortunes.

175 During the first two centuries of the colonial era, Bahia
633 was the seat of Portuguese control in Brazil, the official residence of high functionaries representing the Portuguese crown. Even after the government was transferred to Rio (1763), Bahia continued to play a prominent role in the politics of the colony and, subsequent to independence

---

[249] [1] In 1868, although the decline in sugar production was by that time well advanced, Bahia had 511 *engenhos* producing nearly 19,000 tons of sugar a year.

175
in 1822, in the politics of the Empire, a role similar to that 633
assumed by Minas Geraes, São Paulo, and Rio Grande do
Sul in the Republic following 1889. In fact, she has been
called "the Brazilian Virginia." Until 1907 Bahia was also 175
the religious center of the Brazilian nation. Her archbishop 795
was the head of the Roman Catholic church in Brazil, and
the religious orders maintained here their principal representatives.
Thus in the economic, political, and religious
life of Brazil, Bahia boasts a long tradition of distinction
and prestige.

The present city is about the size of Indianapolis or Seattle.[6] 361
It nestles along the eastern rim of a huge bay, Bahia de
Todos os Santos. The bay is formed by the projection out
into the ocean of Cape Santo Antonio, which, on its western
side, breaks rather sharply almost at the water's edge, exposing
a bold promontory approximately three hundred feet
in height which parallels for some two to three miles the
rim of the bay. The city clings to the narrow shelf between
the bay and the cliff and then sprawls up over this sizable
barrier and spreads out along the ridges and into the valleys
to the east and north, where centuries of erosion have
carved a one-time flat plain into alternating crests and steep-sloping
depressions.

Bahia is thus divided by a natural barrier into a lower and [363]
an upper city, into a Cidade Baixa and a Cidade Alta, as the [406]
two parts are locally called; the one connected with the other
by steep, winding streets paved with cobblestones, by inclined [487]
planes and modern hydraulic elevators, or by numerous
well-worn footpaths. In the lower city lies, of course, 000

---

[6] An estimate by the state government gave for the city of Bahia on December 31, 1934, a population of 352,244 (*Annuario estatistico da Bahia, 1934*, p. 131). The federal census of 1920 gave for Bahia City 283,422 (*Recenseamento do Brasil, 1920*, Vol. IV: *População*, Book I, p. xxiv). [162]

[City of Salvador]

In the lower city lies, of course,
36 the port, with its customs, warehouses, shipping and con-
[504] sular offices, banks, the marine arsenal, the post office, the
Association of Commerce, the principal public market, jewelry shops, hardware and cigar stores, and most of the men's shops of the city. Up on the promontory and extending out toward the suburbs are the public buildings and most of the churches, the convents and monasteries, hotels and movie theaters, the public library, museums, professional schools, primary and secondary institutions, hospitals, women's shops, photographic galleries, furniture and dry-goods stores, confectionary stalls, the "five and tens," physicians' and dentists' offices, clubs, the principal parks and
131 *praças*, and the residential areas of the city.

Bahia the city is the economic and political capital of Bahia the state, whose area of 342,000 square miles makes
133 it considerably larger than Texas. The region is composed in large part of a vast plain of gneiss formation which rises abruptly from the comparatively narrow coastal belt to heights varying from 600 to 1,200 feet in the interior.
[135] Upon this plateau and running north and south across the central portion of the state lie a series of low mountains composed principally of sedimentary rock, sandstone, or conglomerates and containing such minerals as iron, manganese, copper, lead, gold, and diamonds (including the
132 black *carbonado* so essential for tool-cutting). This mountain
133 barrier acts as a valuable condenser, gathering moisture for a land which otherwise might be virtually desert. In the extreme western part of the state the plateau is composed of sandstone overlying limestone, and thus it provides a natural sponge which assures perennial rivers in a region where light rains and near drought alternate in six-month periods.

Outside the city of Bahia and skirting the rim of All 131
Saints Bay lies the Reconcavo,[7] some sixty miles long and
varying from a few to thirty miles wide. Its soil is a creta- 134
ceous marl of great thickness, similar to the black gumbo of
southern Arkansas and northern Texas, known locally as
massapé or, in literal translation, "that which sticks to the
feet." It is quite fertile and well watered and today appears
only slightly impaired after nearly four centuries of cultiva-
tion. This is the cane and tobacco area upon which formerly [249]
both Bahia's commercial greatness and her need for reliable
agricultural (hence slave) labor was based.

The Reconcavo was formerly a center of large landhold- 178
ings, of a rural aristocracy, of a patriarchal system, and of 249
slavery. Today, cane and tobacco are still cultivated, al- 471
though the former, and to some extent the latter, languish by 565
reason of the condition of the world-market and the persist-
ence of primitive techniques of production. Although large 567
landholdings are still common, the rural aristocracy is decadent, its prestige having suffered a gradual but persistent decline throughout the late eighteenth and the nineteenth centuries with the loss of the sugar monopoly, the growth of the coastal towns, and the accompanying increase in prestige of the urban professional classes. The abolition of slavery in the late nineteenth century was the final blow,
and absentee ownership is now the predominating pattern.
However, the present population is more dense in the Re- [161]
concavo than elsewhere in the state outside the city of [144]
Bahia and remains to this day markedly negroid in character.

---

[7] The literal meanings of the Portuguese word *reconcavo* are (1) a bay of semicircular shape and (2) the environs of a city. These two meanings appear to have fused in the Bahian use of the term. [103]

361
162 As one moves interior from the Reconcavo into the *sertão*, the Negro contribution to the population tends to decrease and the Indian contribution, much mixed with [311] both white and Negro, to increase. Both on the moderately [177] watered plateaus and river basins, chiefly devoted to cattle-raising and light farming and occasionally covered with virgin or second-growth timber, as well as in the sandy, dry, and hot *caatinga* country of the semiarid zones, one finds a frontier society which is relatively isolated and has been only slightly modified during recent decades by contact with the outside world.[8]

Thus, in this particular area of intimate racial and cultural contact where the Negro and his descendants have been fated to work out a rather picturesque career, one will find three distinct types of settlement and population. In the *sertão*, or interior, is a highly mixed stock to whose composition the Indian has contributed in greater proportion probably than either the Negro or the European. In the Reconcavo, with its tradition of a departed rural aristocracy, a disintegrated plantation system, and a long history of slavery, the population is still principally negroid. While in the city of Bahia itself the people are largely of mixed European-African origin, individuals of either pure European or pure African descent being clearly in the minority.

633
571 In the city also, the social order is still relatively stable. There has been in recent times little change. Bahia is, as we have seen, a comparatively old city, conscious of its traditions and proud of them. Conventions originally developed

---

[114] [8] Euclydes da Cunha's *Os Sertões* (12th ed.; Rio, 1933) gives a vivid and dramatic account of life on the *sertão*. Although written in 1902, it is still timely. R. B. Cunningham-Graham's *A Brazilian Mystic* (New York, 1925) is based upon this more detailed account.

in response to the needs of colonial life still persist and direct 633
life pretty much in the old familiar channels. Bahia has long 571
been a relatively isolated city; and isolation has intensified personal intimacies and, by so doing, has promoted the growth of peculiarly local customs in response to peculiarly local conditions.

The character of Bahia's population, as might be ex- 167
pected, is also relatively stable. Virtually no immigration has come in from foreign lands in recent years, and little
from other parts of Brazil. What population movement 166
there is into the city comes largely from the interior of the state or from contiguous areas like Alagoas and Sergipe. Similarly there is little emigration.

Bahia is thus a "culturally passive" area[9] with a stability 571
and an order reminiscent of Europe in the Middle Ages. In 178
fact, Bahia is, in some respects at least, a medieval town. 795
Every eminence of the city is dominated by a church or a
cathedral. Until very recently there were no modern office [368]
buildings or industrial edifices to overshadow or to crowd out these symbols of a sacred order, and such as have in the past few years been erected only accentuate the dominance of the ecclesiastical structures. Over the habits of the female portion of the population in particular,[10] and to a con-

---

[9] Dr. Robert E. Park has used this phrase to describe an area "in which life continues, on the whole, to revolve in the same unbroken and traditional routine," where "population, natural resources, and the standard of living have achieved some sort of equilibrium and where custom and tradition provide for most of the exigencies of life." In such an area, "changes still take place, to be sure, but take place silently, continuously, and at an almost imperceptible pace" (see Robert E. Park, "Race Relations and Certain Frontiers," in *Race and Culture Contacts*, ed. E. B. Reuter [New York, 1934], p. 57).

[10] The ecclesiastical authorities have rigorously censured women's bath- [291]
ing suits which do not have sleeves to the elbow and knee-length skirts. Rarely is a woman other than a foreign resident or an occasional individ-

571
178

795 siderable extent over those of the male portion, the church
[554] exercises a substantial measure of control. Prestige of the
military is high.

596 The large family, with its wide ramifications and its patri-
archal organization, also bespeaks a preindustrial era. So-
621 cial cohesion in the community is maintained by the close
association of members of these large family groups, to-
gether with the intimate ties common to friends of long
standing, the degree of whose intimacy is much greater
571 than that ordinarily to be found in the cities of comparable
size in industrial societies. One notes in Bahia a warmth
576 of manner uncommon to the United States. Bahians, like
157 most Brazilians, tend to be very affectionate in the family
and warmhearted toward their friends. Characteristic of
such primary relationships is a high order of courtesy and
571 politeness and an almost limitless consideration for the con-
794 venience and comfort of relatives and friends. Religious affil-
467 iation and guild association weave further strands of soli-
darity, binding the urban community together as if it were
merely an overgrown village.

578 In this stable society there is a comparative absence of
most forms of conflict. In commerce and finance competi-
[477] tion is comparatively slight and limited in considerable
[433] measure to foreigners. The economy is almost entirely ex-
tractive and industry is minimal. The few differences which
[466] arise between labor and capital often take the form of a

---

571 ual educated in Rio, to be seen on the beaches. Snug-fitting street dresses
178 or those made of sheer or transparent material, and skirts which do not fall
at least several inches below the knee, are subject to general criticism. At the
795 exit of the principal churches and cathedrals is posted an official proclama-
291 tion of the archbishop of Bahia specifying permissible dress. Failure to ob-
serve these regulations automatically bars the offender from the sacraments
of the church.

[City of Salvador]

578

[466] [798] [621]

struggle of native labor versus foreign capital and thus tend to unify rather than to divide the local group. Religious competition has not become severe enough to intensify self-consciousness on the part of rival adherents and thus evoke serious animosities. As far as national affairs are concerned, intense local loyalties had not, at least at the time this study was made, been seriously exacerbated by onerous control from without. A minimum of racial conflict will be evident throughout this account.

THE *ricos* OF THE RIDGES AND THE *pobres* OF THE VALLEYS

361
134

One of the things Darwin noted, when he visited Bahia in 1832, was that the city rested upon "a level plain of about three hundred feet in elevation, which in all parts has been worn into flat-bottomed valleys."[11] Today the scene is still much as Darwin saw it. Continuing erosion has merely emphasized the general characteristics of the landscape, transforming the once level plain somewhat more decidedly into alternating ridges, relatively steep declivities, and comparatively narrow valleys.

361
565

[363] [133] [494]

This physiography of the country has not been without significance in the cultural life of Bahia; for, in general, the distribution of the population by classes, and even to some extent by ethnic divisions, follows quite closely the lay of the land. Along the ridges, which wind with the changing terrain, ordinarily run the principal streets, bearing the chief lines of transportation, whether by streetcar, bus, or automobile. So far as accessibility to the center and other principal parts of the city is concerned, here are the more convenient residential locations. The elevation of the ridges,

---

[11] Charles Darwin, *The Voyage of the Beagle* ("Harvard Classics," Vol. XXIX [New York, 1909]), p. 521.

[City of Salvador]

361

565 permitting as it does a full and unobstructed sweep of the
cooling sea breeze, makes these heights more comfortable,
more healthful, and, consequently, more desirable places of
[362] residence. One usually finds here the more modern and
[463] substantial buildings, the homes of the upper classes. Here
ordinarily live the scions of the old aristocracy, the large
landholders, the city's intellectuals, and the leaders of its
"society"; the lawyers, physicians, engineers, and politicians;
the officials of the army, the poets and journalists, the
professors in the Faculdades, the few industrialists which
Bahia has so far produced—in fact, nearly all those prominent
in the intellectual, political, "social," and economic
life of the city. These families possess considerable property
[873] and employ numerous servants. Their members are usually
[463] literate, and at least the males are *formados* (i.e., graduated
from one of the Faculdades, either in law, medicine, or
engineering), a distinction which in the Bahian society
marks them off quite sharply from the rest of the population.
[204]

[291] It is in these areas that the five newspapers published in
the city circulate almost exclusively and the latest fashions
from Paris or Hollywood are known and generally adopted.
[341] In recent years an occasional example of modernistic architecture
[422] and interior design has appeared. Here are to be
[206] found the owners of virtually all the city's 3,855 telephones,
its 1,028 automobiles, its radios, and private libraries. Here
[217] live most of the 20,524 voters who cast ballots in the municipal
[207] election of 1936. Here attachment to the *candomblé*, or
Afro-Brazilian fetish cult, is minimal and Catholic belief is
[794] least modified by elements from the more primitive religions.
[177] Here live that portion of the population which *o povo*
("the people") call the *ricos*, or the "rich."

361

The valleys, on the other hand, afford less comfortable, 565
less healthful, less convenient, and, consequently, less expensive [362]
residential locations. Here the regularly laid out
streets and paving disappear. The inhabitants get about by [363]
way of footpaths, the red clay of which becomes slippery [487]
after a tropical downpour and quite treacherous on the
steeper slopes. Here live the lower classes. Dwellings are 342
simple mud huts constructed of a sapling framework over
which puddled clay has been spread and allowed to dry. If 565
the owner's income has permitted, the rough exterior of
the dwellings has been smoothed off and a lime wash in pale
tints of pink, blue, green, or yellow added. The floor is commonly
of earth, neatly sanded at regular intervals with fresh
areia from the seashore. The roof of such dwellings is usually
of palm fronds and may be slightly raised at the gable to
permit the more ready exit of smoke from the housewife's 565
fire. The furniture ordinarily consists of rude benches or
stools, perhaps a cheap chair, a rough table, and cots, or, 35
more commonly, straw mats for sleeping. A Standard Oil
Company can whose top and bottom have been removed is
used for a stove. Furnishings include an unpretentious
niche with a small image of the family's patron saint, a
candle, perhaps an almanac, and a rude iron support for
washbasin and pitcher of water. Utensils are usually of 565
baked clay and quite simple in design. [415]

In respect to economic level, education, and, to some extent,
religion, the inhabitants of these lower-class areas
diverge widely from those of the ridges. They are usually [212]
illiterate, although some of the children are now being enrolled
in government-sponsored schools. Communication is [20]
ordinarily by word of mouth, seldom by newspaper, book,
or telephone. Conversation is carried on in the Portuguese

[City of Salvador]

565 Conversation is carried on in the Portuguese
[197] vernacular, with a limited vocabulary and numerous errors
[489] in grammar. Many words of African or native Indian origin
are commonly heard. Transport is primitive. Here the fe-
[771] tish cult, and the attitudes, sentiments, and beliefs associated
[794] with it, gains its most zealous and faithful devotees. Here,
cut off quite sharply from participation in the upper levels of European culture, live that portion of the population which the upper classes refer to as *o povo*, and who think of themselves as *os pobres* ("the poor").

The social gulf between the *pobres* of the valleys and the *ricos* of the ridges is wide and not easy to bridge. This is, of course, to be anticipated in a society with an aristocratic tradition whose upper circles still look somewhat askance upon manual labor and have always regarded education,
[668] family connection, and "good breeding" as indices of class.
Attitudes in this respect have changed little since the time
[567] when the abolitionist Anselmo da Fonseca felt it necessary
to apologize for including the name of "a man of the people," a humble Negro shoemaker, among the prominent upper-class abolitionists of Bahia, arguing that "intelligence, patriotism, and truth are not the privilege of any one class" and explaining that this particular individual had been more useful to the abolition cause than many "more noble."

565 The upper classes habitually refer to members of the lower
186 classes as *trabalhadores* ("laborers"), *operarios* ("workers"), or *o povo baixo* ("common people") and humorously caricature them by a cartoon character known as Zé Povinho, an
[867] illiterate, stupid, and unprepossessing lout. To their chil-
dren they often direct such phrases as "não seja gentinha" ("don't be like common people"), "não tenha modos de gentinha" ("don't take up the manners of common people"), "não ligue à (or *para*) povo miudo" ("don't attach yourself

565

to vulgar persons"), "não faça caso de gente baixa" ("don't 186
mind low people"), "não dê attenção á gentinha" ("don't [867]
pay any attention to common people"), and "não se incommode com a gente baixa" ("don't trouble yourself about common people"). Of themselves, the upper classes use the rather general expressions *as altas rodas* ("the upper circles"), *grand monde*, and the "élite."

The lower classes refer to the upper classes as *os "chefões"* ("the big shots"), *os donos da gente* ("the owners of the people"), *os grandes graudos* ("the illustrious great"), *os manda-chuvas da cidade* ("the rainmakers of the city"; i.e., those who can do anything), *ricaços* ("the plutocrats"), or merely *os brancos* ("the whites").

Although this rather simple pattern in which ridges and 361
valleys appear as contrasted residential areas is, in general, 565
characteristic of the entire city, it is modified in a few minor instances. The upper-class suburb of Barra, for example, lies low on the seacoast, albeit well swept by the refreshing sea breeze; while the ridges (as well as the valleys) in the [362]
less accessible areas outside the main portion of the city are covered with the huts of the lower class. In the old outmoded four-to-seven-story buildings (relics of Bahia's former splendor), which hedge about the central portion of the city and lie either on top, or well up toward the top, of the central ridges, are crowded together in something approaching slum conditions hundreds of the city's poor.[12] But in general the pattern of the city conforms quite closely to that which has been described.

As one moves about the different residential areas, he [563]*

---

[12] For an intimate glimpse into the life of this latter area see Jorge Amado, *Suor* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936). The locale of these interesting sketches is an old building at No. 68 on the Pelourinho which fronts on the triangular *praça* where the old slave whipping-post used to stand.

[City of Salvador]

361
565
*563

notes that this segregation by economic and educational classes conforms in a general way, although with certain important exceptions, to the differences in color in the population. In fact, Bahia on initial acquaintance seems not unlike a medieval city surrounded by African villages.[13]

Thus, in general, one may say that the whites and the lighter mixed-bloods ordinarily occupy the more comfortable, more healthful, more convenient, and hence more expensive ridges of the city; while the blacks and darker mixed-bloods usually reside in the less convenient, less healthful, hence cheaper, low-lying areas, and the outlying, less accessible regions called locally *suburbios*. In other words, the ridges of the *ricos* correspond in the main to the residential areas of the whites and of the lighter *mestiços*, while the valleys and the outlying sections of the *pobres* correspond in large measure to the residential areas of the darker portion of the population. On the outskirts of the city, such sections as Matta Escura, Engenho Velho, Federação, Garcia, Quintas da Barra, Retiro, Alto do Abacaxi, Alto das Pombas, Estrada da Liberdade, Estrada do Rodagem, Cabrito, Cruz do Cosme, Matatú Pequeno, etc., are all predominantly inhabited by blacks and darker mixed-bloods. The lighter *mestiços* are clearly in the minority and whites quite rare. On the other hand, the ridges of Vitoria, Canella, and Graça and the seaside *bairro* of Barra are almost entirely inhabited by whites, with only a limited number of the lighter mixed-bloods scattered among them. It is, however,

---

[13] An American resident who had spent five years at Lagos on the African West Coast once remarked, "When I go out into the suburbs of Bahia, I feel like I am back in Africa, the Negro huts and their surroundings are so similar."

361
565
563**

true that one finds, on the slopes to the rear of the more pretentious houses of these areas and spreading into the valleys beyond, a considerable number of simple huts whose occupants are blacks and darker mixed-bloods.

Nazaré is less predominantly an area of white residence, there being in this *bairro* numbers of very light *mestiços* but, except on the slopes toward the Baixa dos Sapateiros, on the one hand, and the Dique, on the other, relatively few blacks. The transitional sections of Santo Antonio, Barbalho, Barris, Tororó, and the peninsula of Itapagipe (which extends more than a mile out into Todos os Santos Bay) are predominantly inhabited by mixed-bloods. Nevertheless, here also a few whites and a considerable number of blacks, particularly in such subsections as Massaranduba in Itapagipe, also live side by side with *mestiços*.

One soon discovers, however, that this ethnic segregation is largely due to the circumstance that color and class, as we shall soon see in detail, tend to coincide. This is, of course, a situation to be anticipated, given the circumstances and conditions of Negro importation and settlement and the comparatively recent emergence of the darker race from a servile status. The important consideration is that there is in Bahia, it seems, no deliberate attempt to segregate the races as a means of maintaining caste or class distinctions.

In fact, the spatial distribution of the races would appear even on first sight to be an index of the racial situation, and longer acquaintance with the city tends to confirm this hypothesis. The residential pattern suggests a gradually evolving, freely competitive society in which the Europeans settled on the ridges, and the Africans and their descendants, as propertyless slaves, or impoverished freedmen, were rele-

[City of Salvador]

361

565
* 563

gated to the less desirable territory. Although the Europeans have still today, to a considerable extent, maintained their original advantage, the blacks and darker mixed-bloods have gradually pushed themselves up the slopes from their less favored locations until now they have come, in some cases, to share a portion of the Europeans' favored position. One occasionally finds them living next to the homes of the whites, symbolizing the fact that they now occupy those positions, social as well as spatial, which personal ability, occupational proficiency, and favorable circumstance have enabled them to achieve and to maintain. Thus the racial distinctions which one from the United States is so likely on first acquaintance to note turn out to be, as we shall soon see in more detail, not the things which are either so genuine or so important as at first sight might appear.

It is significant, in this connection, that in what might be called the intermediate residential areas of the city, where the dwellings of those who are rising out of the lower classes meet the dwellings of the upper classes, one finds the darker and the lighter portions of the population meeting and mingling in close residential proximity. This is true, for example, along the Avenida Sete de Setembro.

363
[788]
[541]
[562]

The Avenida Sete de Setembro, from Jardim Suspenso on, is the only artery into the "downtown area" from South Bahia. It thus becomes the route of passage for processions like those of Carnival, the "Micarêta,"[14] the Peruada,[15] and the numerous religious *festas*, and the avenue of march for the military during visits of political celebrities. Its street-car line and constant flow of busses would make it less de-

---

[14] The "Micarêta" is the so-called "second Carnival" held the Sunday following Easter.

[527]

[15] The Peruada is an annual students' parade with floats.

363

[562]

sirable as a seat of residence for one weary of the noises of an industrial city, but for the Bahian wife and daughters, whose world is still largely inside the doors of the home, these characteristics seem to give it a peculiar charm. Hence, one will see along this avenue, almost from Praça Castro Alves out, the residences of many substantial families and, in Vitoria, just beyond the governor's palace, the more pretentious dwellings of the upper class.

[362]
[565]

361 *
563
162

TABLE 1

FAMILIES DWELLING ALONG THE AVENIDA SETE DE SETEMBRO CLASSIFIED ACCORDING TO ETHNIC COMPOSITION, BAHIA, 1936

	Number	Per Cent
Black	19	7.6
Mixed-blood	97	38.6
White	128	51.0
Mixed-blood and white	5	2.0
Black and mixed-blood	2	0.8
Total	251	100.0

125 *
563
796
[342]
[517]

No Bahian house which boasts any pretension fails to have a balcony, while nearly all possess large casement windows opening out on the street. From this vantage point the family can while away many pleasant hours leaning on elbows and "watching the *gente* (people) go by." Consequently, one can readily gain, especially during the passage of processions when the balconies and windows are fully occupied, rather accurate information on the physical character of the population. It is possible at Carnival, for example, particularly just preceding the passage of the floats, to take a census with respect to racial composition, as far

[City of Salvador]

*125
563
796

at least as color is an index of race.[16] On the first evening of Carnival in 1936 an analysis into color categories of families dwelling along this avenue from Jardim Suspenso to the Church of São Bento gave the distribution shown in Table 1.

361
*563

That families of whites, of mixed-bloods, and of relatively unmixed blacks dwell indiscriminately side by side on this important street is even more clearly evident if one notes the house-by-house distribution as he proceeds along the Avenida:

White
White
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
White
Mixed-blood
White
White
Mixed-blood (dark)
Mixed-blood
White

Mixed-blood
White
Mixed-blood (dark)
Mixed-blood (dark)
White
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
White
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
White
White

Mixed-blood
White
White
White
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
Black
Black
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
Mixed-blood
White

*125
563
361

Of 142 white students to whom the question, "Do you dislike black neighbors?" was put, 120 responded "No." And of 143 who responded to the question, "Do you dislike *pardo* (brown) neighbors?" 129 replied in the negative. Among the small minority who in each case appeared to be somewhat troubled by the immediate proximity of darker neighbors, subsequent inquiry developed that ordinarily the objection arose out of apprehension that residence among black neighbors might imply residence in a lower-class (and hence less

---

[16] It is obviously likely that the actual residents were joined on this occasion by other persons, either relatives or friends. But since the object was not to count faces but to test the ethnic composition of families dwelling side by side, this possibility did not materially affect the enumeration. Only seven cases were found of mixed ethnic composition, and it is reasonable to assume in the light of the Bahian culture that some of these were so by reason of ethnic mixture in the family itself.

125 *
563
361

desirable) neighborhood. The objection appeared to be not so much to the blacks *as such* but rather to those areas in which the darker portion of the population, being less secure financially (as we shall presently see in more detail), ordinarily dwell.

361 *
563
565

In this connection it is also significant to note that an occasional black resides in such upper-class sections as Canella or Vitoria without any question being made of the fact. He will ordinarily be a person of wealth, education, professional competence, and "good breeding"; in other words, a member of the upper classes. Similarly significant is the complementary fact that a considerable number of lower-class whites may be found living in the valleys or the outlying regions, scattered among the darker portion of the population, imbedded quite unconsciously in what might be called, if they were in the United States, the "Negro bottoms."[17] Sharing a common life with the other illiterate poor, these occasional white families visit about among their darker neighbors, eat, drink, work, play, and intermarry with them, and participate in a common body of ideas and sentiments, just as at the other end of the class scale an occasional black participates in the predominately white world of the élite.

Thus, although Bahia is divided quite definitely into upper- and lower-class residents who occupy rather distinct areas of the city, and these class and geographical divisions also tend to correspond rather closely to the color divisions in the population, one notes certain significant exceptions whose occurrence points rather clearly toward class rather than caste as the basis of social organization.

---

[17] An occasional well-to-do white upper-class family will reside in a lower-class area, the house and grounds ordinarily taking on the appearance of a spacious country seat surrounded by more humble dwellings.

[P.26 is blank]
[P.27]

000

II

SLAVERY

[P.28 is blank]

CHAPTER II

THE COMING OF THE AFRICANS

175
162

THE population of Bahia in 1585 included at least three to four thousand Negroes.[1] During the succeeding century the black portion of the city's inhabitants increased to such an extent that it is said a traveler "might have supposed himself in Negroland."[2] Frézier in 1714 estimated the proportion of blacks to whites in Bahia to be at that time twenty to one, which is probably an overstatement, although the preponderance of Negroes was undoubtedly considerable.[3] Approximately one hundred years later, in 1807, an *alistamento* for military service enumerated nearly twice as many blacks as whites, or approximately the same number of Negroes as both whites and mixed-bloods combined.[4] Twelve years later, in 1819, Conselheiro Velloso

[113]

---

[1] A. G. Keller, *Colonization* (Boston, 1908), p. 145. Gabriel Soares (*Roteiro do Brasil*, p. 126, quoted by Pedro Calmon, *Historia social do Brasil* [3 vols.; São Paulo, 1937–39, I, 179) puts the number of Negroes able to bear arms in Bahia in 1587 at four thousand. The Jesuit Anchieta estimated the population in 1583 to include three thousand Negroes, a figure thought by Vasconcellos to be an underestimation (see Salomão de Vasconcellos, "A escravatura africana em Minas Geraes," *Jornal do Commercio* [Rio], November 20, 1938).

[2] Robert Southey, *History of Brazil* (3 vols.; London, 1810), II, 674.

[3] At approximately the same time, Cook estimated the proportion in Rio de Janeiro to be seventeen to one (Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 175). Each visitor may have been more familiar with the area immediately about the docks where a greater predominance of Negro workers would naturally be found. It is also probably true that the mixed-bloods were, in each case, included with the blacks.

[4] The totals were: blacks, 25,502; mixed-bloods, 11,350; whites, 14,260 (see João Pandiá Calogeras, "A politica exterior do imperio—as origens,"

175

162 de Oliveira estimated that there were then in Bahia province
147,263 unfree Negroes.[5]

464 The blacks were practically all introduced as slaves, Bra-
zil being, until 1888, a slaveholding state.[6] Under the favor-
567 able conditions of a rich soil, intense tropical sunlight, and
249 plentiful rainfall common to the Reconcavo, sugar cane
175 thrived. Its cultivation and processing in a land of "open
resources" demanded a constant and inexpensive labor sup-
ply which the Portuguese, by reason of insufficient numbers
and imperfect acclimitization, were themselves unable to
567 furnish. At first, as in the West Indies and the United
464 States, the indigenous Indians were enslaved; and, after the
175 limited supply on the littoral was exhausted, raiding expedi-
tions penetrated deep into the interior. But the Indians, fa-
miliar with only the crudest forms of agriculture, semi-
nomadic, and as unaccustomed to settled and ordered plan-

Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro [tomo especial; Rio, 1927], p. 294).

[5] *Ibid.*, pp. 293 and 330.

[6] For detailed information on the slave trade and slavery see, especially Perdigão Malheiro, *A escravidão no Brasil* (3 vols.; Rio, 1867); Percy A. Martin, "Slavery and Abolition in Brazil," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, Vol. XIII, No. 2 (1933); Louis Couty, *L'esclavage au Brésil* (Paris, 1881); Lawrence F. Hill, "The Abolition of the African Slave Trade to Brazil," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, Vol. XI, No. 2 (1931); Braz do Amaral, "Os grandes mercados de escravos africanos; as tribus importadas; sua distribuição regional," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro* (special vol; Rio, 1927), pp. 437–96; Affonso Claudio, "As tribus negras importadas," *Revista do Institudo Historico e Geographico Brasileiro* (special vol., Part II; Rio, 1914), pp. 597–655; Mary W. Williams, "The Treatment of Brazilian Slaves in the Brazilian Empire," *Journal of Negro History*, Vol. XV (July, 1930); Evaristo de Moraes, *A escravidão africana no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1933); João Dornas Filho, *A escrividão no Brasil* (Rio, 1939); Roberto Simonsen, "As consequencias economicas da abolição," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio), May 8, 1938; Affonso de E. Taunay, "Notas sobre as ultimas decadas do trafico," *ibid.*, July 24, July 31, August 7, 1938.

175
567
[464]

tation life as they were at home in the near-by bush, proved inefficient and undependable workers.

Just the reverse was characteristic of the Africans, with whom the Portuguese had for some time been acquainted. As early as 1433,[7] Negro slaves had been imported into Portugal to labor on the large estates of the military and religious orders, particularly in the Algarves. Moreover, the West Coast of Africa lay within easy reach of Brazil, directly opposite its central and northern coasts.

The exact date when African importation began is unknown, although it is thought that the fleet which Martim Affonso de Souza in 1531 encountered in the bay at Bahia was engaged in the transport of slaves.[8] Sometime later in this same century[9] the slave trade began to gather momentum, Bahia serving for at least two centuries as the principal port of entry.[10] The traffic opened in Guinea and the island of São Thomé, spread shortly to the Congo and Angola, and finally to distant Mozambique. It continued uninterruptedly for nearly three hundred years, assuming its largest proportions in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, when first gold-mining and diamond-panning in Minas Geraes, and then the development of coffee cultivation in São Paulo, augmented the demand.[11] How many Africans were brought

---

[7] Prado cites a statement from Georg Friederici (*Der Charakter der Entdeckung und Eroberung Amerikas durch die Europaer* [3 vols.; Stuttgart, 1925–36]) to the effect that the first Africans were imported into Portugal in 1433, instead of 1441, as commonly thought. See J. F. de Almeida Prado, *Pernambuco e as capitanias do norte do Brasil* (2 vols.; São Paulo, 1939–41), I, 150 n. [114]

[8] Malheiro, *op. cit.*, III, 6; cf. Arthur Ramos, *As culturas negras no novo mundo* (Rio, 1937), p. 281.

[9] In a letter dated 1552 Padre Nobrega refers to having requested and received three slaves from Guinea. These arrived with others on orders from the king (see Ignacio Accioli de Cerqueira e Silva, *Memorias historicas e politicas da provincia da Bahia* [4 vols.; Bahia, 1919–33], I, 390). In another letter written June 5, 1559, Padre Nobrega refers to eight "Negros de Guiné" on the estate of one Andre Gavião at Bahia (see Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 442). In 1583 a certain Salvador Correa de Sá made a contract with João Gutteres Valerio in which he agreed to purchase every slave brought from Africa in his ship (F. Borges de Barros, *Novos documentos para a historia colonial* [Bahia, 1931], p. 77). Pedro Calmon (*op. cit.*, p. 178) gives 1548 as the year in which the traffic began, and Arthur Ramos (*The Negro in Brasil* [Washington, 1939], p. 3) says that the first shipment of slaves direct from the Guinea coast is thought to have occurred in 1538 in a vessel belonging to one Jorge Lopes Bixorda.

[10] Often for transhipment to Rio or for overland delivery to Minas Geraes.

[11] Henry Koster, writing in the early nineteenth century, says of this trade: "As the voyage from the coast of Africa to the opposite shores of South America is usually short, for the winds are subject to little variation and the weather is usually fine, the vessels which are employed in this traffic are generally speaking small, and are not of the best construction. The situation of captain or master of a slave ship is considered of secondary rank in the Portuguese merchant-service; and the persons who are usually so occupied are vastly inferior to the generality of the individuals who command the large and regular trading vessels between Europe and Brazil. The slave ships were formerly crowded to a most shocking degree; nor was there any means of preventing this. But a law has been passed for the purpose of restricting the number of persons for each vessel. However, I more than suspect, that no attention is paid to this regulation. . . . . The slaves . . . . are placed in the streets before the doors of the owners, ... lying or sitting promiscuously upon the foot-path, sometimes to the number of two or three hundred. The males wear a small piece of blue cloth round their waist, which is drawn between the legs and fastened behind. The females are allowed a larger piece of cloth, which is worn as a petticoat; and sometimes a second portion is given to them, for the purpose of covering the upper parts of the body. The stench which is created by these assemblages is almost intolerable to one who is unaccustomed to their vicinity; and the sight of them, good God! is horrid beyond anything. These people do not, however, seem to feel their situation, any farther than that it is uncomfortable. Their food consists of salt meat, the flour of the manioc, beans, and plantain occasionally. The victuals for each day are cooked in the middle of the street in an enormous caldron. At night, they are driven into one or more warehouses: and a driver stands to count them as they pass. They are locked in; and the door is again opened at day-break on the following morning. The wish of these wretched creatures to escape from this state of

175
567

in perhaps never will be known, but the number undoubtedly ran into millions.[12]

Angola furnished most of the importations during the late sixteenth[13] and the seventeenth centuries; Guinea, during the eighteenth and early nineteenth.[14] By 1710 Bahian to-

---

inaction and discomfort is manifested upon the appearance of a purchaser. They start up willingly, to be placed in the row for the purpose of being viewed and handled like cattle: and on being chosen they give signs of much pleasure. I have had many opportunities of seeing slaves bought; for my particular friends at Recife lived opposite to slave dealers. I never saw any demonstrations of grief at parting from each other: but I attribute this to a resigned or rather despairing sensation, which checks any show of grief, and which has prepared them for the worst, by making them indifferent to whatever may occur: besides, it is not often, that a family is brought over together: the separation of relatives and friends has taken place in Africa. It is among the younger part of the assemblage of persons who are exposed for sale, that pleasure is particularly visible at the change of situation; the Negroes of more advanced age do whatever the driver desires, usually with an unchanged countenance. A species of relationship exists between the individuals who have been imported in the same ship. They call each other *malungos:* and this term is much regarded among them. The purchaser gives to each of his newly-bought slaves a large piece of baize and a straw hat and as soon as possible marches them off to his estate. I have often in travelling met with many parties going up to their new homes, and have observed that they were usually cheerful" (*Travels in Brasil, 1809 to 1815* [2 vols.; Philadelphia, 1817], I, 205-9).

[12] Affonso de E. Taunay, "Numeros do trafico," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio), September 30, 1936. Estimates made by Brazilian writers range from three to eighteen millions, although the latter figure would appear to be considerably exaggerated. Ramos believes the number did not exceed five millions (*The Negro in Brazil*, p. 6).

[13] Especially after the founding of São Paulo de Loanda in 1575 (Calmon, *op. cit.*, pp. 178-79). See also *Dialogos das grandezas do Brasil*, ed. Rodolfo Garcia (Rio: Academia Brasileira de Letras, 1930), p. 143.

[648]

[14] In 1811 an agreement with England, actively enforced by the latter's cruisers, cut off importations from north of the Equator. Angola once more became the principal source of slave supply, and, between 1815 and 1850, approximately a million Angola Negroes, it is estimated, came in (Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 182).

BB
175
439
BB
175
101
B
BB
175
567
B
B C
[217]

By 1710 Bahian tobacco[15] was being shipped in quantity to "the Mina coast," which for more than a century thereafter absorbed a full third of Bahia's production.[16] A visitor early in the eighteenth century referred to Bahia as "New Guinea";[17] while the natives of Guinea were said at that time to have called the outer world "Bahia."[18]

In 1781 fifty vessels were engaged in the Brazilian traffic, "eight or ten with Angola and the rest with the Sudanese coast."[19] In 1800 twenty vessels were plying the trade from Bahia alone. According to custom-house records, 29,172 Negroes from "the Mina coast" and the islands of São Thomé and Principe entered Bahia during the decade from

BB
[567]

---

[15] *Aguardente*, or *cachaça* (cheap rum), sugar, and manioc meal were also extensively used for trading purposes, as similarly were cowries (*buzios*) from the coast south of Bahia.

[16] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 180.

[17] Amadeu Francisco Frézier, *Relation d'un voyage à la mer du sud* (Paris, 1716); cf. Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 185. The demand for slave labor in the gold fields of Minas Geraes so stimulated importations that La Barbinais, visiting Bahia in 1717, estimated that in that year 25,000 Africans were landed at Bahia. See Affonso de E. Taunay, *Na Bahia colonial* (Rio, 1925), p. 364.

[18] "It was principally to Bahia . . . . that the unfortunate sons of Lybia were brought, and it is for this reason that the natives of Guinea give the name of Bahia to Brazil, to America, and even to Europe" (Onesime Reclus, quoted by Manoel Querino, "A raça africana e os seus costumes na Bahia," *Annaes do quinto congresso brasileiro de geographia* [Rio, 1916], p. 626).

[19] Calmon, *op. cit.*, pp. 180-81. See letter of Silva Lisboa, *Annaes da Bibliotheca Nacional*, XXXII, 504. From September 29, 1771, to September 22, 1772, nine slave ships with 2,307 Negroes entered the port of Bahia. One ship, "Nossa Senhora do Rosario," carrying 371 Africans "and two babies at the breast" had not had a single death on the voyage. Another vessel, "Nossa Senhora da Conceição da Ponte," sailing from the Mina coast with a call at São Thomé, landed 13 without casualty, July 11, 1772. But other ships lost, respectively, 111 out of 374, 17 out of 468, 17 out of 158, 29 out of 233, 11 out of 308, 44 out of 327, 20 out of 302—a total loss of 249 out of 2,554 leaving the African coast (from custom-house records; see Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 458).

B
BB
175
567

1785 to 1795, and in the last five of these years 17,409 Africans came in from Angola.[20] From 1797 to 1806 approximately 47,000 "Minas" and 11,000 "Angolas" entered Bahia.[21] In the Angola trade, ships plied directly between the Brazilian ports of Bahia,[22] Pernambuco, Rio de Janeiro, and Maranhão and the Angola ports of São Paulo de Loanda, Benguella, and, particularly, Novo Redondo, exchanging for Angola Negroes tobacco, *cachaça*, cotton prints, knives, glass beads, powder, and lead.[23] Thousands of Yorubas, Gêges (Ewes), Haussás, Fuláhs (Fulbis, Fulanins), Ashantis, Tapas, Effans, and Mandingas were imported from the ports of Lagos, Forte de El Mina, and São João de Ajudá (Whydah).[24] Felix de Sousa, better known as Cháchá,[25] a mulatto from Rio de Janeiro, played a prominent role in the trade in the early part of the nineteenth century.

In the sixteenth century a good slave is said to have been

B
BB
[488]

---

[20] Calogeras, *op. cit.*, pp. 325–26.

[21] *Ibid.*, p. 322.

[22] Several slave warehouses existed in the area between Agua dos Meninos and the Dourado docks. Some slave merchants used their own houses as *depositos*. A certain Siqueira Lima had such a house in Vitoria on the present site of the governor's palace (Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 70).

[23] Ferreira reports 8,037 Negroes imported into Bahia in the year 1807 (José Carlos Ferreira, "As insurreições dos africanos na Bahia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, XXIX [1903], 96). In 1821, 21,199 Negroes entered Rio from Angola; in 1822, 24,934 (Maria Graham, *Journal of a Voyage to Brazil, 1821–1823* [London, 1824], p. 146).

[24] Braz do Amaral says there were also imported Africans known in Bahia as Macuas, Bambas, Jalos, Bechuanos, Balantes, Jingas, Krumanos, Timinis, Bengos, Jalofas, Bengalas, Cabindas, Congos, Manjocos, Sentys, Maguiscas, Benins, Queitos, and Bornûs. Numerically important were the Yorubas (Nagôs) and Gêges (Amaral, *op. cit.*, pp. 474–84). The Yoruba subgroups, the Egbas and Ige-shas, were apparently large.

[25] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 182; cf. Novas Calvo, *Pedro blanco el negrero* (Madrid, 1933), p. 69.

B
BB
175
567
435

In the sixteenth century a good slave is said to have been valued in Bahia at 40 milreis; in 1692, at 60 milreis; in 1703, at 100 milreis; and in 1800, at 140 milreis.[26] At Pernambuco, early in the nineteenth century, Negroes were valued at 32 pounds sterling; oxen at 31 pounds each, and horses the same; although "by management the two last may be obtained at lower prices," Koster informs us,[27] adding that "plantations of the first class ought to have eighty Negroes at least."

B
BB
1[illegible]
567

In addition to Bahia and Recife, there were two other centers of African importation on the coast, at Rio de Janeiro to the south and Maranhão to the north, and one interior region of concentration, the province of Minas Geraes. These five areas received the major portion of all importations and remain today the principal centers of Negro population in Brazil.

B
BB
175
567
648

In 1831 a treaty with Great Britain sought to abolish the slave trade. But for a quarter of a century this agreement was so little enforced[28] that an estimated 500,000 additional

---

[26] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 182. A slave worth 100 milreis in 1830 was valued at five times this figure ten years later, and still more as the pressure of the British blockade continued (Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 472).

[27] *Op. cit.*, II, 139.

[28] "At one time it appeared impossible to abolish the traffic. . . . . The planters declared that without Africans they would be absolutely unable to plant crops; that free labor was not to be had in sufficient numbers for the necessities of agriculture; that only by force could labor be obtained in this hot country; that the citizen, he who was a free man, possessed as his chief privilege 'não trabalhar' [the right not to labor], or at least to work only enough to enable him to eat and to live as 'Deus dará' [God will provide]; that since the 'gente rude' did not lack shelter, being content to live in palm-leaf huts, it was useless to attempt to obtain profitable labor from free men, who were always lazy and inclined to idleness; that the *fazendeiro* who used free labor was soon reduced to penury by the wages paid out and the poor quality of work so secured" (Amaral, *op. cit.*, pp. 472-73). On receiving news of the decree of 1831, the Bahian provincial assembly directed a petition to

B
BB
175
567
648

BB
175
567
433

Africans were brought into Brazil, many in United States ships, operated by English capital.[29] In 1846, 50,324 were imported; in 1847, 56,172; and, in the following year, 60,000.[30] This traffic was completely suppressed only by 1852,[30a] Bahia being one of the areas in which it died hardest.[31]

In plant and animal communities different species come

---

the federal senate, demanding its repeal. At one time a *delegado de policia* in Bahia was dismissed from office for having apprehended a shipment of Africans, although such shipment was obviously illegal under the provisions of this law.

[29] Daniel P. Kidder, *Sketches of Residence and Travels in Brazil* (2 vols.; London, 1845), II, 96–97; Hill, *op. cit.*, pp. 179 ff.; Williams, *op. cit.*, p. 319. The most notorious slave-trade case involving a vessel from the United States was that of the "Mary E. Smith" of New Orleans. The ship was brought into Bahia by the Brazilian brig "Olinda" on January 29, 1856, with 370 slaves from fifteen to twenty years of age aboard. The "Mary E. Smith," despite efforts to detain her, had left Boston on the preceding August 24 and sailed to the Gold Coast, where she had picked up a cargo of nearly five hundred Africans. When captured, she had been attempting unsuccessfully for weeks to land her cargo on the Bahian coast. One hundred and six slaves died before the vessel was finally taken and those still alive upon arrival in Bahia were so weakened by starvation and disease that only a few survived.

[30] Calmon, *op. cit.*, II, 171. According to figures given by the British Anti-slavery Society, 221,800 Africans entered Brazil between 1840 and 1847 (Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 495).

[30a] Percy A. Martin, *Argentina, Brazil and Chile since Independence* (Washington, 1935), p. 208. The last shipload into Bahia landed October 29, 1851. See Wanderley de A. Pinho, "O ultimo desembarque de escravos na Bahia," *Espelho* (September, 1936), pp. 13–16.

[31] Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 236. The *Argos Pernambucano* of January 30, 1850, says: "The way in which free Africans are imported into Bahia and reduced to slavery, with the obvious connivance of the government, is a notorious scandal." In the *Argos Sant'Amarense* appeared the following: "The Governor of the Province himself, at nightfall, on the twenty-first of October, 1849, unloaded in the city of Santo Amaro a large number of newly arrived Africans, which he had brought from the capital [Bahia] in a boat, and transported them to his *engenho*." See also Querino, *op. cit.*, p. 626.

BB
433

567
175

to live together because they mutually support one another. Similarly, different racial stocks often occupy to mutual advantage the same habitat because each fits into a different niche in an interdependent symbiotic order. The fundamental problem is that of survival. The Portuguese at Bahia to a considerable extent resolved this problem by the development of an economy based upon plantation agriculture and slave labor.

B
BB

175
567
[164]

A considerable number of Negroes died while being transported from Africa. Others subsequently perished from the ravages of cholera, yellow fever, and other epidemics. A few committed suicide or led religiously motivated uprisings against their masters. But the major portion were readily incorporated into the plantation system. Centuries of familiarity with the slave tradition of their African cultures and, in many cases, familiarity with the slave status itself probably made their adjustment to a slave system in the new land less difficult.

BB

175
567
464

Most of the Negroes entering and remaining in the vicinity of Bahia were employed in the planting, cultivation, harvesting, processing, and marketing of sugar cane and tobacco. A limited number were engaged in cattle-raising. They also supplied the necessary artisan and domestic labor on the plantations.

B
BB

175
567
[357]
[463]

Within the city of Bahia itself, as in other Brazilian ports, most of the slaves were engaged in domestic service. However, in addition, a modified form of slavery existed. Many blacks, known as *negros de ganho*, were employed as porters, stevedores, ironworkers, masons, carpenters, carriage- and cabinet-makers, printers, sign and ornamental painters, silversmiths, lithographers, sculptors in wood and stone, small shopkeepers, street merchants, etc. They were semi-inde-

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

BRAZIL SLI

B

BB

pendent, lived apart from their masters, and arranged their own employment. They were usually required to pay a stated sum weekly to their owners, after which they might retain for their own use any balance remaining. In Bahia they are reported to have been principally Yorubas, Gêges, and Haussás. 175 567

These Negroes were reputedly strong, capable workers. Almost all the Haussás were ardent Mohammedans, who in Bahia seem to have converted to their faith many Yorubas, Gêges, and other Africans. Shrewd and intelligent, they were at times superior in cultural equipment to their masters. Many were literate, and some are said to have written Arabic fluently. Often they banded together to mature schemes of revolt, to buy the freedom of a favorite friend, or to work under a leader for the liberation of all. The order in which they secured their freedom was ordinarily determined by lot, the earliest liberated remaining with the group until the last was purchased, after which they sometimes returned to Africa, paying their passage with what they had earned.[10] B BB [212] [571]

BB

It was principally the Haussás who led the numerous slave revolts[11] at Bahia during the early nineteenth century. Although these uprisings were all unsuccessful and ordi- 175 567 669

---

[10] Daniel P. Kidder and James C. Fletcher, *Brazil and the Brazilians* (Philadelphia, 1857), p. 135. Between 1850 and 1878 from four to six thousand free Negroes from Brazil settled at Lagos and Whydah and a few in Angola (Sir Harry H. Johnston, *The Negro in the New World* [New York, 1910], p. 98 n.). Repatriated Gêges are said to have founded on the African West Coast a city with the name of a Bahian port, Porto Seguro.

[11] In the Archivo Publico at Bahia are four volumes of police documents covering the revolts of this period. Each volume contains from a thousand to twelve hundred sheets in long hand which, for their age, are fairly well preserved.

175
567
669

narily ended in the death of their leaders, the Europeans lived throughout this period in a more or less constant state of alarm.[34] Arthur Ramos, following Nina Rodrigues, considers these disturbances to have been "nothing more or less than a continuation of the long and recurrent struggles of religious conquest carried on by the Mohammedan Negroes of the Sudan."[35] In support of this contention it has been pointed out that their animosity was directed not only at the Europeans but also at creole blacks and mulattoes who did not join the crusade.

In estimating the character of these revolts, one should give particular attention to the fact that the participants were either free Negroes or those slaves, like the *negros de ganho* and the field hands, whose relations with the whites were not the intimate relations which ordinarily arise out of close personal contact. It is highly significant that on the eve of revolt the whites always received timely warning from

---

[34] The following document, which was sent to the governor of Bahia by several *senhores de engenho*, shows the fear which at that time agricultural proprietors had of these disturbances (Silva, *op. cit.*, p. 346):

> The undersigned owners of *engenhos*, considering the imminent peril in which by reason of the frequent slave revolts known to Your Excellency their persons and, in general, those of all the inhabitants of the Reconcavo and even perhaps of the entire Province [of Bahia] are placed, and considering that at every moment the property of each one of them is at stake, feel it an unavoidable duty to point out this situation to Your Excellency and to beg the actual placing of those Detachments which Your Excellency sometime ago ordered stationed at various points in the Reconcavo in keeping with the police plan of the 10th of December, 1828, the which, being included in the *Proposta* of the Provincial Counsel General, was approved along with other provisions and ordered put into effect, the expenses of its execution to be paid out of the public treasury.
>
> It not being, however, the intention of the petitioners to load onto the Public Treasury the entire burden, they themselves offer to seek to raise a portion of this expense by means of a subscription.
>
> The petitioners rest confident in the interest which Your Excellency has always taken in the preservation of public order, and are thereby assured that you will give ear to this urgent request which they have here set forth.

[35] Ramos, *As culturas negras*, p. 336; see also Nina Rodrigues, *Os africanos no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1932), pp. 61–107.

175
some slave,[36] and many Negroes repeatedly refused to par- 567
ticipate in the uprisings.[37] The disturbances were ordinarily 669
led, as we have seen, by Mohammedan Haussás, said to be
exceedingly spirited and resolute individuals,[38] who were
either free blacks or semi-independent *negros de ganho*.
Moreover, they lived for the most part in the city where
life was less arduous than on the plantations and where there
was, at the same time, more leisure for brooding over griev-
ances and perfecting schemes of revolt. Since all insurrec- [184]
tionists spoke the same or quite similar languages and shared [197]

---

[36] Dantas Junior, in commenting on the revolt of 1807, repeats (*A Illustração* [Bahia], June, 1936) that on the night of the twenty-second of May (the revolt was set for 7:00 P.M. of the twenty-eighth) a "person of integrity" urgently sought out the governor at his palace and secretly informed him that "a Negro of mine told me that the slaves of the Ussá nation are plotting to revolt." Following the serious uprising of 1835, the provincial assembly rewarded (*Laws*, No. 344, August 5, 1848, and No. 405, August 2, 1850) the "free Africans," Duarte Mendes and his wife, Sabina da Cruz, with the cancellation of their taxes for having "informed on and thus prevented the success of the planned insurrection."

[37] "The Negroes of the warehouses belonging to Manoel Ignacio da Cunha and Francisco Lourenço Herculano did not wish to join the band" (Silva, *op. cit.*, p. 347). Wied Neuwied, who visited Bahia during the period of these uprisings, says that colored troops were used in suppressing them. See Prince Maximilian Wied Neuwied, *Viagem ao Brasil*, trans. from the German of *Reise nach Brasilien in den Jahren 1815 bis 1817* (2 vols.; Frankfurt, 1820), by Edgar Sussekind de Mendonça and Flavio Poppe de Figueiredo (São Paulo, 1940), pp. 450–51.

[38] Koster, noting that "Pernambuco has never experienced any serious revolt among the slaves; but at Bahia there have been several commotions," [184] and convinced that "Bahia contains fewer free people than Pernambuco in proportion to the number of slaves," wrote, "I cannot avoid attributing the quietude of the latter in some measure to the circumstances of a few of the Gold Coast Negroes being imported into it, whilst at Bahia the principal stock of slaves is from that part of Africa. . . . They are represented as possessing great firmness of mind and body, and ferociousness of disposition" (*op. cit.*, I, 214).

175
567
669
[184]
[197]

the same or similar religious beliefs and practices, they were able to act effectively together.

In 1806, following a raid upon a "conspirator's house," the imprisonment of a number of suspected plotters, and the confiscation of "four hundred arrows, a bundle of sticks, and quantities of cord for the making of bows, a large number of knives and pistols, a gun and a drum," orders were issued to arrest every slave found in the streets after nine o'clock at night "without a letter from his master or in his company."[39] The following year correspondence between African conspirators in Bahia and Santo Amaro (a sugar center in the Reconcavo) was intercepted, and the leaders thus exposed were subsequently tried, sentenced to death, and executed.[40] [361] About the same time the governor of Bahia ordered destroyed two troublesome *quilombos*, or settlements of fugitive slaves, on the outskirts of the city near Cabula and Nossa Senhora dos Mares, and the *capitãomor* with eighty soldiers surrounded their huts and took prisoner seventy-eight blacks, some of whom were free Negroes.[41]

In 1809 a revolt about twelve miles from Bahia was put down after the Haussás had "committed all sorts of outrages."[42] In 1813 about five hundred Haussás revolted and fled into the surrounding country but were speedily pursued and disarmed and their leaders publicly hung on gallows erected in Praça Piedade, one of the principal squares of the city. Several others were deported to Africa.[43] In 1826 soldiers had to be sent to various points in the Reconcavo,

---

[39] Silva, *op. cit.*, p. 346.

[40] Alvares do Amaral, *Resumo chronologico da Bahia* (Bahia, n.d.), p. 111.

[41] Eduardo A. de Caldas Britto, "Levantes de pretos na Bahia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, XXIX, 72.

[42] Alvares do Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 6.

[43] *Ibid.*, p. 39. See also Ramos, *As culturas negras*, p. 337.

175
567
669

including Cachoeira, to put down an African insurrection, whose leader had been chosen a "king of the blacks" and when wounded and captured "carried a red flag, had on his head . . . . a crown, and over his shoulders an old-fashioned mantle of green velveteen on which had been embroidered a golden cock." An incident of this uprising was the successful resistance of a *quilombo* near Pirajá, a few miles distant from Bahia, to the attack of several *capitães do matto*[43a] who, in the mistaken belief that they had to deal with a small number of Negroes, sought without reinforcements to apprehend these fugitives and lost their lives in the attempt. A detachment of soldiers was required to dislodge the Africans.[44]

In 1827 a body of Yoruba slaves fled into the *matto* after sacking and setting fire to houses in the suburbs of the city. A police force sent in pursuit engaged the fugitives, killing or wounding eight of their number, but met with such resistance over a period of two days' skirmishing that it would have itself been wiped out had not a patrol of troops come to its rescue. The next year, following three separate revolts, slaveholders in the Reconcavo appealed to the governor for more effective police protection.

[789]

In 1835 the last and most serious revolt broke out, led again by Mohammedan Negroes, each of whom wore upon his person a *patuá*, or charm, presumed to protect the faithful against death in any form.[45] Bahia was at that time the

---

[43a] "Bush Captains" hired to track down fugitive slaves.

[44] Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, p. 76.

[45] Padre Etienne Ignace Brasil, "Os Malês," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, LXXII, Part II (1909), 83. In São Salvador dos Campos, in the province of Rio de Janeiro, "restless slaves wearing plumes in their hats" were arrested, one of whom on being interrogated confessed that orders had been received from Bahia to revolt on the following Ash Wednesday (Alvares do Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 91).

175

567
669
seat of the iman, or head in Brazil of all African disciples of the prophet Mohammed. Those who were resident in Rio, Ceará, and Pernambuco owed allegiance to him. Incidentally, it was a time of general social unrest not only among certain of the slaves but among the whites as well.[46] The aim of the conspiracy was "to set up a queen after exterminating all the Europeans." Extensive plans were laid, including the proposed participation of slaves from "every part of the Reconcavo," many of whom, immediately pre-
[186] ceding the night set for the uprising, fled from their owners and came to Bahia. A banner was adopted and the robes
[714] worn at Mohammedan ceremonies selected as costumes of war. The time chosen for the uprising was during the popu-
[527] lar festival of Nossa Senhora da Guia, when most of the European population would be gathered at Bomfim, outside the main area of the city, houses would consequently be deserted by white owners, and slaves might go in and out without arousing suspicion.[47]

The governor, forewarned by a faithful slave a few hours before the uprising actually occurred, doubled all police

---

[46] From 1831 to 1837 revolts against the Brazilian imperial government broke out in Pará, Sergipe, Pernambuco, and Rio Grande do Sul. In Maranhão three thousand slaves, led by an African named Cosme, had recently revolted.

[47] The report of the chief of police to the governor of the province of Bahia (republished from the *Diario da Bahia* in the *Jornal do Commercio* of Rio, February 10, 1835) said that the evidence indicated "the insurrection had been plotted for a considerable period of time with absolute se-
[212] crecy. . . . . Almost all the leaders know how to read and to write in some unknown language, which appears to be Arabic. This is the same language
[197] which is used by the Ussás, who seem to be united today with the Nagôs. These Ussás are from the same tribe which has revolted on several occasions in this Province. . . . . Their leaders, among whom are many free and even wealthy Africans, stir up and organize revolts."

BB

patrols which later, aided by foot soldiers and cavalry and 175
favored by considerable confusion among the widely sepa- 567
rated bands of blacks as to the actual hour of attack, scat- 669
tered and broke up the Negro mobs, but only after a serious
struggle.[48] The leaders of the revolt were tried,[49] given two
hundred, five hundred, even one thousand lashes, or shot by
a firing squad, or deported to Africa. Further importation 8
of the *batá*, or African war drum, was forbidden. BB

The number and persistence of these slave insurrections 175
may suggest that slavery in Brazil was unusually severe. 567
The reverse seems to be the fact. Insurrectionists were un- 669
assimilated free Negroes and semi-independent slaves, mor-
ally isolated from the Europeans. Although the hardships
incidental to a plantation system obviously existed, and
atrocities occurred here as elsewhere, the slavery involved, 8
as we shall see in detail in chapter iii, was ordinarily a mild BB
form of servitude. In general, slavery in Brazil was char- 567
acterized by the gradual and continuous growth of intimate, 571
personal relations between master and slave which tended
to humanize the institution and undermine its formal char-
acter.

---

[48] A letter from Bahia published in the *Jornal do Commercio* of Rio on February 10, 1835, and dated January 31, reads: "Business and commerce is completely at a standstill by reason of a Negro uprising which last Sunday suddenly upset public tranquillity in this city. The revolt, which had been planned for a long time, was very serious, but the armed forces managed to put it down." BB

[49] The police records deposited in the Archivo Publico at Bahia list 234 Negroes who, subsequent to the uprising, were brought to trial by the authorities. Among these, 165 are listed as Nagôs, 21 as Haussás, 6 as Gêges, and 6 as Tapas. Documents found in their possession, facsimiles of which may be seen in the above depository, were written in Arabic characters. See also the novel by Pedro Calmon, *Os Malês, a insurreção das senzalas* (Rio, 1933). [217]

B
BB
175
567
527

One advantage which Brazilian slaves had over bondsmen in the English colonies was the numerous holidays of which the Catholic religion enjoins the observance. Koster wrote:

> These give to the slave many days of rest or time to work for his own profit; thirty-five of these, and the Sundays besides, allow him to employ much of his time as he pleases. Few masters are inclined to restrain the right of their slaves to dispose of these days as they think fit; or, at any rate, few dare, whatever their inclinations may be, to brave public opinion in depriving them of the intervals from work which the law has set apart as their own. . . . . The time which is thus afforded, enables the slave, who is so inclined, to accumulate a considerable sum of money.[50]

B
BB
175
567

Among the small proprietors, parity of condition in many respects apparently obtained between master and slave, who worked together and fared much alike.[51]

It is, of course, true that cases of the most barbaric and extreme cruelty occurred, but apparently these were relatively rare and confined in large measure to frontier areas, where masters were very much a law unto themselves.[52] Public opinion was ordinarily opposed to such treatment, much of which has been attributed to Negro or mulatto owners or overseers who were notorious for their severity.[53]

---

[50] *Op. cit.*, I, 191.

[51] Southey, *op. cit.*, III, 782.

[52] However, Koster records as late as 1800 that, owing to the "abominable cruelty" with which they were treated in Rio de Janeiro, frequent murders were committed by slaves. Iron shackles, sharply pronged iron collars, stocks, and thumb screws were employed, and severe beatings to the point of death and even boilings in oil occurred. See also Thomas Ewbank, *Life in Brasil* (New York, 1856), pp. 116–17, 439.

[53] Joaquim Nabuco made public, and Conselheiro Dantas once referred in the federal senate to "a disgraceful tragedy" which occurred in Parahyba do Sul on July 29, 1886. A master who was an *homem de côr*, his *homem de côr* overseer and *algoz* "flayed and tortured" several slaves until they died

B
BB

175
567 B
BB
[648]

One must not overlook the fact, however, that during the first years of colonization the letters of the Jesuits contained numerous references to Indian slaves who were "tortured and branded in the face."[54] And later, the kings of Portugal, impressed by reports which had come to them concerning hardships inflicted on Negro slaves in Brazil, more than once wrote to their colonial representatives, exhorting them "to put a stop to such crying inhumanities."[55]

B
BB
[668]

Most reports of cruelties, however, date from the abolition campaign and no doubt reflect the agitation and fervor of that movement. Thus, the able Bahian abolitionist, Anselmo da Fonseca, reports the case of a Negro in Rio Grande do Sul whose wrists were tied above his head and, after honey had been poured over his nude body, was left to the insects. Anselmo further reports the raping of small children, the use of stocks, the fracturing of teeth with a ham-

---

from the effects of their wounds (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 145). Fonseca estimates that two-thirds of all the *feitores* (overseers), *capitães de matto*, and *corretores* (slave dealers) in Bahia were either mulattoes or blacks (*ibid.*, p. 151).

B
BB
[439]
[648]
[797]

[54] Brazilian Indians, who before the coming of the Portuguese had killed their prisoners of war, changed this custom when it was discovered that they could sell their captives to the Europeans. Subsequently the latter organized raids into the interior in search of Indian slaves. The Jesuits fought this traffic, their struggles with the colonists lending a dramatic note to accounts of life in the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries. Gradually their influence at the Portuguese court prevailed, certain restrictions were by royal decree put upon the enslavement of Indians, which, being disregarded by the colonists, led to further Jesuit protest and finally, in 1755, to a royal edict liberating all Indian slaves. Equal legal rights were subsequently granted the Indians, the University of Coimbra was opened to them, and they were even admitted, it is said, to the nobility.

[55] A writer cites three "royal letters" in support, dated, respectively, March 20, 1688, March 1, 1700, and April 27, 1719 (see the anonymous article entitled "Tradiçoes bahianas," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, LVI [1930], 514).

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1

B

BB

175 567 mer, the filling of razor slashes with salt, the castration of males and the amputation of the breasts of females, and "murder at the slightest whim."[56] The custom of *novenas* BB and *trezenas* of slave beatings sometimes resulted in death.[57]

[625] In 1887 a police sergeant in a village in the interior of Bahia Province reported to the governor: "Considering the number of crimes on slaves in this section which continually go unpunished, this town of Formosa is in great need of at least five soldiers to be stationed here at the disposal of the local police official."[58] The *Diario da Bahia* of July 21, 1887, reports the discovery of a slave woman bearing about her neck a pronged iron collar "weighing twenty-five pounds, from which were suspended heavy chains wrapped about her B body like serpents."

[463] Escapes were frequent, the fugitives being assisted by the character of the *matto*. They were hunted by hired *capitães* B *do matto*, or "bush captains," usually Brazilian-born Negroes B E or mixed-bloods, whose trained dogs netted them a steady income.[59] [621] Occasionally, fugitive slaves banded together in considerable numbers for mutual protection into *quilombos*.

---

[56] Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 561-63. For illustrations of instruments used to punish slaves, see Arthur Ramos, "Castigos de escravos," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal* (São Paulo), XLVII (May, 1938), 79-104.

[57] "Each day at a certain hour . . . . the slave is stripped and tied to a post where he receives a certain number of blows which reopen wounds made on previous days. . . . . This is done for periods of nine to thirteen days in accordance with the practices [religious ceremonies extending over a period of nine to thirteen days] of the church" (*ibid.*, p. 43 n.).

BB [58] *Ibid.*, p. 673.

[524] [59] Still played by children at Bahia is the game "Capitão do matto," a form of "hide and go seek" in which those hiding are presumed to be slaves and the hunter a "bush captain."

B
BB
175
567
621
[361]
B
BB
[579]
B
BB
[103]

The present town of Orobó,[60] approximately a hundred and fifty miles interior from the port of Bahia, is said to have had its origin in such a settlement.[61] Even outlying areas of the city of Bahia like Matta Escura and Estrada da Liberdade, and the neighboring villages of Cabula, Armação, Pirajá, and Itapoan, are said to have had their origin in *quilombos*, dating from the colonial period. From these settlements there were frequent sallies of Negroes into the city to rob and to pillage. However, no *quilombo* in the state of Bahia

---

[60] The name has recently been changed to Ruy Barbosa.

[61] On September 23, 1796, an investigation was ordered of complaints regarding the *quilombo* of Orobó. On April 6 of the following year this report was made (Silva, *op. cit.*, III, 227):

B
BB
175
567
621
726
[579]

ILLUSTRIOUS AND ESTEEMED SIR:

There having been repeated requests on the part of certain *senhores de engenho* and owners of *fazendas* living in the vicinity of Orobó, district of the villa of Cachoeira, that there be destroyed a very old *quilombo* of fugitive slaves who have been wasting and destroying neighboring plantations and committing other excesses of great damage to the settlers, I ordered the *desembargador*, Juiz de Fora, of the same villa to find out if these reports were true, and if they were, to seek by all means possible to destroy this *quilombo*, using all prudence and care to avoid any fatal occurrence in the execution of the order, in view of the great distance between Cachoeira and that district, as well as our ignorance of the size of the *quilombo* which, according to some accounts, was not small. The necessity of collecting provisions, of enrolling and arming men . . . . delayed for some time the execution of this order until, the complaints continuing and the people themselves offering to lend some aid and assistance, I ordered the *capitão-mor* of Entrados e Assaltos of the District of São José das Itapororocas, Severino Pereira, to organize an armed force and to destory the *mocambo*. This order was carried out in December of last year, the two *quilombos*, or *mocambos*, known as Orobó and Andrah being destroyed. At these places were found fields of manioc, *inhame*, rice, fruit, and a little sugar cane, with all of which the inhabitants had easily been able to sustain themselves. Thirteen slaves were apprehended, among them men, women, and children, all of whom were delivered up to their respective masters. Previous to the arrival of the armed force, it is reported, a great number of slaves living there fled, for apparently they suspected, or perhaps were even aware of, the impending attack. As it appeared that they had fled to another *quilombo* called Tupim, farther off, I ordered that it similarly be destroyed, but I have not yet had notice whether such has been done. This is what I have to offer Your Excellency in reply to a letter directed to me and received on the 23rd of September of last year, urging me to undertake the most effective means of destroying the indicated *quilombos* and of relieving the settlers.

God guard Your Excellency.

Bahia, 6th of April, 1797. Most Illustrious and Excellent Sir, D. Rodrigo de Sousa Coutinho.

D. FERNANDO JOSÉ DE PORTUGAL

BB
B
175

567
621

equaled in size or in importance the famed Palmares of Alagoas.[62]

B
BB
567
571
175

It is a mistake, however, to conclude that humane and intimate relations between master and slave were by any means rare. In fact, they were in all likelihood, as we shall see in detail later, the general rule. The literature records numerous instances like that witnessed by John Codman in 1866, of which he says:

> We drove up to the door of our Brazilian passengers. They were most boisterously welcomed by a troop of blacks. The pleasantest thing I had seen for some hours was the affection of these poor Negroes. Bright shone their eyes, and what a display was there of ivory! They fairly seized their mistress . . . . in their arms, and "toted" her off into the house, hugging and kissing her, screaming and dancing as they went.[63]

BB
175
567
621
726
[579]

[62] The famous "Negroes of the Palmares" (or "Palm Forests") were slaves who had escaped from Pernambuco before and particularly during the struggles of the Portuguese with the Dutch. Constantly acquiring recruits, they set up a series of crudely fortified villages scattered over some sixty leagues (about two hundred and forty miles). From these they harried the neighboring regions, taking from outlying *fazendas* both mates and slaves, among the former of which white women were occasionally to be found. They became so strong and so difficult to dislodge, that numerous expeditions sent out by the Dutch and later by the Portuguese served only to check for a time their growth—were unable for seventy years to destroy them completely. Only in 1697 were they finally subdued by an army from Recife led by a Paulista famed for success in such fighting and especially imported for this service, and then only after he had at first encountered serious reversals at their hands and their resistance had subsequently been broken by a failure of the food supply (Southey, *op. cit.*, III, 23–29). This Negro group had at times carried on trade with the whites, exchanging agricultural products for articles of manufacture. That they were seriously treated as an alien but respected group is attested by an exchange of peace commissioners during the governorship of Ayres Souza e Castro and the subsequent signing of a treaty of peace. (Incidentally, this treaty was never kept by the whites.) For a critical examination of the exaggerated reports of this erroneously labeled "Negro Republic" see Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, pp. 111–43.

BB
[728]

[63] John Codman, *Ten Months in Brazil* (Boston, 1867), p. 125.

The first recorded protest in Brazil against slavery as an institution was that of the Jesuit Manoel de Nobrega, who, shortly after Bahia was founded, sent a letter to the superior of his order in Lisbon protesting against the importation of Africans into the new settlement.

B.
BB
175
567
668
[797]

In 1758 Manoel Ribeiro da Rocha, who had been educated at Coimbra, published in Lisbon a book entitled *Ethiope resgatado, empenhado, sustentado, corrigido, instruido e libertado*, in which the abolition of the slave trade was advocated. Sixty-five years later, in 1823, José Bonifacio de Andrade e Silva unsuccessfully proposed in parliament a measure designed to end importation by 1828. But on November 7, 1831, the regent, Padre Diogo Antonio Feijó, signed a resolution drawn up by Costa Carvalho, Lima e Sousa, and Basilio Muniz, which declared free all Africans subsequently brought into Brazil.

B
BB
[435]
[208]
[656]

Manumission existed from the first. Apparently early in the colonial period it became customary for masters to accept remuneration for original cost.[64] Public opinion demanded that an owner set at liberty any slave requesting his freedom and offering the price of his purchase.[65] The requirement was later made legally binding and enforced by law.[65a] Other slaves were given their freedom either during their master's lifetime or upon his death. The fathers of illegitimate offspring often freed their children at the baptismal font. From 1864 to 1870 large numbers of slaves were granted their freedom on agreeing to serve in the Para-

B
BB
[848]
[851]
[701]
BB
[291]

---

[64] The wearing of shoes or slippers became a symbol of freedom.

[65] R. Walsh, *Notices of Brazil* (2 vols.; London, 1830), II, 391.

[65a] National Law No. 1040, September 28, 1871. See Manoel Joaquim do Nascimento e Silva, *Synopsis da legislação brasileira* (Rio, 1874), p. 460.

B
BB
668
175
567
[701]
BB
B
[656]
B
BB
[747]
B
BB
[702]

guayan war.[66] The law eventually provided that Negro women, after rearing ten children, should be automatically liberated.[67] In 1871 the so-called "law of Rio Branco" freed offspring of slaves born subsequent to its adoption[68] and set up a fund for the purchase and liberation of Negroes by the government. By 1880 a widespread emancipation movement was under way.[69] Thousands were freed by will, by payments from emancipation funds,[70] or by outright gift.[71] For instance, in 1883, in the towns of Baturite, Aca-

---

[66] On March 30, 1867, the monastery of São Bento in Bahia, which had already freed eleven slaves for service in the war with Paraguay, liberated six more Negroes and "presented them to the Governor for the same purpose."

BB

[67] Koster, however, wrote from Pernambuco in the early nineteenth century: "A slave who has brought into the world, and has reared ten children, ought to be free, for so the law ordains. But this regulation is generally evaded" (*op. cit.*, I, 195).

[435]

[68] This law was, however, in some cases ineffective. Sixteen years after its passage the Bahian *Diario Official*, of June 4, 1887, reported the following auction of slave property at the *fazenda Concordia:* "Alberto, 10 years of age, one conto of reis; Vicente, 13 years, one conto of reis; Felix, 14 years, 800 milreis; Flauzinha, 13 years, 600 milreis, Simplicio, 14 years, one conto of reis" (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 587 n.)

B
BB
[747]
[652]

[69] Among the prominent abolitionists mentioned by Anselmo da Fonseca were: José do Patrocinio, Joaquim Nabuco ("the great and illustrious head of the abolition movement"), Senator Dantas, Ferreira de Menezes, Andre Rebouças, Quintino Bocayuva, Joaquim Serra, Ennes de Souza, Getulio das Neves, Nicolau Moreira, José Mariano, Celso Junior, Senator Jaguaripe, Luiz de Andrade, João Clapp, Beaurepaire Rohan, Aristides Spinola, Ruy Barbosa, Escragnole Taunay, Franco de Sá, Antonio Pinto, Leopoldo Bulhões, and "a writer using the pseudonym of Clarkson" (*ibid.*, p. 23).

[70] These funds were sponsored by emancipation societies, private individuals, and municipal, state, and national treasuries.

[71] The *Provinciano*, a newspaper of Parahyba do Sul, listed in 1884, among others, the following emancipations: "Dona Anna S. José, 16 slaves liberated and a farm given them for their use; Condessa do Rio Novo, 200 slaves

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SLI

8
BB
668
175
567
[747]

rapi, and São Francisco, a *Sociedade Libertadora* freed 122 slaves in one day. Scores of these societies operated throughout Brazil.[72]

8B
175
159
464
668

Dr. João Garcez dos Santos was the first Bahian *fazendeiro* (planter) to exchange slave labor for free. After spending some years in Europe studying agriculture, he returned to Brazil and, in 1864, bought an *engenho* called Pimental, in the *termo* of São Francisco. He freed all the slaves except eight domestic servants and paid these freedmen wages, retaining a portion of their earnings until he had been recompensed for their original cost. During the subsequent year he produced with free labor two hundred boxes of sugar. Three years later, he "freed the womb" of his eight female domestic servants, and, on his death in 1874, he set at liberty all the slaves which he had inherited from his father (a total of about sixty persons) on condition that they continue working for wages on the *engenho* for five years.[73]

BB
[428]

B
BB
175
567
668

In 1868 the Senhoras Condessa de Barral and Pedra

---

liberated by will, and the Cantagallo plantation given them for a home; Barão de Dias, 163 slaves liberated, who remain established on his plantation as laborers." In 1887 Anselmo da Fonseca wrote: "As to the *cartas de alforria* granted by slaveholders themselves, it is well known that these have always appeared in greater or lesser number in the country, and that from 1880 on they have multiplied greatly and have now become quite numerous, thanks to the powerful influence of that propaganda which has contributed so much to the elevation of the moral sentiments of the Brazilian people."

[72] On September 7, 1869, an emancipation society was organized in Bahia "with the noble purpose of ending slavery in Bahia," and by March 1, 1874, it had conferred 267 "Letters of Liberty," 89 of which were "granted gratuitously in its name," and 178 by means of its own funds, the amount thus employed totaling 58,289 milreis (Alvares do Amaral, *op. cit.*, p. 181). This organization was named A Sociedade Libertadora Sete de Setembro ("The Seventh of September Liberation Society") in honor of the day on which the independence of Brazil was declared.

[73] Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 220–22.

8
BB
175
567
668
B
BB
[792]

Branca while sojourning in France "freed the womb" of the slave women on their *engenhos*, São Pedro and São João, in Santo Amaro, and continued gradually to manumit all their slaves. In the same year the friars of the Order of São Bento "freed the womb" of their slave women and announced that all their slaves would be free within three years, or by September, 1871.[74]

BB
[204]

The first Bahian abolitionist to raise his voice to "a shout loud enough to be heard throughout the entire country" was Conselheiro Jeronymo Sodré Pereira, a state deputy and professor in the local Faculty of Medicine. In an address to the Bahian *camara* on March 5, 1879, he declared: "We who represent the democratic ideal, we who earnestly desire the liberation of the citizen through the vote and through instruction, ought to proclaim to our fellow-countrymen throughout the land that all Brazilians are citizens, all are free." This speech was favorably reported by several Bahian newspapers, including the *Gazeta de Noticias* and the *Gazeta da Tarde*, which at this time were becoming organs of the abolition movement. Although the ideas they were advancing had been at first considered "antipatriotic, subversive of the social order, and incendiary," they gradually spread.[75]

B
BB
175
567
668
793

The clergy as a group did not support abolition, and many padres who possessed slaves were accused by the abolitionists of "the same cruelty toward the victims, the same outspoken hostility, the same fury toward abolition, the same hypocritical and ridiculous insistence upon the rights of property, the same lack of respect for justice and the true interests of Brazil." Occasionally a priest, like João Manoel,

---

[74] *Ibid.*, pp. 227–28.

[75] *Ibid.*, pp. 18–21.

B
BB
175
567
668
793

became known throughout the country as an opponent of abolition, and, further, in 1791, a bishop of Pernambuco, José Joaquim da Cunha de Azevedo Coutinho, published a book in Lisbon entitled *A analyse sobre a justiça do commercio do resgate dos escravos da costa d'Africa*,[16] in which he upheld slavery as having "existed since the beginning of the world and in the lap of all religions."

B
BB
[797]

Nevertheless, some noted ecclesiastics did from time to time take up the slave cause. Padre Antonio Vieira, although he later became more cautious under "the necessity of furthering the Jesuit determination to free the Indians, even at the expense of the Negroes," delivered a sermon as early as the middle of the seventeenth century in which he said: "The fact that whites dominate blacks is due to force and not to either reason or nature." On another occasion, he said:

> O inhuman traffic in which the merchandise is men! Few masters, many slaves; masters richly dressed, slaves despised and naked; masters banqueting, slaves dying of hunger; masters swimming in gold and silver, slaves loaded down with irons; masters treating their slaves like brutes, slaves in fear and awe of their masters as if they were gods; masters present at a whipping, standing like statues of might and tyranny, slaves prostrate, their hands strapped behind their backs, like debased emblems of servitude.
>
> Peradventure these men are not our brothers?
>
> Were these souls not redeemed with the blood of the same Christ? Are not these bodies born and do they not die like ours? Do they not breathe the same air? Does not the same sky cover them? Are they not warmed by the same sun?[17]

An archbishop of Bahia, the Marquis of Santa Cruz, in an address to the *camara* in 1827, vigorously opposed slav-

---

[16] This book went through two editions and was translated into both French and English.

[17] *Sermões* (15 vols., 1679-1748), Vol. X, Sermon 27.

8
B
1[illegible]3

567 ery.[78] As early as Independence Day, 1851, the Benedictine
668 friar, Francisco da Natividade Carneiro da Cunha, preached
793 a sermon in the Bahian Cathedral in which he urged Bahians
[792] "to complete Brazilian independence by gradually emanci-
8 pating the slaves."[79] Monsenhor Joaquim Pinto de Campos
[527] attacked slavery in sermons as early as 1856, in one of which, preached before the Sociedade Ypiranga, he said: "Humanity is one, and all of its parts have equal rights. The public conscience, which is the voice of God re-echoing in the souls of the people, is always repelled by favoritism in the distribution of liberty."

Canon Rodrigo de Souza Menezes, in the columns of *O Horizonte* as early as 1872, and in a sermon preached in the Cathedral on July 2, 1883, vigorously attacked slavery and advocated its abolition throughout Brazil. Another Bahian canon, Dr. Romualdo Maria de Seixas Barroso, wrote many abolition articles for the newspapers, among them one addressed especially to Bahian women; and in his will, probated in 1886, he declared: "I have always considered it a crime to draw up a contract for the buying and selling of any human being—he who is my own brother and who may be redeemed, as I, by the blood of the Savior of mankind."[80]

The bishop of Olinda, on March 25, 1887, wrote a pastoral letter urging his clergy to free immediately their

---

[78] *Ibid.*, p. 35. The archbishop said: "I have always been persuaded that the word 'slavery' calls up images of all vices and all crimes; and that the word 'liberty' calls out the ideas and the sentiments attendent upon all virtue and all good. Always I have maintained that slavery is a harmful condition which destroys the spirit, weakens the faculties of understanding, and perverts the heart."

8 8
[208]

[79] "Public opinion was aroused against the words of Friar Carneiro. Upon his descending from the pulpit, one of his relatives asked him if he had lost his reason" (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 382-83).

[80] *Ibid.*, pp. 384-88.

B
BB
175
567
668
793

slaves so that "on the next birthday of the Holy Father, Leo XIII, there may be laid next his throne a declaration saying: 'The clergy of Olinda no longer own slaves.' " A similar suggestion was shortly thereafter made to the bishop of São Paulo by several of his priests. On July 29 the archbishop of Bahia issued a pastoral letter in which he referred to slavery as "a cruel injustice practiced on many of our brothers . . . . a blot which stains the Brazilian flag alone among the banners of civilized nations." The archbishop further declared that, while the church had previously feared that abolition would disrupt public order, the consequences of recent manumissions had entirely dispelled this apprehension.

The proposal of the bishop of Olinda was supported by the bishop of Maranhão, who agreed that "one can do nothing which would honor the august head of the great Christian family more than to grant liberty to those who are our brothers and children of our church." The proposal was also supported by the bishop of Rio Grande do Sul, who closed his pastoral letter with the strong declaration that "slavery is a corpse in need of being interred;"[81] and by the bishop of Diamantina, who proposed "a decree written in letters of gold abolishing slavery in Brazil by the thirty-first day of December, 1887." The bishop of Mariana also advocated general abolition, referring to slavery as an obstacle to the spread of "the great principles planted by our Master Jesus Christ" and reminding the priests of his bishopric that

---

[81] *Ibid.*, pp. 513–19. Although the enumeration in accordance with the law of September 28, 1871, listed 99,401 slaves in Rio Grande do Sul, the census which was completed June 12, 1885, gave only 27,242, or less than one-third of those returned fourteen years earlier. The enumeration of March 30, 1887, listed only 8,436 (*ibid.*, p. 520). It appears that attempts to emancipate by entire provinces originated in this province.

B
BB
175
567
668
793

"slavery is extinct in all other countries of America to the shame of Brazil."

BB
175
567
668
747

Beginning about 1862 a Bahian professor of mathematics, the mixed-blood, Dr. Francisco Alvares dos Santos, whose classes were said to be attended by two-thirds of the students of mathematics in the city, began carrying on abolition propaganda, and during the subsequent quarter of a century he each year gave a banquet to former students and invited as a special guest a slave whose liberty had been purchased on that day with funds supplied by a "patriotic battalion" composed of his students and organized in honor of the independence of Brazil. Out of his teaching arose the Sociedade Libertadora Dois de Julho, which freed several slaves.

BB
[204]
BB
[538]

By 1875 the Sociedade Libertadora Sete de Setembro, organized in 1869, had freed approximately five hundred slaves, and twenty-four numbers of a periodical, *O Abolicionista*, had been published. At a bazaar held by the Society in that year, Castro Alves, Bahia's "glorious poet of liberty," addressed a letter to Bahian women in behalf of the slaves, and Barão de Macahubas, resident at the imperial court, sent several gifts. The Society at that time numbered five hundred and twelve members, of whom fifteen were women.[82]

The Sociedade Humanitaria Abolicionista was organized in 1869, and the Sociedade Libertadora Bahiana in 1883.

---

[82] Among the more prominent members were: Frederico Marinho de Araujo, Victor Isaac de Araujo, Lourenço Gomes de Araujo e Silva, Abilio Cezar Borges, Conselheiro José Luiz de Almeida Couto, Dr. Francisco José da Rocha, Conselheiro Manoel Pinto de Souza Dantas, Conselheiro Salustiano Ferreira Santo, Dr. Augusto Guimarães, Dr. Antonio Ferreira Garcez, Bellarmino Barretto, Julio Alves Guimarães, Constancio José dos Santos, Major Antonio de Souza Vieira, Dr. Frederico Augusto da Silva Lisboa, Conselheiro Carneiro da Rocha, and Major Antonio Ferreira de Barros.

175
567
668
747

Four years later the latter changed its name to Sociedade Abolicionista Bahiana. In that time it had purchased the freedom of about fifty slaves, "including those whose liberty was demanded by reason of illegal servitude." The treasurer of the Society was a Negro shoemaker, Manoel Roque, "a man of the people," who carried on abolition propaganda among the free Negroes and "made several converts to the cause."

[204]

Abolitionists in other parts of the province of Bahia were similarly active. In 1884 an emancipation society was organized at Cachoeira, where two "out-spoken abolition newspapers," the *Jornal da Tarde* and *Planeta Venus*, were keeping the slave issue before the public. Another emancipation society, under the leadership of Pedro Alves de São Boaventura, operated at Camisão. Abolition sentiment and activity were also reported from Ilheos, Cannavieiras, Santo Antonio da Barra, and Feira de Sant'Anna, said to be "a strong pro-slave center."

175
567
668
204
[665]

In 1862 a Bahian student published an antislavery article in a local publication, *O Estudante*. In 1869, after the Liberal party had adopted emancipation as a party policy, the *Diario da Bahia* began to support the antislavery cause. On March 20, 1872, five of the six newspapers then printed in the Bahian capital agreed "not to give publicity from this day forth to advertisements of any kind relative to the flight, purchase, sale, or placement of any slave."[81]

---

[81] Signed by Francisco José da Rocha for the *Jornal da Bahia*, Innocencio Marques de Araujo Goes Junior for the *Correio da Bahia*, Manoel Pinto de Souza Dantas for the *Diario da Bahia*, Carvalho Gama for the *Diario de Noticias*, and José Marques de Souza and Aristides Ricardo de Sant'Anna for the *Alabama*. This agreement was renewed nine years later (in 1881), and the resolution was then taken "to urge the adhesion to it of all the press of the Empire." Only the *Gazeta da Bahia* refused to sign (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 276–79).

567 668 In 1872 Dr. Frederico Lisboa advocated in *O Horizonte* "the right of all men to natural liberty" and, in keeping with this sentiment, liberated several slaves which had been presented to him on the occasion of his marriage. Subsequently he bought and freed some thirty Negroes belonging to others. In nine months Bahian abolitionists secured the release of approximately two hundred slaves illegally imported after passage of the law of 1831.[84] To make less difficult the transition from a slave to a free status, the courts appointed lawyers as *curadores* ("guardians") of the freedmen.[85]

175 567 668 204 [538] In 1880 Pamphilo da Santa Cruz founded a newspaper called *Gazeta da Tarde*, in whose first issue he stated a frankly abolitionist program. He was assisted in its publication by the journalist, Raymundo Bizarria, and by Conselheiro Luiz Alvares dos Santos, a professor at the Faculty of Medicine. In 1881, on the anniversary of the death of Castro Alves, "the immortal poet," author of the antislavery *Gonzaga* and *Poema dos escravos*, the public was invited through the columns of the *Diario da Bahia* "eloquently to affirm our irrevocable adhesion to the cause of abolition."

---

[84] For instance, Eduardo Carige demanded the liberation of an African woman whose owner, Antonio Alves Fernandes, had registered her in 1872 as forty years of age. Dr. Amphilophio Botelho Freire de Carvalho, "the first Bahian judge to comply with this law," whose decisions "were widely publicized and attracted the attention of the whole province," freed her on February 10, 1887. One irate master appealed from a decision of Botelho, charging that the judge was incompetent. The Superior Tribunal denied the appeal (see *Diario da Bahia* for March 15, 1887; Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 319–23).

[85] Among Bahian lawyers accepting this charge were: Dr. Affonso de Castro Rebello, Dr. Elpidio de Mesquita, Dr. Arthur de Mello e Mattos, Dr. Mauricio Francisco Ferreira da Silva, Dr. José Heraclides Ferreira, Dr. Francisco Moncorvo de Lima, Dr. Adolpho Carlos Sanches, Dr. Alexandre Galvão, Dr. Severino dos Santos Vieira, and Dr. Izaias Guedes de Mello. Dr. Raymundo Mendes Martins "rendered important services to the cause of the captives" as *curador geral* of orphans (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 324–26).

BB

175

At the ceremony Bahia's most famous citizen, the states- 567
man, jurist, and orator, Ruy Barbosa, read from *Gonzaga:* 668
"No more slaves! No more masters! Liberty to all hands, 204
liberty to all heads," and himself added, "Abolition is an 538
expression of the most inflexible of social necessities." An-
tonio Augusto de Mendonça, one of several Bahian poets
then active in the antislavery cause, wrote and recited a BB
poem dedicated to the Sociedade Libertadora Sete de Setem-
bro. In the following year the *Gazeta da Tarde* inaugurated 175
a series of abolition lectures to be given in the Lyceu de 567
Artes e Officios and invited as the first speaker the well-known 668
abolition orator, José do Patrocinio.[16] In 1885 a pamphlet 204
entitled *A incoherencia da escravidão n'um paiz christão* was [544]
published in Bahia by Antonio Pereira de Araujo. When
the news arrived (June 30, 1887) that the cabinet had se-
cured the dissolution of "the pro-slave" *camara* a celebra-
tion was held at the offices of the *Diario da Bahia*, on the
initiative of the *Libertadora Bahiana* and the *Gazeta da* BB
Tarde.

In 1872 the province of Bahia freed the twenty-two slaves 175
which it owned and had employed as gardeners, laundry 567
women, and grave-diggers, either at the Hospital dos La- 668
zaros or the cemetery of Quintas. In 1880 Joaquim Nabuco B
presented a project to the Pernambuco legislature calling for 175
the extinction of slavery within ten years, and three years 567
later he published a stirring abolition treatise entitled *O* 668
Abolicionismo.[16a] In 1885, and again in 1887, he was elected [214]
federal deputy on an abolition platform. In 1881 the Bahian [666]

---

[16] Other lectures were given by Dr. Aristides Spinola, Dr. José de Oliviera Campos, Paula Ney, Conselheiro Luiz Alvares dos Santos, Ennes de Souza, Salles Barbosa, Elpidio de Mesquita, and Dr. Arthur Ferreira Vianna.

[16a] London, 1883.

BB
175
635
567
652
B
175
567
B
[643]
BB
[671]

In 1881 the Bahian provincial assembly created an emancipation fund "to free slaves in this province."[87] On March 25, 1884, slavery was abolished in the province of Ceará, the culmination of fifteen months of municipal emancipation.[88] Similar action was taken by the provinces of Amazonas and Maranhão later in the same year. In 1885 all Negroes over sixty years of age were liberated by edict of the Brazilian emperor.[89] In 1886

---

[87] Law No. 2146 of May 14, 1881, sponsored by Deputies Marcolino Moura, Alexandre Herculano, Frederico Lisboa, and Virgilio de Carvalho. Articles 2 and 3 read as follows:

> ARTICLE 2.—This Emancipation Fund shall be derived:
>
> SECTION 1. From each and every provincial tax relative to slaves, including the inheritance and legacy stamps.
>
> SEC. 2. From the returns of an annual lottery of 100 contos.
>
> SEC. 3. From the donations of individuals and of philanthropic associations.
>
> SEC. 4. From legacies left or set up for the benefit of the fund.
>
> SEC. 5. From the payment of a tax obligatory for this purpose by every dramatic and musical company which shall play in the Theatro Publico.
>
> ART. 3.—The distribution of this Emancipation Fund shall be in the hands of each *municipio* in accordance with Article 26 of Statute 5135 of the thirteenth of November, 1872.

B

The seventh apportionment from this fund, made by act of Governor Theodoro Machado on May 13, 1886, amounted to 59 contos, 723$244 (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 233).

[527]
[668]

[88] The *Rio News* of April 5, 1884, reported a week's festival being at that time held in Rio in celebration of emancipation in Ceará. Large sums were realized from donations and bazaars, several slaves were liberated, and a movement set on foot to secure complete emancipation in Rio also. On September 28, 1887, there was held at Belem a "redemption celebration" to which flocked "the press, the abolition societies, the Masons, leaders of the city's commercial life, many women, and the people." One hundred and nine *Cartas de Liberdade* were distributed. On the following day, the *Provincia do Pará*, one of the leading abolition journals of Brazil, published an editorial suggesting a *liga redemptora*, whose program would be that of seeking to secure complete emancipation in the Belem *municipio* by the following December 31 (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 548).

B
[671]

[89] The provisions of this law freed slaves from sixty to sixty-two years of age on the condition that they serve three additional years without remuneration. Slaves sixty-three years of age were to serve two additional years; those sixty-four, one additional year.

BB
175
633
567
652

In 1886 the municipal *camara* of Bahia, following the initiative of other Brazilian cities, authorized a *Livro de Ouro* ("Golden Book") in which the names of persons contributing toward the emancipation of slaves in the *municipio* were to be inscribed. On April 19 of the following year a project was presented to the municipal *camara* by its president, Dr. Augusto Guimarães, authorizing the setting-up of a commission to study means of extinguishing slavery throughout the *municipio.*

BB
175
567
633

On the eve of nation-wide abolition, or in 1887, a number of emancipation projects were presented to the Bahian *camara.* Two were presented in the state senate: one by Senator Taunay and one by Senator Dantas, the former setting Christmas, 1889, as the date of final abolition for the province of Bahia, and the latter naming December 31 of the same year. Slaves in various parts of Brazil, "learning that they are men and will one day be citizens," were by this time deserting the plantations.[96] Police and the soldiery often refused to aid in their recapture.

B
175
567
BB
175
567
668

In 1887, "as a significant manifestation of abolition senti-

---

[96] In 1887 Fonseca mentions the "recent flight" en masse of slaves from several *fazendas* in the province of São Paulo. For instance, in Piracicaba, a hundred slaves fled from Barão de Serra Negra. In the *municipio* of Campos fifty slaves fled from the *fazenda* of Becco and, joined by other Negroes who were deserting the *fazenda* of Penha, turned upon the police sent out from Itu to apprehend them and caught, stripped, and beat them. That year the following advertisement appeared in the *Gazeta da Bahia:*

> Fled from the owner whose signature appears below the following slaves: Maria dos Neves, *cabra* [offspring of Negro and mulatto], short, stocky, round faced, with prominent cheek bones, milk-white teeth, straight hair, parted in the middle; speaks very rapidly. Antonio (who sometimes calls himself Maria da Piedade), dark *cabra*, short, fat, with good teeth, and large scars on breast and one arm (these scars are from burns). Was last seen in Rio Vermelho.
>
> Whoever recovers and brings these slaves to my office at Rua do Julião, No. 1, or to No. 125 Ribeira in Itapagipe, will be well rewarded.
>
> Dr. José Alves Cardoso e Silva

(Fonseca, *op. cit.*, pp. 595, 602-3, 161).

BB
175
567
668
BB
[747]

ment," a picture of José Bonifacio was hung in the salon of the Gremio Litterario at Bahia, in the presence of "the principal civil and military authorities, representatives of the press, and several delegations from other organizations." The Sociedade Libertadora Bahiana took advantage of the occasion to present six "Letters of Liberty." As these were being distributed,

> a young slave girl, so covered with rags as to look like an abandoned beggar, forced her way into the assemblage and, falling upon her knees, begged and pleaded for her liberty. The pitiful aspect of this girl, the recently spoken words of Sr. Carige, and, above all, the sentiments evoked in contemplation of the sacrificial heroism of José Bonifacio, produced a profound effect. . . . . A citizen arose and said, "In honor of the memory of José Bonifacio, I contribute one hundred milreis toward the liberation of this woman."

B
BB

175
567
B
[671]

Finally, in 1888, the imperial government at Rio, through a decree signed by Princess Isabel, abolished slavery entirely, freeing the last six hundred thousand Negroes in bondage throughout the country.

B
BB
668
567
175

The extinction of the institution of slavery in Brazil thus came about gradually by means of a progressively increasing and finally irresistible popular movement, aided, it seems, by the decay of the sugar industry,[91] by the arguments of the economists who held that the slave was an expensive workman, by the example of the United States in freeing her slaves (which left Brazil the only slaveholding American nation), and by the "strain for consistency" exerted upon the institution by the philosophy of the French Revolution[92]

---

[91] Silvio Romero, "O Brasil social," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, LXIX (1906), 111.

[92] In 1883 Joaquim Nabuco wrote: "Slavery has now endured in Brazil almost a century after the French Revolution taught the world to know and to love liberty."

B
B B

668:

and the doctrines of Christianity. The normal development 567
of the emancipation process was never checked or seriously 175
hampered by a wave of fear like that which swept over slave
areas in the United States following the Haitian revolution
and the consequent annihilation of Haitian whites and the
slaughter of thousands of mulattoes and blacks.

Resistance to abolition was apparently never strong or
well organized. It was not confined to any one section of the
country but even in slaveholding centers like Bahia was, as B
we have seen, constantly being undermined by local criti- BB
cism. An occasional newspaper "persisted in being a slave [204]
organ" or appeared "timid and acquiescent with reference
to slavery,"[93] but the overwhelming majority of the press
increasingly supported the antislavery cause. BB

It is, however, true that commercial leaders like Ramalho 175
Ortigão, president of the Bahian *Centro* of Commerce and 567
Agriculture, "tenaciously opposed" the abolition movement. 668
Anselmo da Fonseca says that Portuguese immigrants, 563 *
many of whom engaged in trade and commerce, were, with [441]
rare exceptions, "decided partisans of slavery" and not only
became "the greatest and most audacious slave traders of
Bahia" who offered most of the opposition to the cessation
of the slave traffic but also energetically opposed the abolition
of slavery itself.[94] However, the prestige of this group,

---

[93] Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 25.

[94] "The Portuguese cannot comprehend a Brazil without slaves. We hear daily from them, 'The Negro is peculiarly created by nature for the cultivation of sugar'" (*ibid.*, pp. 155–56). The Portuguese are said to have been the principal violators of the law of 1831, several of the more powerful of whom Euzebio de Queiroz felt impelled to deport when, some twenty years after the passage of this law legally abolishing the slave trade, he sought effectively to suppress the traffic. However, immigrant laborers, since they were in competition with slave laborers, ordinarily opposed slavery. See Henry K. Norton, *The Coming of South America* (New York, 1932), pp. 103–4.

175

567 from early colonial times on, seems not to have been very
668 great, and the upheaval which in 1822 culminated in Brazilian
*563 independence seems to have buried most of the vestiges
[522] of Portuguese prestige. Even today the Portuguese are
the constant butt of vaudeville jokes.

175 Many of the free *homens de côr* (men of color), especially
those who possessed slaves, either were indifferent to the
567 slave question or openly opposed abolition.[95] Most of the
668 large plantation owners and their spokesmen in the provincial
249 legislature and national parliament opposed the
464 abolition campaign, and their forces at one time dominated
[635] the Liberal party.[96] However, many of the slaveholders appear
[664] to have increasingly accepted abolition as inevitable
[665] and merely to have asked remuneration for the financial
loss involved. Apprehension that the plantation system
[646] would utterly collapse if free labor were substituted for slave

---

*[563] [95] The abolitionist, Anselmo da Fonseca (*ibid.*, pp. 137, 142-43), complains of the persistent opposition to abolition on the part of *homens de côr*. In 1884, out of thirty candidates for the Bahian *camara*, "the only one who in a published document had the audacity to ask election in the name of slavery" was the *homem de côr*, Conselheiro Domingos Carlos e Silva. In 1887 an *homem de côr* canceled his subscription to the *Diario da Bahia* for its refusal to publish an advertisement regarding a fugitive slave. Fonseca regarded this man as "one of the most intolerant slaveholders in Bahia."

[96] On hearing of the program presented by the imperial cabinet on June 6, 1884, "almost all the leaders of the liberal party in Bahia, the owners of large business and commercial houses, and the sugar aristocracy" lodged a protest in which they declared: "The slave is more than a portion of a private fortune; he is a social institution, a labor supply, a necessity to production, an asset of the national life. Above the immediate interests of planter and merchant . . . . are the permanent . . . . interests of society, the benefits which accrue to thousands of human beings living or yet unborn—the necessities of public order, and the development of national wealth" (Fonseca, *op. cit.*, p. 283).

175
567

668

and that the sudden liberation of large numbers of subjected 249
blacks would subvert public order gradually melted away as 464
the numbers of emancipated Negroes increased and these 563*
freedmen gave evidence of their ability and willingness to
become an orderly part of the free population and to labor
as effectively, if not more effectively, for wages as when
impelled by physical force. 175

The free people of color (who by 1872 largely outnum- 563 *
bered the slaves)[97] were, Southey says, "an industrious and 464
useful part of the population: most of the maize, manioc [241]
and pulse, with which the towns were supplied, was raised [438]
by them upon small pieces of ground, which they rented of
the great proprietors at a low rate."[98] Freedmen were also [427]
employed as laborers on the large estates, where they lived [466]
as squatters on the land of their employers, erecting mud and
palm-leaf huts for their families, and looking to the planter
for protection from any who would do them harm.[99] In the [454]
towns they were employed principally as artisans, porters,
messengers, barbers, street merchants and small shopkeep-

---

[97] Johnston, *op. cit.*, p. 97.

[98] Southey, *op. cit.*, III, 787. Cf. also: "The masters who freed slaves often gave them, with their liberty, a piece of land to insure their subsistence. The Negroes who have inherited these small holdings are to-day (1911) the best element of the black agricultural population" (Pierre Denis, *Brazil*, trans. from the French by Bernard Miall [New York, 1911], p. 322). [423]

[99] Koster writes: "The Negroes in my possession could not perform what ought to be done in proper time; and therefore I collected free laborers for the purpose, and in a short period between thirty and forty men, some of whom brought their families, removed on to the lands of the plantation; and most of them erected hovels of palm-leaves, in which they dwelt; but a few of them were accommodated with huts of mud. . . . . Many of these fellows would have committed almost any crime under the impression that my protection would screen them" (*op. cit.*, I, 295, 297). [342]

BB

*175
563 ers; some of them accumulated considerable sums of money.
464 Occasionally, as we have noted, they owned slaves[100] or in-
vested their savings in the slave trade, sending money, arms,
[454] and trade goods to some convenient individual in Africa to
[457] "get up raids in their old homes or amongst neighboring
EB tribes."[101] In Minas Geraes free black laborers came to own
175 mines like Encardideira and Palacio Velho.[102] In Bahia they
423 maintained their own regiment,[103] fraternal orders, and re-
563 ligious brotherhoods, each limited in membership exclusively
316 to Negroes of pure African descent.[104] Many made sustained
BB efforts to educate their children, and a few even had sons in
175 the priesthood who, since the bishops of Brazil did not confer
701 them, took their orders in São Thomé.[105]

575 But the free Negro, in competition with the European

---

*794
563 [100] Walsh, a visitor to Brazil in the early nineteenth century, writes: "Next came an old free Negro woman, with a young slave of her own sex and color carrying her bundle. . . . . Her young slave was her only property, and she made a good livelihood by hiring her out as a beast of burden, to whoever wanted her, and for whatever purpose" (*op. cit.*, II, 18).

[101] Johnston, *op. cit.*, p. 90.

[102] Gilberto Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos* (São Paulo, 1936), p. 73.

[714] [103] "There are two of these regiments for the province of Pernambuco . . . . distinguished from each other by the names Old Henriques and New Henriques. . . . . I have seen some portion of one of these regiments, in Recife. . . . . They were dressed in white cloth uniforms, turned up with scarlet: and they looked very soldier-like. They were in tolerable discipline. . . . . They acted with an appearance of zeal and the desire of excelling. Those of which I speak formed a finer body of men than any other soldiers which I had an opportunity of seeing in that country. . . . . These men receive no pay, so that their neat appearance on such occasions bespeaks a certain degree of wealth among them" (Koster, *op. cit.*, II, 182-83).

[104] See, in this connection, *Compromisso da Irmandade do Senhor Bom Jesus das Necessidades e Redempção* (Bahia, 1929); Joventino Silvino da Costa, *Relatorio da Sociedade Protectora dos Desvalidos, 1832-1932* (Bahia, 1934).

[105] Affonso de E. Taunay, *Na Bahia de João VI* (Bahia, 1928), p. 173.

B
BB
175
178
563 *

But the free Negro, in competition with the European and his descendants, was faced with a difficult struggle. Even though he might cease to speak Nagô and to scarify his face and body; even though his wife might discard her distinctive African costume, and both no longer identify themselves with African fetish beliefs and practices but give instead allegiance to Catholic forms; nevertheless, the free Negro could not escape the fact that he was sharply differentiated from the ruling class in color, hair texture, and facial characteristics. He could not readily discard a highly visible badge of his former slave status. Wherever he went he would be known, if not for a slave, at least for the descendant of slaves.

B
BB
(567)

B
BB
175
563 *
461

The occupations of the free Negroes, or at least those of their immediate forebears, had been employments commensurate with servile status and had ordinarily consisted in hard, sordid, manual labor. The common saying, "Trabalho é para cachorro e negro" ("Work [i.e., hard manual labor] is for Negroes and dogs"), reflects this fact. To work with one's hands has been in Brazil long considered debasing for a white man. As Monteiro has said, "Even if in Portugal he had been a servant with a hoe in his hands, upon setting his foot upon Brazilian soil, he cared not to work."[106] That artisan labor was not a white man's job was long a tradition in Brazil.[107] To be a white was identical with being noble,[108] and "there was a common root of plebeian origin: it was African descent."[109] Government employ was for a long time

---

[106] Vahia Monteiro, quoted by F. J. Oliveira Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro* (2d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 153.

[107] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 105.

[108] Vianna, *Populações meridionaes do Brasil* (3d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 139.

[109] "A côr significava nobreza; havia uma comum origem plebéia—o tronco africano" (Calmon, *op. cit.*, I, 24).

B
BB
175
*563
461
[464]
B
BB
175
*563
582
[671]

Government employ was for a long time denied to the black.[110] In colonial Brazil marriage into upper-class white families was zealously restricted to individuals of pure European descent,[111] and at least one case is on record of an Indian being seriously rebuked for having married a Negro woman.[112]

---

[110] There was "a separate justice" in colonial Brazil for cases relating to "Indians, mulattoes, and Negroes" (Vianna, *Populações meridionaes do Brasil*, p. 140).

B
[184]

[111] "It was this preoccupation with purity of lineage and white blood in their prospective sons-in-law which, in those provinces whose development was more irregular, like that of Minas, made the problem of marriage so difficult. In Pernambuco and São Paulo the problem was resolved by marrying cousins with cousins: a custom which gradually made of the early families almost a single strain" (Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 152).

[112] The eighth vice-*rei*, Marques de Lavradio, in an order dated August 6, 1771, removed an Indian from the post of *capitão-mor* for having married a Negro woman and, as the order said, "thus tarnished your blood and shown yourself unworthy of office" (Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* [2d ed.; Rio, 1936], p. 290).

CHAPTER III B BB

CASA GRANDE AND *SENZALA*[1] 175

567

EVEN as late as the second quarter of the nineteenth [191]
century a visitor to Brazil wrote: "Again and again,
while travelling in the interior, I have seen troops
of new slaves of both sexes, who could not speak a single
word of Portuguese, varying from twenty to one hundred
individuals, marched inland for sale, or already belonging to
proprietors of plantations."[2] These newly imported Africans BB
were known as *negros novos*, or "new Negroes."[3]

Since the major portion of African importations into 175
Bahia came from contiguous territory in Africa, the Negroes 567
ordinarily brought with them closely related dialects and, 197
consequently, could more easily communicate among them- BB
selves in African tongues. Gradually there came into gen- 175
eral use, especially among the influential semi-independent 197
negros de ganho, an African language known as Nagô,[4] which [177]
by facilitating intercommunication intensified the Negroes' [563]*
moral isolation from the white world and retarded the whole
acculturation process. Nagô continued for a long time to B

---

[1] The "Big House" and the "slave quarters."

[2] George Gardner, *Travels in the Interior of Brazil, 1836–1841* (London, 1849), p. 12. [113]

[3] Nina Rodrigues, *Os africanos no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1932), p. 187. BB

[4] "Like the French, we in Bahia call Nagôs all Negroes from the Slave Coast who speak the Yoruba language. Of this group we have received slaves from all the smaller subdivisions, from Oyó the capital of Yoruba, from Ilorin, Ige-sha, Ibadan, Ifé, Iebú, Egba, Lagos, etc." (*ibid.*, p. 157). [161]

175
197 be the *lingua geral*, or general Negro language.[5] The ritual
[794] of the more important fetish-cult centers was, and still is,
carried on in this language. Inscriptions in Nagô were oc-
[796] casionally to be seen not only on cult buildings but al-
so in small commercial establishments owned and oper-
[212] ated by Negroes, like the meat stall on the Baixa dos
[444] Sapateiros over whose entrance Nina Rodrigues in 1895
noted the inscription "Kosi obà Kan afi Olorun."[6] So im-
[162] portant did Nagô become, and so widespread its use that,
[165] although Nina Rodrigues early in the twentieth century
estimated that there were only approximately five hundred
Africans still living in the city and they were at that time
dying at the rate of a hundred and fifty to two hundred a
year,[7] one still today, more than three decades later, finds

---

[5] Nina Rodrigues, intimately acquainted for many years with Bahian Negroes, commends the accuracy of the Visconde de Porto Seguro when he says, "The best known Negroes in Brazil were those coming from the *Costa da Mina*, whence arrived the greater portion of those imported into Bahia; so that in this city many slaves learned little Portuguese but instead communicated among themselves in Nagô." About 1900 he himself wrote: "The Nagô dialect is commonly spoken in Bahia by almost all the old Africans from the various tribes and by a great number of creoles and mulattoes" (*op. cit.*, p. 197).

[6] Rodrigues translates the phrase: "There is no God but Olorun" (principal deity of the Nagô cult). A photograph of the entrance to the shop showing this inscription may be found in *ibid.*, opp. p. 202.

[7] *Ibid.*, p. 154. In the seven years from 1896 to 1902, 1,282 Africans died at Bahia. The distribution was as follows:

Year	Total	Male	Female
1896	110	55	55
1897	258	156	102
1898	200	96	104
1899	200	110	90
1900	151	87	64
1901	152	74	78
1902	202	136	66
Total	1,282	714	568

175

197

Nagô at times spoken in Bahia and an occasional individual [162]
whose command of this language is comparable to his com- [165]
mand of Portuguese.

The nature of Negro settlement at Bahia favored to a 175
considerable extent the preservation of African cultural 567
forms. Tribal units were not deliberately broken up, as in 178
Jamaica and the United States, and the Negro was thereby
able to preserve and to transmit to his children a considerable
portion of his African heritage. Even on the plantations
the distribution of newly imported Africans among the old-established
Negroes seems not to have occurred.[8] The con- 175
centration in the city of Bahia over a long period of time of 361
large numbers of semi-independent *negros de ganho*, around 178
whom there gradually accumulated a considerable number 563*
of relatively unassimilated free Negroes, also favored the
persistence of African cultural elements.

It is likely that Nagô was not maintained in a pure 175
form but came to be a patois containing numerous ele- 197
ments from other African dialects as well as from Portu-
guese. A Catholic missionary, Padre Coquard, visiting [797]
Bahia in 1899 to solicit funds, spoke to the colored population
in Nagô. But the sermon, preached in the ancient
church of Sé, was wholly ineffective.[9]

Other African languages were spoken in Bahia.[10] Rodrigues believed that Gêge (or Ewe) was used throughout the eighteenth century and until at least the middle of the nine-

---

[8] Henry Koster, *Travels in Brasil, 1809 to 1815* (2 vols.; Philadelphia, 1817), I, 229 n.

[9] Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, pp. 200–201. Perhaps another reason for this ineffectiveness was that the Negroes who were most able to understand Nagô were unassimilated Africans who, out of loyalty to the religion of their fathers, deliberately absented themselves from this ceremony of the Catholic church.

[10] *Ibid.*, pp. 197–230.

175
197 teenth. Tapa and Haussá were spoken during the entire nineteenth century, and the latter perhaps long before 1800. Although the Haussás were relatively few in number, their influence was considerable. The slave revolts of the early nineteenth century were, as we have seen, led by this reputedly "most intellectual element" among the imported Africans, many of whom could read and write Arabic characters. Kanúri, spoken in Bahia by the Bornús, and Grúnce, the tongue used by the slaves known as Gallinhas, are included, along with Haussá, Gêge, and Tapa, in the limited vocabularies which Rodrigues collected from Bahian Negroes near the beginning of the twentieth century.[11] Tshi (or Odji), Gá (or Acrá),[12] and Mandê (or Mandinga) were also employed to a limited extent.

175
178
[291] [854] [262] As late as 1900, Negro laborers in Bahia continued to wear "white vestments of coarse cotton cloth," which reminded Rodrigues of "the Nagô *camisús*."[13] The *Bahiana* costume,[14] of partial African origin, was extensively used by the Negro women. It was also customary for them to carry their babies bound to the back with a large cloth. African dishes, in the preparation of which *azeite de dendê* (oil of the *dendê* palm) and *pimenta da costa* (pepper from the West Coast) prominently figured, formed a considerable portion of the Negro diet.

[533] [534] [794] At that time, also, African music might be frequently heard, particularly in the ceremonies of the *candomblé*. African musical instruments, like the *atabaque*, the *agê*, the *canzá*, the *marimba*, the *agôgô*, the *caxixi*, and the *xáque-xáque*[15] were commonly employed. The fetish cult drew allegiance from numerous and zealous devotees.

---

[11] *Ibid.*, pp. 217–21.

[12] Spoken in Bahia by the Ashantis.

[13] *Op. cit.*, p. 181.

[14] The *Bahiana* costume is described in detail in chap. ix.

[15] These instruments are described in chap. ix.

175

giance from numerous and zealous devotees. African dances 796
still invaded the popular festivals of the Europeans to such 535
an extent that vigorous protests on the part of the white 571
citizenry appeared in the newspapers.[16] Numerous images 177
employed in the fetish worship were imported from Africa,
and others were made by Negro sculptors in Bahia. 175

One occasionally encountered Negroes who in Africa had 778
been chiefs or other dignitaries of considerable power and in- 794
fluence. Although in Brazil they shared the fortunes of a 178
slave with their former subjects, they nevertheless often re- 175
ceived allegiance and great reverence from them. On a 554
chance meeting in the street these personages were, we are 567
told, "saluted respectfully, their hands kissed, and a bless-
ing requested of them." Even their masters were reported
to have paid them, in several cases, considerable respect.

Slaves who were in close contact with their masters, 175
especially the house servants, soon became, by the very 191
necessities of the situation, at least to some extent bilingual. 567
And their offspring, reared in close contact with the children 177
of their masters, acquired little, if any, African vocabulary and came almost exclusively to speak Portuguese. Thus, about 1800, Koster wrote from Pernambuco, "Portuguese

---

[16] In the *Jornal de Noticias* for February 12, 1901, a white citizen wrote: "I wish to protest against the way in which this great civilised festival [Carnival] is being Africanized." Three days later the following was published: "These infamous Africanised groups *de canzás* and *buzios* which, far from adding to the brilliance of our Carnival festival, bring shame upon the name of Bahia . . . : have since yesterday been keeping up their infernal tumult." Immediately preceding the opening of Carnival the following year there appeared in the *Jornal de Noticias* (February 5, 1902) the following note: "If during these former Carnival festivals when the popular enthusiasm has been greatly aroused by the passage of the victorious floats . . . . these groups of *Africanos* have been repugnant, what will the Carnival of 1902 turn out to be, unless the police take effective measures to prevent our streets from looking like *terreiros* where fetish practices reign amid a retinue of *ogans* and their *canzás* and tambourines?" (Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, pp. 236–38). [541]

BB
175
177

191
567

. . . . is spoken by all the slaves; and their own dialects are allowed to lie dormant until they are by many . . . . quite forgotten."[17] With the acquisition of the master's language went quite naturally other European habits and customs, and the group of assimilated Negroes, known as *ladinos*, grew in numbers relatively rapidly.

BB
175
567
571

Although the hardships incidental to a plantation system continued, the circumstances under which this gradual assimilation went on were ordinarily those imposed by a mild form of slavery in which the natural and continuous growth of intimate personal relations tended to further humanize the institution and to modify its formal and legal character to such an extent that the widely traveled Richard Burton, enamored as he was of the customs of the East, could in the middle of the nineteenth century say, "Nowhere, even in oriental countries, has the 'bitter draught' so little of gall in it."[18]

B
BB
175
565
567
571

Symbolic of the intimate character of these personal relations is a custom recorded in detail and with some sense of the humor of the situation by the able French artist Debret.[19] The head of a Brazilian household is depicted setting out with his family, all in gala attire, for a customary Sunday promenade. The entire group is in single file, the two

---

[17] *Op. cit.*, p. 100.

[18] Sir Richard F. Burton, *Explorations of the Highlands of the Brazil* (2 vols.; London, 1869), I, 270.

[19] Invited to Brazil at the request of the Brazilian emperor, Debret subsequently published three volumes of drawings and comment which together furnish a highly illuminating record of the life of Rio de Janeiro in the early part of the nineteenth century (see J. B. Debret, *Voyage pittoresque et historique au Brésil, 1816–1831* [3 vols.; Paris, 1835]). A similar record was made by another competent artist, Maurice Rugendas. See his *Voyage pittoresque dans le Brésil*, trans. from the German by de Colbery (3 vols.; Paris, 1835).

B
BB

daughters immediately behind the father, then the mother, followed by her mulatto *femme de chambre*, next the family *ama*, or Negro nurse, and the latter's female assistant, then the father's Negro body servant, and last a young slave in training for domestic service.[30] On such occasions it was a matter of considerable pride to dress the slaves as well as the family's station would permit. As late as 1852 a visitor to Rio recorded:

175
565
567
571
[291]

B

> Though less generally the custom than formerly, it is still the habit of some of the *bourgeosie* . . . . at least on Sundays and great holidays, to promenade to and from church, by whole families, parents and children, from adults to infants, with a retinue of servants in their best dresses . . . . bringing up the rear, and, whether male or female, ... usually as elaborately, if not as expensively, dressed as the rest of the family; and often, in the case of the women, with an equal display of laces, muslins, and showy jewelry.[31]

175
565
567
291

B
BB

In the cities domestic slaves ordinarily lived in the same houses as their masters, occupying the lower floor; or, where the buildings were only of one story, "a sort of cellar" underneath.[32] Since the mistress of the household and her daughters lived a very secluded life in the interior of the home,[33] they were in almost constant contact with domestic slaves and the slave's children. Debret has sketched[34] one such intimate scene in which two Negro women are at work,

175
369
567
571

---

[30] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, Pl. 5 ("Un Employé du gouvernement sortant de chez lui avec sa famille").

[31] C. S. Stewart, *Brasil and La Plata* (New York, 1856), p. 295.

[32] Maria Graham, *Journal of a Voyage to Brasil, 1821–1823* (London, 1824), p. 145.

[33] Until recent years, women from the upper classes in Bahia were rarely seen on the public thoroughfares and then only in the company of a male escort.

BB
[565]
[834]

[34] Debret, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, Pl. 6 ("Une dame brésilienne dans son intérieur") and p. 33.

B
BB
175
369
567
571.

EB
175
567
571

EB
[853]
B
BB
567
571
175.

seated on the floor at the feet of their mistress and her daughter, while two little Negro babies play near by.[25] Koster wrote of an estate near Recife that the "Great House" was full of young Negro children. "They were quite naked, and played with each other, and with some large dogs which were lying at full length upon the floor. These ebon cupids were plainly great favorites, and seemed to employ the greater part of the thoughts of the good ladies, the youngest of whom was on the other side of fifty; and even the priest laughed at their gambols."[26] Visiting in the interior of Rio de Janeiro province in 1823, Maria Graham noted that "the female in-door slaves . . . . have been mostly . . . . brought up in their mistress' house." She saw "children of all ages and colors running about, who seemed to be as tenderly treated as if they had been of the family," and commented that, under these conditions, slavery was "more like that of the patriarchal times, where the purchased servant became to all intents one of the family."[27] "How many times," writes Lacerda, "have we not seen masters who did not hesitate to bring their little mulatto slaves to the family table?"[28] Relations within these households became so intimate that, as sometimes also occurred in our South, white women took to their breasts colored babies whose mothers had died in childbirth.[29]

In the home, on the plantation, along the roads of the

---

[25] Debret writes (*ibid.*, p. 39): "A Rio de Janeiro et dans toutes les autres villes du Brésil, il est d'usage, pendant le tête-à-tête d'un *diner marital*, que le mari s'occupe silencieusement de ses affaires, et que la *femme* s'amuse de ses *petits* négrillons, qui remplacent la famille presque éteinte des petits chiens carlins en Europe."

[26] *Op. cit.*, pp. 258–59.

[27] *Op. cit.*, pp. 279–80.

[28] Jean Baptiste de Lacerda, "The *Metis*, or Half-breeds, of Brazil," *Papers on Inter-racial Problems*, ed. G. Spiller (London, 1911), p. 379.

[29] Gilberto Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936), p. 327.

B
BB
567
571
175

rural areas, or in the streets of the cities, on the hunt, at parties, or at church, black and white were constantly to be seen in each other's company. And since human beings, wherever they come into close and uninterrupted contact upon an intimate personal basis, sooner or later tend to lay personal claims upon one another, it is not surprising to find that ties of enduring sentiment arose, which tended gradually to break down the formal barriers between the races and to modify the nature of slavery.

B
BB
171
567
175

It is, of course, probably true that the Mohammedan conception of the slave exercised considerable influence over the original form of African slavery in Portugal itself. The Arabian prophet, it is said, while unable to do away with an ancient institution, "did his utmost to soften the rigors of slavery." After conceding to his importuning followers that "God hath ordained" the slave institution, Mohammed added: "Therefore, him whom God hath ordained to be the slave of his brother, his brother must give him of the food which he eateth himself, and of the clothes wherewith he clotheth himself, and not order him to do anything beyond his power. . . . . . A man who ill-treats his slave will not enter into Paradise." Thus

> there is no more commendable action in Mohammedan morals than to free slaves, and such enfranchisement is enjoined by the Prophet especially as an atonement for an undeserved blow or other injustice. In Andalusia, the slaves upon the estates that had passed . . . . into the possession of Moslems were almost in the position of small farmers; their Mohammedan masters, whose trade was war, and who despised heartily such menial occupations as tilling the soil, left them free to cultivate the land as they pleased, and only insisted on a fair return of products.[19]

B
BB
[113]

---

[19] Stanley Lane-Poole, *The Story of the Moors in Spain* (New York and London, 1886), p. 48. Cf. also: "The Mohammedan slave was rarely

BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
567
175

Mild though its original form may have been, slavery in Brazil was not, as we have already seen, without at least occasional evidences of brutality. The fact is that slavery in Brazil was *both* mild *and* severe. But as an institution continuing over centuries it became more and more mild. Cases of brutality ordinarily occurred under conditions of absentee ownership or in fear of slave insurrection, or arose in dealing with recalcitrant and unsubjected individuals, many of them at the hands of mixed-blood or Negro overseers who in this way unconsciously compensated for otherwise limited social effectiveness.[31] Moreover, the relatively few cases which did occur were so ably used by such prominent political and intellectual leaders as Ruy Barbosa and Joaquim Nabuco that they have probably left behind in the Brazilian mind of today an exaggerated notion of the cruelties of slavery. The important point to note is that, under circumstances of intimate, personal contact, the institution of slavery, with its occasional cases of harsh treatment, gradually lost its character as a political, and assumed that of a patriarchal and familial, institution.

B
BB
567
571
175

Obviously, there is inherent in slavery an economic consideration which has little regard for the interests of the slave himself. But wherever human beings live together in close proximity for any period of time there also tend to grow up *personal relations* which humanize whatever formal institutions have been set up. The opportunities in Brazil

B
BB
[113]
[567]
[175]
[171]

---

abused. . . . . His acceptance of the faith of Islam rendered his manumission easy. No stigma attached to his (subsequent) condition" (S. P. Scott, *History of the Moorish Empire in Europe* [Philadelphia, 1904], p. 660.

[31] Koster, reflecting over the fact that mulattoes, especially those who had formerly been slaves, "make bad masters," concluded that "the change of situation would lead to the same consequences in any race of human beings" (*op. cit.*, II, 177–78).

E
tB

567
571
357
175

The opportunities in Brazil for these relations to develop, particularly in the case of domestic servants, were extensive. Cooper states a fact long characteristic of the upper classes in Brazil when he says: "As in the East, the houses are . . . . filled with . . . . servants, and these servants partake of the character of their Eastern prototypes in their . . . . willingness to perform the many small and menial acts of personal service which the Brazilian requires, but which would hardly be expected of servants in the United States."[32]

B
BB

567
571
576
175

Symbolic of the intimate nature of these relations was the common form of etiquette which grew up and became customary between Brazilian master and slave. It is said to have been a practice observed in all well-regulated families that slaves, "of both sexes and of every age," requested each morning and evening a blessing from their master. According to Stewart, the words used in the middle of the nineteenth century were, "I beseech your blessing [or "Grant me a blessing"], in the name of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ!" To which the master replied, "Jesus Christ bless you forever!"[33] As João Ribeiro has aptly said, "Agrupavam-se em familias, senão no sentido da lei, ao menos da religião."[34]

Debret, who spent several months at Rio in the early part of the same century, says[35] that it was there customary for

---

[32] Clayton S. Cooper, *The Brazilians and Their Country* (New York, 1917), pp. 61-62. Cf. also Gilberto Freyre, "Social Life in Brazil in the Middle of the Nineteenth Century," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, V, No. 4 (November, 1922), 607.

[33] *Op. cit.*, p. 408.

[34] "They were united into families, if not by law, at least by religion."

[35] *Op. cit.*, III, 130. Cf. also the account of Maria Graham regarding a *fazenda* in the province of Rio de Janeiro: "I attended the weekly muster of all the Negroes of the *fazenda;* clean shirts and trousers were given to the

B
BB
567
571
576
175

slaves, on repeating the evening Ave Maria, to present themselves before the master with a "Boa noite, meu senhor,"[16] in reply to which, as a sign of approbation, the master made a simple movement of the head. It was also customary for a Negro who by chance met a white acquaintance on a public thoroughfare to bow his head, extend his right hand, half-opened, and to request a blessing, to which the white replied, "Deus te faça santo,"[17] or simply "Viva!"

B
BB
[171]

These forms of etiquette, together with their religious implications, although they became in time highly conventionalized and occasionally were reduced to "the shortest possible abbreviation" and repeated with "all manner of intonations of voice and every mood of humor,"[18] still symbolized the recognition on the part of the master of a common human bond with his slaves. "I can call to mind," writes Codman, "many touching incidents of the kind feelings of masters and servants towards each other."[19]

B
BB
175
571
567

Relationships of this character were undoubtedly advantageous to the Negro, not only during his period of subjection as a slave but also after his enfranchisement. Koster says of Brazilian neighbors in Pernambuco who possessed a considerable number of slaves:

> These excellent women and the good priest [intend] eventually to emancipate all of them; and that they may be prepared for the change, several of the men have been brought up as mechanics of different

---

men, and shifts and shirts to the women, of very coarse white cotton. Each, as he or she came in, kissed a hand, and then bowed to Mr. P. saying either, 'Father, give me blessing,' or 'The names of Jesus and Mary be praised!' and were answered accordingly, either 'Bless you,' or 'Be they praised!' This is the custom in old establishments: it is repeated morning and evening, and seems to acknowledge a kind of relationship between master and slave" (*op. cit.*, p. 196).

[16] "Good night, my master."

[17] "God make thee a saint."

[18] Stewart, *op. cit.*, p. 408.

[19] John Codman, *Ten Months in Brazil* (Boston, 1867), p. 201.

B
BB
175
571
567

descriptions; and the women have been taught needle-work, embroidery, and all branches of culinary knowledge.[40]

In 1822 an observer in Rio noted:

B
175
571
567
643

> When the Emperor had received the public bodies, he came and led the Empress into the great receiving room, and there, both of them standing on the upper step of the throne, had their hands kissed by naval, military and civil officers, and private citizens. . . . . It was curious, but it pleased me, to see some Negro officers take the small white hand of the Empress in their clumsy black hands, and apply their pouting African lips to so delicate a skin; but they looked up to *Nosso Imperador* (Our Emperor), and to her, with a reverence that seemed to me a promise of faith *from* them, a bond of kindness *to* them.[41]

B
BB
175
567
178
641

"There is evidently," commented another visitor, "a sincere wish to make the liberated slave a useful citizen, if possible."[42]

Custom came gradually to grant the slave, as Burton has pointed out, many of the rights of a freeman:

> He may educate himself, and he is urged to do so. He is regularly catechised, and in all large plantations there is a daily religious service. If assailed in life or limb he may defend himself against his master, or any white man, and an over-harsh proprietor or overseer always runs considerable risk of not dying in bed. He is legally married, and the chastity of his wife is defended against his owner. He has little fear of being separated from his family: the humane instincts and the religious tenets of the people are strongly opposed to this act of barbarity. He has every chance of becoming a free man: manumission is held to be a Catholic duty and priestly communities are ashamed of holding slaves. . . . .[43]

---

[40] *Op. cit.*, I, 258: "The owners said that all their own immediate relations were rich; . . . . and that therefore these their children had no right to work for any one else."

[41] Graham, *op. cit.*, p. 319.

[42] Codman, *op. cit.*, p. 203.

[43] *Op. cit.*, pp. 271-72. Some cases undoubtedly occurred in which the master refused to manumit a slave upon his presenting the cost price, but these were probably rare. Koster (*op. cit.*, I, 192-94) says that, although

B
BB
175
567
[527]
[311]
[671]
[428]

The two days in seven which according to custom the master allotted the slave for the cultivation of a plot of land[44] was as early as 1700 sanctioned in law.[45] His right in property could be transferred to his children.[46] He could

---

"a great deal depends upon the inclinations of the master, he will, however, be very careful in refusing to manumit, owing to the well-known opinion of every priest in favor of this regulation, to the feelings of the individuals of his own class in society, and to those of the lower orders of people; and likewise he will be afraid of losing his slave. He may escape with his money; and the master will then run much risk of never seeing him again, particularly if the individual is a creole slave. . . . . The master might indeed deprive the slave of the fruits of his labor, but this is never thought of; because the slave preserves his money in a secret place, or he has entrusted it to some person upon whom he can depend, and would suffer any punishment rather than disclose the spot in which his wealth lies concealed."

[44] "This day [Sunday] . . . . is the Negroes' own; after morning mass they are free to do their own will; and then most of them run to the hill to gather their coffee or maize, or prepare the ground for these or vegetables. They were just beginning to return from the wood, each with his . . . . basket laden with something of his own, something in which the master had no share; and again and again as they passed me, and displayed with glistening eye the little treasure, I blessed the Sabbath, the day of freedom to the slave" (Graham, *op. cit.*, p. 288).

[45] João Ribeiro, *Historia do Brasil* (3d rev. ed.; Rio, 1909), p. 255.

[46] However, if the slave died childless, his property reverted to the master. Note the following account given by Maria Graham regarding a slave on an estate in the province of Rio: "He was a mulatto boatman, the most trusty servant on the estate, and rich, because he is industrious enough to have earried a good deal of private property, besides doing his duty to his master. In his youth, and he is not now old, he had become attached to a creole woman, born, like him on the estate; but he did not marry her until he had earned money enough to purchase her, in order that their children, if they had any, might be born free. Since that time, he has become rich enough to purchase himself, even at the high price which such a slave might fetch; but his master will not sell him his freedom, his services being too valuable to lose, notwithstanding his promise to remain on the estate and work. Unfortunately, these people have no children; therefore on their death their property, now considerable, will revert to the master" (*op. cit.*, pp. 197-98).

B
BB
175
567
[551]
8
8 8
[625]
[692]

He could take his master's name.[47] Slaves who desired to change masters had the right to request transfer, and the master was expected to acquiesce.[48] Intercession in behalf of a fugitive slave, or even of one about to be punished for some other offense, is said seldom to have been in vain.[49] The master guilty of inhuman treatment toward his slave was liable to the police or tribunals.[50] Some masters preferred to have

---

B
8B
[425]

[47] Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 256; cf. also Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 327: "Hence, the many Cavalcantis, Albuquerques, Mellos, Mouras, Wanderleys, Lins, Carneiro Leãos, etc., who possess none of the illustrious blood which their names imply."

[48] Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 256. Koster (*op. cit.*, I, 194) records that "for this purpose a note is given, declaring that the bearer has leave to enter into the service of any one, upon the price which the master demands being paid by the purchaser. With this the slave applies to any individual or property whom he may wish to serve; owing to having heard a good report of his character toward his slaves, or from any other cause. This is a frequent practice." The following interesting case was observed: "A Negro woman applied to a planter to be purchased; for which purpose she had brought a note from her master. She was accepted; and a bargain was concluded between the two persons. However, the day after she had taken up her abode upon the estate of her new master, she came to him, and falling down upon her knees, said that she had a fellow-slave who wished likewise to serve him; and she begged him to purchase her companion. The new master spoke to the owner of the slave in question of the subject; but he refused to sell him, and the matter rested in this manner. But on the third day, he received a visit from the owner, offering the slave for sale, adding, that the man had refused to work, and had threatened to hang himself; and as he was a Gabão Negro (noted for the resolute manner which, on occasion, they committed suicide), he much feared that he might put his threat into execution. The price was soon fixed, and on the following morning the man made his appearance. He proved to be a most excellent slave" (*ibid.*, p. 203 n.).

[49] Codman, *op. cit.*, p. 201. Cf. also: "Costumes belissimos instituem-se entre os senhores; como o de *apadrinhar* os remissos ou fugitivos, o que impede o castigo, e nunhum senhor viola" (Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 255).

[50] J. B. von Spix and C. F. von Martius, *Travels in Brasil, 1817–1820*, trans. H. E. Lloyd (2 vols.; London, 1824), I, 179.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
175
567
681

B
BB
175
567
[465]
[276]
[743]
[855]
[887]

Some masters preferred to have their slaves, on the payment of a small sum, punished by the civil authorities.[51] Gardner remarked that "many of the crimes for which only a few lashes are awarded, are of such a nature that in England would bring upon the perpetrator either death or transportation."[52]

It was customary each week to grant slaves, in addition to their regular food, an allowance of tobacco.[53] On the large estates certain hospital facilities,[54] and nurseries for Negro children were maintained.[55] Accounts of white mistresses who themselves attended to the sick among their slaves are numerous.[56] The *amas* (nurses) were often "emancipated as soon as their work was over, and nearly always continued to live in freedom under the same roof with their masters and to have various privileges."[57] "The aged Negroes were only employed in light occupations; during the remainder of their time they chatted with the master's young children, telling

---

[51] Gardner, *op. cit.*, p. 14.

[52] *Ibid.*

[53] Prince Adalbert, *Travels of Prince Adalbert of Prussia*, trans. from *Aus meinem Tagebuche, 1842–1843* (Berlin, 1847), by Robert H. Schomburgk and John Edward Taylor (2 vols.; London, 1849), II, 37. Prince Adalbert noted on the coffee plantation Aldea, near Novo Friburgo, that "every evening, when their work is done, the slaves light fires in the rooms set apart for them, around which they sit for hours, even after the severest day's work, all talking and smoking, women as well as men."

[54] *Ibid.*, p. 36. "In the hospital, the hall and rooms for the two sexes were separated. A Negro woman was lying on a mat, with her little 'negrinho' at her breast, to which she had given birth only the night before. 'In a few days she will be able to resume work,' said the Doctor to Count Bismarck. In the men's room, there were four or five patients, suffering from accidents of various kinds" (coffee plantation Aldea, near Novo Friburgo).

[55] C. C. Andrews, *Brazil, Its Condition and Prospects* (2d ed.; New York, 1889), p. 164.

[56] Note, e.g., Gardner, *op. cit.*, p. 14.

[57] Lacerda, *op. cit.*, p. 379.

B
BB
175
567

them odd stories which were calculated to strike their imagination."[58]

[887]
[851]
[585]

Public opinion expected of masters the acceptance of an offer made to manumit an infant on the occasion of his baptism.[59] It also became customary, when marriages were being solemnized in the master's family, to free one or two favorite slaves.[60]

B
BB
[79]
[671]
[426]

Masters frequently declined the money proffered by a Negro for his purchase and granted his freedom without payment.[61] Slaves of the religious orders, it is said, considered themselves to belong to the saints themselves and were never sold.[62] The law adopted in 1809 to protect the property of sugar planters against attachment for debt also provided that slaves need not be sold separately from an estate to satisfy a creditor's claims. Thus the master could not be forced to dispose of his slaves, unless the debt amounted to the value of the entire estate; and, as Koster has pointed out,[63] the slave in this way was advanced, in some degree at least, toward the condition of a serf.

---

[58] *Ibid.*

B
BB
[435]

[59] "Another custom which was advantageous to the slave was that of *alforrias na pia*, which was accomplished with the insignificant amount of 5 to 50 milreis and never was refused; this custom became very common, especially when the child had a light skin" (Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 255). Koster gives the price in Pernambuco early in the nineteenth century as £5 and says that "in this manner, a considerable number of persons are set at liberty; for the smallness of the price enables many freemen who have had connections with female slaves to manumit their offspring; and instances occur of the sponsors performing this . . . . act. Not infrequently female slaves apply to persons of consideration to become sponsors to their children, in the hope that the pride of these will be too great to allow of their godchildren remaining in slavery" (*op. cit.*, I, 195–96).

B
BB
[608]

[60] Frank Bennett, *Forty Years in Brasil* (London, 1914), p. 111.

[61] Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 256. [62] *Ibid.* [63] *Op. cit.*, I, 229 n.

B
BB
175
567

In the light of these customs which gradually grew up and ameliorated the lot of the bondsman, it is not surprising that neither Brazil nor the mother-country ever felt it necessary to adopt a "Black Code." The Englishman Dent says "I had certainly opportunity of seeing something of the treatment of slaves, being thirteen months in the country; but I never came across any other than considerate kindness from master to slave, sometimes even far greater benevolence and consideration than is exercised towards servants in our own country."[64] Dent mentions an old Negro woman who "had received her liberty sometime ago, but seemed to be much attached to the family and never to have thought of leaving them."[65] Numerous other visitors to Brazil remark that the slaves appeared to be treated with kindness, to be well cared for, and happy. In 1821 Mathison noted that Negroes on an estate near Rio "showed by their cheerful looks and bodily condition that they were well taken care of."[66] "He who has had occasion to observe the happy songs and dances that are sung and danced after sunset by great groups of Negroes in the streets of Bahia," wrote the German scientists, Spix and Martius, "can with difficulty be convinced that these are the same slaves which one had thought, according to the exaggerated accounts of certain writers, had been pulled down to an animal existence."[67]

B
[533]
[535]

---

[64] Hastings Charles Dent, *A Year in Brazil* (London, 1886), p. 285. Compare the remarks of another English traveler, Bennett (*op. cit.*, p. 10): "I want to say that, although some slaves may have been (and undoubtedly were) badly treated, a great many of them were better off than some freeborn people here in England in the present day."

[65] *Op. cit.*, p. 120.

[66] Gilbert Farquhar Mathison, *Narrative of a Visit to Brazil, Chile, Peru, and the Sandwich Islands, 1821–1822* (London, 1825), pp. 93, 121.

[67] Spix and Martius, *op. cit.*, p. 90.

B
BB
175
567

Wells, journeying three thousand miles through the interior of Brazil a few years before abolition, thought that "many a poor laborer at home [in the United States] would enjoy their lot."[68] Gardner, who during five years' residence "saw more than has fallen to the lot of most Europeans," said:

B
BB
[162]

> I have conversed with Negroes in all parts of the country, and have met with but very few who expressed any regret at having been taken from their own country, or a desire to return to it. On some of the large estates at which I have resided for short periods, the number of slaves often amounted to three or four hundred, and but for my previous knowledge of their being such, I could never have found out from my own observations that they were slaves. I saw . . . . contented and well-conditioned laborers turning out from their little huts, often surrounded by a small garden, and proceeding to their respective daily occupations, from which they returned in the evening anything but broken and bent down with the severity of their tasks.[69]

Codman wrote:

> It is the result of my observation, and I believe that of every one who has investigated the subject, that the Brazilians are generally kind and indulgent masters, treating their slaves with much greater leniency than has been practised by any other people among whom the "institution" has existed in modern times.[70]

---

[68] James W. Wells, *Three Thousand Miles through Brazil* (2 vols.; Philadelphia, 1886), II, 187.

[69] *Op. cit.*, p. 14.

B
[466]

[70] *Op. cit.*, p. 101. Absentee ownership, however, occasionally resulted, as on the estate of Prince Dom Rodrigo visited by Mawe, in a "system of management . . . . so bad that the slaves are half starved, almost destitute of clothing, and most miserably lodged" (John Mawe, *Travels in the Interior of Brazil* [Philadelphia, 1816], p. 115). Note also Mathison, *op. cit.*, p. 114. Nor is it to be supposed that the field hands always fared as well as the house servants. Compare the conclusion of Stewart (*op. cit.*, p. 296): "House servants in Rio [1852] are said to have easy times, and to do very much as they please; but to judge from the incidents I have seen of field laborers, I fear such have but a sad and wearisome life."

B
BB
175
576
567
571
[596]

The "wide spread of gentle manners in Brazil,"[71] which impressed some commentators as contributing to the favored treatment of Brazilian slaves, was an integral part of a social order in which the large family was the principal unit of cohesion. Under such conditions the network of personal relations arising out of the intimate contact of master and slave not only tempered but, over a period of time, tended to destroy the formal barriers between them. "The Negro is everywhere among the Brazilians," wrote Codman, "and they understand him thoroughly."[72]

B
BB
175
567
571
B
BB
[177]

It was usually among the newly arrived Africans, the field hands, or those blacks like the semi-independent *negros de ganho*, all of whom were not in intimate contact with the whites, that escapes and insurrections occurred. Some of these Negroes at times affected scorn and contempt of whites.[73] But those who were in close contact with the Europeans over a period of time developed sentiments of "belonging together," of loyalty and affection. Under such cir-

---

[71] "One afternoon I sat in a street car of the Copacabana line running to and from the heart of Rio de Janeiro city. As we approached the Avenida and paused at a sharp turn at the regulator's signal, a small boy poorly clad in cotton clothes got onto the front platform with a dinner pail in his hand. He set it down, removed his cap, bent his knee as the motorman, with a swift smile at the child, extended his right hand. The boy respectfully kissed it, replaced his cap, and jumped down. The little incident was typical of the wide spread of gentle manners in Brazil; it is here usual enough to see elderly bankers kiss the hands of their parents, but courtesy is not confined to the upper classes. . . . Brazilian men meeting each other in the street a dozen times a day, lift their hats every time to each other" (L. E. Elliott, *Brazil, Today and Tomorrow* [New York, 1917], p. 76).

[72] *Op. cit.*, p. 202.

[73] Bennett (*op. cit.*, p. 9) mentions the following incident from Pernambuco: "One evening when we were walking along the Rua Nova, a black woman who was passing us suddenly drew aside with a lofty air, exclaiming: 'O meu Deus, os brancos perto de mim!' (Oh, my God, whites near me!)"

B
B B

175
567
571
[177]

cumstances they gradually lost their African customs and traditions and took over more and more European ideas, attitudes, and points of view.

This loyalty and devotion, as well as even deeds of heroism, on the part of Negro slaves quite naturally evoked corresponding sentiments of appreciation and affection in masters and their children. Mrs. Louis Agassiz, visiting, together with her husband, the Academy of Fine Arts in Rio in 1865, noted with particular interest the portrait of a Negro

> who, in a shipwreck off the coast, had saved a number of lives at the risk of his own. When he had brought several passengers to the shore, he was told that two children still remained in the ship. He swam back once more and brought them safely to the beach, but then sank down exhausted, and was seized with a hemorrhage. A considerable sum was raised for him in the city of Rio, and his picture was placed in the Academy to commemorate his heroism.[74]

B B

532
567
571
B

There hangs today in the Pinacotheca at Bahia a famous painting of the *mãe preta*, or "black mother." "We children," recently remarked a prominent Bahian banker, "respected our *mãe preta* as much as, or perhaps even more than, we did our own parents. I'm sure we feared her more and obeyed her more readily."

567
175
648
554

Henrique Dias, a Pernambucan slave, materially and somewhat spectacularly aided the Portuguese when they were engaged, during the seventeenth century, in driving the Dutch out of Pernambuco. Captured, he was shortly released, the Dutch thinking that "because he was a Negro slave he wasn't worth the cost of feeding." He returned to fight effectively for the Portuguese and was once wounded in battle. Following the expulsion of the Dutch, he was given many honors, commissioned in the local militia, and put in

---

[74] Professor and Mrs. Louis Agassiz, *A Journey in Brazil* (Boston and New York, 1888), p. 478.

B
175
567
554
648

command of a Negro regiment. As a Bahian *preto* recently remarked with pride, "His contribution to his country was an honored one."

B
B B
175
795
567

Negros novos were required by law to be báptized into the Christian religion on penalty of forfeiture to the state. Those from Portuguese Angola were baptized in lots before they left their native shores.[75] The mark of the royal crown upon their breasts signified that they had undergone this ceremony and also that the king's duty had been paid. With slaves from other parts of Africa, the master was allowed a year for the instruction requisite for baptism.[76] Debret noted that elderly Negroes acquainted with African languages were often used to catechise the candidates, ordinarily the oldest and "most virtuous" slaves being chosen for this purpose.[77] One of the first things taught was the threefold sign of the cross accompanied by the words, "The sign of the cross delivers us from our enemies." Slaves were not considered, we are told, "members of society, but rather brute animals," until they could "lawfully go to mass, confess their sins, and receive the sacrament."[78] Participation in these ceremonies made them fellow human beings.

B
B B
[779]
[829]

B
175
795
567

On the plantations slaves were regularly instructed in Catholic ritual and belief, chaplains often being retained on the larger estates for this purpose as well as to conduct the public religious ceremonies in the chapel attached to the plantation. Mawe, visiting the estate of Prince Dom Rodrigo near Rio in the early years of the nineteenth century, noted that it was customary "to have prayers publicly read to slaves morning and evening, at the commencement and close of their day's labor."[79] Mathison noted that "on Sunday large numbers of slaves may be seen in the churches, particularly females."[80] For the exclusive worship of the Negroes, certain saints—Nossa Senhora do Rosario, São Benedito, and Santa Efigenia—were set aside, and their images were often, and still are today, painted black. Numerous *irmandades* composed entirely of Negroes were organized, usually under the patronage of São Benedito and Nossa Senhora do Rosario,[81] and in Bahia, at least, these all-Negro organizations persist to the present day. Koster, writing about 1800, tells us:

---

[75] Koster, *op. cit.*, I, 198.

[76] Koster (*ibid.*) writes that "the law is not always strictly adhered to as to time, but it is never evaded altogether."

[77] *Op. cit.*, III, 129.

[78] Koster, *op. cit.*, I, 199.

B
175
795
567
B
B B
175
567
794
[776]
BB
[178]

> The ambition of the slave very generally aims at being admitted into one of these Irmandades, and at being made one of the officers and directors of the concerns of the brotherhood. Even some of the money which the industrious slave is collecting for the purpose of purchasing his freedom, will often times be brought out of its concealment for the decoration of a saint, that the donor may become of importance in the society to which he belongs.[82]

In 1848 Henry Bates noted that on an estate called Caripí, near Pará, the Christmas festival "was celebrated by the Negroes of their own free will, and in a very pleasing manner."

B
175
796
794
567

> The room next to the one I had chosen was the *capella*, or chapel. It had a little altar which was neatly arranged, and the room was furnished with a magnificent brass chandelier. Men, women, and children were busy in the chapel all day on the 24th of December, decorating the altar with flowers and strewing the floor with orange leaves. They invited some of their neighbors to the evening prayers; and when the simple ceremony began, an hour before midnight, the chapel was

---

[79] Mawe, *op. cit.*, p. 115; cf. also Mathison, *op. cit.*, p. 157.

[80] *Op. cit.*, pp. 156–57.

[81] Cf. Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 255.

[82] *Op. cit.*, I, 199–200.

B
175
796
794
567

crowded. They were obliged to dispense with the mass, for they had no priest; the service therefore consisted merely of a long litany and a few hymns. There was placed on the altar a small image of the infant Christ, the "Menino Deus" as they called it, or the Child-God, which had a long ribbon depending from its waist. An old white-haired Negro led off the litany, and the rest of the people joined in the responses. After the service was over they all went up to the altar, one by one, and kissed the end of the ribbon. The gravity and earnestness shown throughout the proceedings was remarkable.[83]

B
BB
175
567
585
[795]

Slaves were often married according to the forms of the Catholic church, and the banns were published in the same manner as for free persons.[84] Debret has preserved a visual impression of such a ceremony being performed in the house of wealthy Brazilians.[85]

B
BB
175
178
796

As Freyre has pointed out,[86] priests continually urged upon white masters the advantage of conceding to the Negroes their African pastimes. A Jesuit, writing in the eighteenth century, advised slaveowners not only to permit but even to encourage the *festas* of the blacks, saying: "You should not make it difficult for them to choose their king, and to sing and dance as they desire on certain appointed days of the year, and legitimately to enjoy themselves on Sunday afternoons when in the morning they have executed the ceremonies in honor of Nossa Senhora do Rosario, São Benedito, or the guardian-saint of the chapel." Slaves were granted permission to use during public festivals—at first the Vespers of Reis, later Christmas, New Year's, and Carnival—

---

[83] Henry W. Bates, *The Naturalist on the River Amazons* (reprint, London, 1892), p. 88.

[84] Koster, *op. cit.*, I, 202. The consent of the master was required and the ceremony could not be performed until "the requisite prayers have been learned, the nature of the confession . . . . understood, and the sacrament can be received."

[85] *Op. cit.*, Vol. III, Pl. 15.

[86] *Op. cit.*, p. 264.

B B B.

African costumes, songs, and dances.[57] The Catholic church 175
was never in haste, it seems, to assimilate the Brazilian Ne- 178
gro but adopted instead a patient and tolerant policy which 796
in the end was eminently successful. Early in the nineteenth B
century Koster wrote from Pernambuco, "No compulsion is B B
resorted to, to make the Negroes embrace the habits of their 175
masters; but their ideas are insensibly led to imitate and 795
adopt them."[58] 797 567

As might be expected, the transition from fetish-cult ideas 177
and practices to Catholic ritual and belief was marked by B
intermediary stages in which elements of both religions co- B B
existed in the Negroes' thought and practice, and the objects 175
of one cult were identified with objects of a similar nature in 177 79
the other. Hence, the extensive identification, for instance, [776]
of several African *orixás* with certain Catholic saints (as we
shall later see in greater detail) and the coexistence of African and European forms in the principal religious and popular festivals.

Thus, in 1852, a visitor wrote from Rio de Janeiro:

> For many nights past, Gloria Hill . . . . has echoed till a late hour B
> with the songs, the wild music, and the tread of the dance in the 17
> Negroes' favorite amusements; and yesterday afternoon, I accident- 796
> ally became a spectator of a grand gathering of this kind. It was "Twelfth" or "King's Day," as sometimes called—being that commemorative of the adoration of the Magi in the stable of Bethlehem; and it is a chief festival with the Negroes. . . . . When about half way up the Larangeiras . . . . my attention was arrested by a large gathering of Negroes within an enclosure by the wayside, engaged in their native dances, accompanied by the wild and rude music brought with them from Africa. . . . . Many of the principal performers, both among the dancers and musicians, were dressed in the most . . . . grotesque manner. . . . . A majority, if not all the performers, were baptized

---

[57] *Ibid.*

[58] *Op. cit.*, I, 200.

B
17
796

> members of the . . . . church. . . . . Exhibitions of this kind are far from being limited here to extraordinary holidays, or to the seclusion of by-places. I have seen them in open daylight, in the most public corners of the city, while young [white] females . . . . hung over the surrounding balconies as spectators.[18]

B
B B
17
796

The festival here witnessed was probably that of the Rei do Congo ("King of the Congo"). Throughout Brazil, Africans were permitted on occasion to select a king and a queen and to celebrate their coronation with extensive ceremonies. This festival came to be held at the same time as that of the Catholic celebration of Epiphany and to be confused in the minds of the Negroes with it.[19] Of the king and queen, Koster records:

B
B B
[567]

> The personages . . . . fixed upon may either actually be slaves, or they may be manumitted Negroes. These sovereigns exercise a species of mock jurisdiction over their subjects, which is much laughed at by the whites. But their chief power and superiority over their countrymen is shown on the day of the festival. The Negroes of their nation . . . . pay much respect to them. The man who had acted as their king in Itamaraca (for each district has its king) for several years, was about to resign from old age, and a new chief was to be chosen. He who had been fixed upon for this purpose was an old man and a slave, belonging to the plantation of Amparo. The . . . . queen would not resign, but still continued at her post. The old Negro who was this day to be crowned, came early in the morning to pay his respects to the vicar, who said to him in a jocular manner, "Well, sir, today I am to wait upon you, and to be your chaplain." About eleven o'clock I proceeded to the church with the vicar. We were standing at the door when there appeared a number of male and female Negroes, habited in cotton dresses of colors and of white, with flags flying and drums beating; and as they approached, we discovered among them the king and queen, and the secretary of state. Each of the former wore upon their heads a crown, which was partly covered with gilt

---

[18] Stewart, *op. cit.*, p. 293.

[19] Cf. Ribeiro, *op. cit.*, p. 256: ". . . . festa que eles faziam coincidir e confundir com a catolica dos Tres Reis."

4; Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1
East Brazil SN1

B
BB
17
796

paper, and painted various colors. The king was dressed in an old fashioned suit of divers tints, green, red, and yellow: coat, waistcoat, and breeches. His sceptre, which was of wood and finely gilt, was in his hand. The queen was in a blue silk gown, also of ancient make; and the wretched secretary had to boast of as many colors as his master; but his dress had evident appearances of each portion having been borrowed from a different quarter; for some parts were too tight, and others too wide for him. The expense of the church service was . . . . provided for by the Negroes . . . . and . . . . the vicar . . . . and his assistant priests were to chant high mass. . . . . At last their Majesties knelt down at the railing of the principal chapel, and the service commenced. As soon as this was over, the new king was to be installed. But as the vicar who had not breakfasted, though it was now midday, was hungry, he dispatched the matter without much ceremony. He asked for the crown, then went to the church door—the new sovereign presented himself, and was requested, or rather desired, to kneel down. The insignia were given to him; and the vicar then said, "Agora, Senhor Rei, vai te embora" (Now, Sir King, go about thy business). As the king belonged to Amparo, the eating, drinking, and dancing were to be at that place.[91]

EB
17
796
[114]

Koster did not witness the subsequent ceremony, but Burton has left an account of a similar one in Minas Geraes:

A score of men, after promenading through the settlement, came to the *Casa Grande*. They were dressed, as they fondly imagined, after the style of the Agua-Rosada House,[92] descended from the great Manikongo and hereditary lords of Congo land. But the toilettes, though gorgeous with colored silks and satins, were purely fanciful, and some wore the Kanitar or plumed head-gear, and the Arasira or waist fringe, and carried the Tacape or tomahawk belonging to the red man. All were armed with sword and shield, except the king, who, in sign of dignity, carried his sceptre, a stout and useful stick. The masked old man, with white beard, trembling underjaw, *chevrotante* voice, and

---

[91] *Op. cit.*, II, 25–28.

[92] An interesting account of this African dynasty is given, according to Burton, in M. Valdes, *Six Years of a Traveler's Life in West Africa* (London, 1861), Vol. II, chap. ii.

EB
17
796

EB
[536]
[567]

EB
[537]
[197]

> testy manner, was clearly represented by a young black from Sabará. On his right sat the captain of war, the Premier; on his left the young Prince, his son and heir. Of course the buffoon of the Dahomean court was there, and the fun consisted in kicking and cuffing him as if he were one of our clowns. . . . . The "play" was a representation of . . . . a slave hunt; the march, accompanied with much running about and clashing of swords, which all handled like butcher's knives; the surprise, dragging in prisoners, directions to put to death recreant ministers and warriors, poisonings and administering antidotes. . . . . His Majesty freely used his staff, threshing everybody right regally. The speeches were delivered in a singsong tone; the language was Hamitico-Lusan, and there was an attempt at cadence and rhyme. Slaughtering the foeman and drinking his blood were the favorite topics, varied by arch allusions to the Superintendent and his guests.[13]

B
B B
EB
17
796
[776]

But the "Kings of the Congo," says Koster,

> also worship Nossa Senhora do Rosario; and are dressed in the dress of white men. They and their subjects dance, it is true, after the manner of their country; but to these festivals are admitted Africans of other nations, creole blacks, and mulattoes, all of whom dance after the same manner; and these dances are now as much the national dances of Brazil, as they are of Africa.

EB
175
533

Shortly after 1800 Maria Graham, visiting a plantation in the interior of Rio de Janeiro Province, wrote:

> While we were sitting by the sugar-mill presses, Dona Mariana (mistress of the *engenho*) desired the slave women, who were supplying the canes, to sing, and they began at first with some of their own wild African airs, with words adopted at the moment to suit the occasion. She then told them to sing their hymns to the Virgin; when, regularly in tune and time, and with some sweet voices, the evening and other hymns were sung.[14]

---

[13] Burton, *op. cit.*, I, 237–38. For further information see Mario de Andrade, "*Os Congos*," *Lanterna Verde*, No. 2 (February, 1935), pp. 36–53; Francisco Augusto Pereira da Costa, "Rei do Congo," *Jornal do Brasil* (Rio), August 25, 1901.

[14] *Op. cit.*, p. 282.

B
BB
17
796
794
776

The dances *dos Congos* became attached to the Catholic festivals of São Benedito and Nossa Senhora do Rosario. In Bahia the annual *lavagem* ("washing") of the church of Bomfim became "a Yoruba religious ceremony" and, as late as 1900, was "a living cult, O Senhor do Bomfim[95] being for the Africans, the creole Negroes and the mixed-bloods of the Nagô *seita*,[96] Obatalá[97] himself."[98] The Cucumbys[99] became attached in Bahia to the Catholic festivals of Epiphany and Christmas.

---

[95] The saint to whom the Church of Bomfim (in Itapagipe) is consecrated is known as O Senhor do Bomfim, and his image is prominently displayed in the church. To evaluate more fully the important role of this famous church to which pilgrimages are still regularly made from long distances, see Carlos Alberto de Carvalho, *Tradições e milagres do Bomfim* (Bahia, 1915); João Varella, *Na Bahia do Senhor do Bomfim* (Bahia, 1936); and Manoel Raymundo Querino, *A Bahia de outrora* (Bahia, 1922), pp. 117–30, 222–31.

[96] The fetish-cult is sometimes called the *seita* (sect).

[97] Obatalá is one of the more important *orixás*, or deities, of the fetish cult. See chap. x.

[98] Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, p. 270.

[99] Moraes describes the Cucumbys of Rio as follows: "After a sumptuous meal of *cucumbe*, which is a dish eaten by the Congos and Munhambanas on the days of the circumcision of their sons, a group of Negroes set out to take to the Queen her new vassals who have just passed through this species of savage baptism. The procession, made up of princes and princesses, soothsayers and magicians, interpreters of foreign languages, and a host of other people, and conducting between two lines of gay celebrants the *mameter*—those who have just been circumcised with the bamboo splinter—is attacked on the way by an enemy tribe and the King's son killed by an arrow. When the procession finally reaches the King's dwelling-place, they find that the King, having heard of his son's death from a messenger, has already sent for a famous diviner, the most celebrated *feiticeiro* (witch-doctor) of the kingdom, of whom he demands, immediately upon his arrival, the resuscitation of the dead prince. To the divinations of this magician, the youth finally responds and gets to his feet. The dances then continue for some time, until the noisy ceremony ends with the Cucumbys singing the *Bendito* and other popular refrains" (Mello Moraes Filho, *Festas e tradições populares* [Rio, 1888], p. 157, quoted in Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, pp. 272–73).

EB
796
304
852

BB
175
796
575

In the time of Nina Rodrigues, African "carnival clubs" were still active in Bahia.[100] A Embaixada Africana ("The African Legation") and Os Pandegos da Africa ("The African Clowns") were the more prominent. Of lesser importance were A Chegada Africana ("The Arrival of the Africans") and Os Filhos da Africa ("Children of Africa"). A common theme portrayed on the floats prepared by these Negroes was "primitive Africa brought to Brazil a slave." Certain African traditions were also represented. Thus, for the Carnival of 1899, Os Pandegos da Africa prepared a float representing the river Zambesi "on one of whose banks might be seen the King Labossi reclining in an immense seashell and surrounded by his ministers Auá, Oman, and Aboto." A second float carried "two individuals representing the powerful ministers of the King's court—Barborim and Rodá"; and a third showed "the hut of Pae Ajou, his wife and the magical *caboré*[101] which brings good fortune to one and all." Rodrigues was impressed with the enormous crowd of Negroes and mixed-bloods which accompanied the floats, "singing African songs, dancing African dances and applauding the images on the magician's float." The scene was one of "a colossal *candomblé* traversing the streets of the city,"[102] although police regulations at that time forbade the public appearance of the cult.

BB
175
796
BB
[794]

B
BB
535
175
177
796

Much enjoyed by Brazilian Negroes were certain dances like the *lundú* and the *batuque*, evidently of at least partial African origin, although they perhaps also contained certain Portuguese and native Indian elements.

---

[100] Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, p. 270.

[101] The *caboré* is a nocturnal bird.

[102] Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, p. 271.

EB
175
533
535

Wells, visiting in Minas Geraes in the latter part of the nineteenth century, witnessed the *batuque* and records that

> it is usually danced by two couples, sometimes more, who face each other. Two tinkling .... guitars on this occasion commenced a thrum-thrum, thrum-thrum, and the head man of the estate .... advanced and marshaled the dancers, two women and two men; thrum-thrum, thrum—three or four voices suddenly commenced a loud, high-pitched, wild, rapidly delivered, impromptu refrain, containing allusions to the *patrão*[103] and his merits, the incidents of the daily work mingled with the loveliness of ideal Marias; the other men present joined in the chorus, each taking a second or third, a falsetto, or a bass. With rhythmic songs accompanied by clapping of hands and shuffling of feet, the dance commences, at first a slow measure that is maintained for some time, then gradually it increases in rapidity, the dancers advance and retreat, the women swaying their bodies and waving their arms, the men clapping time with their hands at every chorus. The measured tones rise and fall, then again increase in time, the songs and shuffling steps become fast and furious, hands and feet and voices all keep time; and there is much pantomimic action between the couples. .... The surroundings were a bright fire that burned and flickered on the earth floor. A single-wick castor-oil lamp was hung on a post. The forms of men and women, lightened by the upward glow of the fire, figured prominently against the dark obscurity of the interior of the shelter.[104]

EB
[354]

EB
175
177
291
BB
[175]
[177]
[291]

Certain customs of the whites were taken over completely by the Negroes. Especially was this true (with a few exceptions which we shall see later) of dress. Stewart recounts of

---

[103] Employer.

[104] *Op. cit.*, pp. 198–99. The *samba*, a form of the *batuque*, is today in a modified form the favorite popular music of Brazil. For information on the African contribution to Brazilian music see especially Mario de Andrade, "O samba rural paulista," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal de São Paulo*, XLI, 37–114; Flausino Rodrigues Valle, *Elementos de folk-lore musical brasileiro* (São Paulo, 1936), particularly chap. iii; Luciano Gallet, *Estudos de folklore* (Rio, 1934).

EB
175
177
292
[567]
[854]

Stewart recounts of Rio in 1852 that "two black African women, richly and fashionably attired, came sauntering along with the most conscious air of high-bred self-possession. They were followed by a black female slave, also in full dress, carrying a black baby three or four months old, and decked out in all the finery of an aristocratic heir—an elaborately wrought, lace-frilled and rosetted cap, and long flowing robe of thin muslin beautifully embroidered, and ornamented with lace."[105]

B
BB

175
177
302
BB
[794]

A fashion which in the early part of the nineteenth century served "to mark the high rank of those (of either sex) who adopted it" was that of "permitting the nails of the fore-finger and thumb to grow to a great length . . . . [and be] cut to a sharp point."[106] Today, while the whites in Bahia no longer follow this fashion, one occasionally sees individuals of prominence in the Negro group—for instance, Mãe Anninha of the *candomblé* of São Gonçalo—with long fingernails.

B
BB

175
177
B
BB
175
177
567
854
855

However, assimilation is not a process in which the individuals of only one of the races in contact are modified thereby while members of the other race remain unchanged. Circumstances in Brazil were such as to favor the taking-over by the whites of certain African elements. One rarely found a white child, especially during the slave period, who had not been reared by a Negro *ama*. She "gave him of her own milk, rocked him in his cradle or hammock, taught him his first words of halting Portuguese, his first Padre Nosso, his first Ave Maria, his first 'vôte!' or 'oxente'; she put into his mouth the first *pirão* with meat and

---

[105] *Op. cit.*, p. 295.

[106] Andrew Grant, *History of Brazil* (London, 1809), p. 234.

B
BB
175
177
567
854
855

molho de ferrugem."[107] From her and from the *mucama* (maid), as much as, if not more than, from his father and mother, the white child learned to speak. And almost without exception, he was given a *mulequé companheiro de brinquedo,* a little Negro slave of his own age and sex, to be his playmate and his almost constant companion.[108] José Verissimo says that during slavery there was "no house which did not have one or more *muleques,* one or more *corumins,* little victims consecrated to the caprices of *nhônhô:*[109] his horse, his *leva-pancada,* his servant, his companion, his friend."[110] In 1821 Mathison saw on an estate near Rio "a number of fine Negro children playing in front of the house, and in the midst of them a younger brother of the proprietor, a lad about fourteen years of age, who had been brought up in this manner . . . . like the Negroes."[111] Freyre has suggested that "very likely many a Brazilian child took for his first hero, not a white physician, nor a navy official or a lawyer, but a slave acrobat who knew how to execute the difficult pirouettes of the impromptu circuses and of the *bumbas meu bois*[112] of the *engenhos;* or a Negro player of the trombone or the flute."[113] Under these conditions it is not surprising that

B
BB
[554]

B
SB
175
179
[567]
[262]

---

[107] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 147. *Pirão* is made of manioc meal and meat broth; *molho de ferrugem* is oil of the *dendê* palm.

[108] Lacerda, *op. cit.*, p. 379.

[109] Slave rendering of *menino* (male child).

[110] *A educação nacional* (Rio, 1906), quoted in Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 148. A *leva-pancada* is one who "takes the beatings."

[111] *Op. cit.*, p. 93.

[112] The *bumba meu boi* is still to be seen in the Bahian interior. It is a folk drama in which a man dressed to represent an ox plays a prominent role (see Arthur Ramos, *O negro brasileiro* [Rio, 1934], pp. 259-68; see also his *O folk-lore negro do Brasil* [Rio, 1935], pp. 103-14).

SB
[536]

[113] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 392.

BRAZIL SL1

B
BB
175
177
567

Koster found the masters and their families taking over many of the customs of their slaves.[114]

BB
175
565
177
535

Grant, visiting Bahia about 1800, noted that the principal amusement engaged in at private gatherings of the upper class was a dance of African origin:

> It is performed by an individual of each sex moving their bodies to the monotonous tones of an instrument, always in one measure, and with scarcely any action of the legs or feet. The spectators seem delighted with the performance, and cheer the dancers by the most clamorous marks of approbation. This national dance . . . . is indulged in by all ranks of the citizens. . . . .[115]

B
BB
175
177
19

Numerous changes in the whites' speech occurred. Especially was this true on isolated fazendas where *senhores* and their families were semiliterate or even illiterate. The *r* and the *s* disappeared as final consonants from many words, *fazer* becoming *fazê; mandar*, *mandá; comer*, *comê;* and *lh* was often reduced to *l*, *mulher* becoming *muler; colher*, *coler;* etc. In 1798 the bishop of Recife urged the teachers in a local *recolhimento* to try to correct "certain errors of speech" in the young ladies there studying, especially that of inverting certain letters and saying, for instance, *breço* instead of *berço*, *cravão* instead of *carvão;* of omitting letters in the middle of a word and saying, for example, *teado* instead of *telhado*, *fio* instead of *filho;* of dropping the final letter of the plural or of words ending in a harsh sound and saying, for instance, *muitas florê* for *muitas flores*, and *Portugá* for *Portugal*.[116] Freyre says that these dialectical modifications were particularly noticeable among isolated families in the rural areas, where Negro slaves were "constantly within the

---

[114] *Op. cit.*, I, 200–201.

[115] *Op. cit.*, pp. 232–33.

[116] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos* (São Paulo, 1936), p. 103.

B
BB
175
177
19

house like persons of the family." Freyre adds that "still today the members of certain illustrious families *de engenho* can be identified by their peculiar vices of pronunciation which were originally learned from Negroes within their homes," as, for example, the Wanderleys of Serinhaem and Rio Formosa.[117]

The use, among certain slaveholding families, of a "slow and heavy manner of speaking," which gave "an appearance of affectation, fatigue, and illness," is also ascribed by Freyre to African influence. Numerous African words were adopted, especially into the common speech of the lower class, and a few have become good usage even among the educated minority. Freyre writes:

> What Brazilian, at least from the North, feels any strangeness about such words as: caçamba, canga, dengo, cafuné, lubambo, mulambo, caçula, quitute, mandinga, muleque, camondongo, muganga, quibêbe, quengo, batuque, banzo, mucambo, banguê, bozó, mocotó, bunda, zumbí, vatapá, carurú, banzé, mucama, quindim, catinga, mugunzá, malungo, birimbau, tanga, cachimbo, candomblé? Who prefers to say "mal cheiro" instead of "catinga"; or "garoto" instead of "muleque" or "moleque"; or "trapo" instead of "mulambo"? These are terms which correspond better than Portuguese words to our experiences, our palates, our understanding, and our emotions.[118]

---

[117] *Ibid.*, pp. 101–2.

[118] *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 245. For further information on words and phrases of African origin commonly used today in the predominately Portuguese speech in large areas of Brazil see, particularly, Renato Mendonça, *A influencia africana no português do Brasil* (2d ed.; São Paulo, 1935); Jacques Raymundo, *O elemento afro-negro na lingua portuguesa* (Rio, 1933); Mario Marroquim, *A lingua do Nordeste* (São Paulo, 1934), especially pp. 155–59; Dante de Laytano, *Os africanismos do dialeto gaucho* (Porto Alegre, 1936). The author himself collected approximately three hundred words of African origin commonly used today in Bahia.

B
BB
175
177
19

In the speech of very young children the doubling of a tonic syllable became common. Hence, *nhônhô* replaced *menino; titio* and *titia* were used for *tio* and *tia; dodoe* for *doe; dindinho* for *padrinho; vôvô* for *avô*, etc. Proper names "lost their solemnity, dissolving in a delicious manner in the mouths of the slaves." Little Antonia came to call herself, and to be called by her parents and other relatives, "Dondon" or "Toinha" or "Totonha"; Thereza became "Teté"; Manoel became "Mané," "Mandú," or "Nezinho"; Francisco became "Chico," "Chiquinho," or "Chicó"; Pedro became "Pepé"; and Alberto became "Bebeto" or "Betinho."[119]

B
BB
[567]
[565]

In addition to the "hard and imperative" *diga-me, faça-me, espere-me*, of Portugal, another method of placing the pronoun came into use in Brazil. The slave and the lower classes developed *me-diga, me-faça, me-espere*, a manner of speaking which Ribeiro describes as of "great suavity and sweetness."[120] Freyre says "*faça-se* is the master speaking, the father, the patriarch; *me-dê* is the slave, the woman, the child."[121]

B
BB
175
538

The Negroes in Brazil are said to have been assiduous story-tellers. Many free *pretas*, mostly older women, made their living by wandering from *engenho* to *engenho* recounting tales to the women slaves which eventually found their way, transmitted especially by the *mãe preta* and the *mucama*, into the ears of the master's children. Particularly common were stories of animals possessing human characteris-

---

[119] Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 243.

[120] João Ribeiro, *A lingua nacional* (São Paulo, 1921), quoted in Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 246 n.

[121] *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 246.

B

BB

tics, as similarly were tales of the tortoise.[132] Boisterous chil- 175
dren were quieted with stories of the Kibungo, a terrifying 538
creature, half-man, half-animal, with an enormous hole in [776]
the middle of its back which opened ominously when the
creature lowered its head.[133] The Kibungo was especially B
fond, it is said, of visiting the houses in which naughty boys BB
lived, announcing his presence with: [539]

De quem é esta casa?
aué
como gérê, como gérê
como érá.[134]

B

BB

Max Schmidt observed in Matto Grosso that many of the 17
local practices connected with cattle-raising were of African 325
origin, as similarly were the iron instruments in use there. 233
Eschwege contends that ironworking was learned in Brazil
from imported Africans.[135]

---

[132] See Rodrigues, *op. cit.*, pp. 282–83.

[133] *Ibid.*, pp. 301–3.

[134] Whose is this house?
aué
I eat *gérê*, I eat *gérê*
I eat *érá*.

[135] Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, pp. 220–21. It is also probable that certain microbes were unwittingly brought to Brazil in the bodies of imported Africans. See Octavio de Freitas, *Doenças africanas no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1935).

[P. 108 is blank]

[P.109]

000

III

MISCEGENATION

[P.110 is blank]

CHAPTER IV

RACE MIXTURE AND THE CRUMBLING OF THE COLOR LINE

B
BB
175
167

BB
[162]

DURING at least the first century of colonization relatively few European women emigrated to Brazil.[1] Incoming Portuguese were predominantly males whose adventurous natures had led them to sever more or less completely family ties in the homeland. The soldiers of Thomé de Souza's first permanent garrison, who constituted no inconsiderable portion of Bahia's early population, had been specially chosen, we are told, because they were unincumbered by family ties. The few women, principally prostitutes or girls from orphanages, sent out from Lisbon by the Crown at the insistent request of Padre Nobrega[2] were insufficient to provide the necessary mothers of a new generation.[3] So great at one time was the demand for European women that the king of Portugal issued a decree denying girls permission to go from Brazil to Portugal to be trained as nuns unless they themselves on their own volition expressed an unalterable desire to remain unmarried.

---

[1] Gilberto Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936), p. 60.

[2] Francisco A. de Varnhagen, Visconde de Porto Seguro, *Historia geral do Brasil* (3d complete ed., 4 vols.; São Paulo, n.d.), I, 308.

[3] As late as 1731 Captain-General D. Lourenço de Almeida wrote from Minas Geraes: "Em todas estas minas não ha mulheres que hajam de casar, e quando ha alguma (que são raras) são tantos casamentos que lhe saem que se ve o pai da noiva em grande embaraço a escolha que ha de fazer do genro" (*Revista do Arquivo Publico Mineiro de 1933*, I, 350, cited by Pedro Calmon, *Historia social do Brasil* [3 vols.; São Paulo, 1937-39], I, 95).

BRAZIL SL1

B
BR
175
121

At the same time, if the colonizing venture in Brazil was to succeed, a sufficient population, either European or closely identified with the European, was a necessity.[4] But a shortage of man-power existed in the mother-country. A small number of Portuguese were seeking to establish themselves on a widely extended and constantly expanding frontier. The colonial ventures in India and other areas of the East, where the Portuguese held an irregular coast line fifteen thousand miles long,[5] were draining the mother-country of her quite limited population, depleted as it already was from centuries of war with the Moors. The inhabitants of Portugal at the beginning of the reign of Dom Manoel the Venturesome (1495) are given as only one million.[6] During the thirty years from 1497 to 1527, three hundred and twenty ships are said to have transported to India, "between soldiers and passengers," eighty thousand persons.[7] Some of these returned to Portugal, but most of them remained. Still, Albuquerque complained of the insufficient number of men furnished for his conquests in the East.[8]

The general movement of rural population into Lisbon, drawn by the expansion of overseas trade, had at that time so depleted the supply of agricultural laborers in Portugal, particularly in the southern provinces, that Africans were being imported in considerable numbers to supply the short-

---

[4] In 1612 Diogo de Vasconcellos in a letter to the Portuguese king complained that without increased population "mal se poderá remediar nem povoar tão larga costa" (Manoel Bomfim, *O Brasil* [São Paulo, 1935], p. 11).

[5] Albert G. Keller, *Colonization* (Boston, 1908), p. 108.

[6] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 159.

[7] Fidelino de Figueiredo, *Estudos de historia americana* (São Paulo, n.d.), p. 21, quoted in Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 159.

[8] F. C. Danvers, *The Portuguese in India* (2 vols.; London, 1894), I, 305–6.

B
BB

age.[9] Such migration to Brazil as did occur so seriously affected Portugal that in 1720 King Dom João V issued a royal proclamation prohibiting further emigration.[10]

121
175
[167]

An indication of this population scarcity is the fact that seventeenth-century Portuguese law recognized "common-law" marriage (*casamento Conhoçudos*) as legally binding. There grew up throughout Portugal "a great tolerance for every kind of union from which there might result an increase in population." Even the church came to recognize *de juras* marriage, if consummated by sexual intercourse.[11]

A scarcity of European women in the East led Francisco d'Almeida not only to accept the fact that a considerable degree of intermixture was already taking place in the Indies but also deliberately to foster as a matter of administrative policy Portuguese unions with native women. "In every Portuguese settlement the married men rapidly became a class to themselves with special privileges; all petty offices were reserved for them, and in Goa all the lands belonging to the King—a very large part of the area—were divided among them."[12] This policy of encouraging unions with na-

B
BB
[171]

---

[9] H. Morse Stephens (*Portugal* [New York, 1903], p. 182) says that the population of Lisbon trebled in eighty years.

[10] The decree stated as its purpose the prohibition "of yearly migrations from this country to the *capitanias* of Brasil of so many people . . . . chiefly from the province of Minho, which from once being the most populous now finds itself without a sufficient number of people to cultivate the soil or to perform necessary services" (J. de A. Corvo, *Estudos sobre as provincias ultramarinas* [4 vols.; London, 1883–87], I, 15, quoted in Keller, *op. cit.*, p. 152 n.).

[11] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 179. *De juras* marriage was a simple ceremony "in which the mutual consent of both parties was affirmed on oath before a representative of the church without, however, the sacrament being given." See Alexandre Herculano, *Casamento civil* (Lisboa, 1907), pp. 30 ff.

[12] R. S. Whiteway, *The Rise of Portuguese Power in India, 1497–1550* (Westminster, 1899), p. 177; cf. Danvers, *op. cit.*, p. 217.

B
BB
175
121
171

tive women was similarly sponsored by the Dutch during their colonizing ventures in South Africa and in Java and later by the English in India—a policy which emerged in each case as a natural response to the actual conditions of settlement.

The first Dutch settlers in South Africa and in Java were, almost without exception, males who, in order to establish themselves on a racial and cultural frontier, took up with native women. The mixed-blood progeny of these unions was treated with tolerance and consideration and often sent to the Netherlands to be educated. It was only with the arrival of the Dutch housewives, after Cape Colony had been fairly established, that the attitude of the Dutch toward the mixed-bloods changed. Today there are probably few people in the world who oppose intermixture more vigorously than do the Boer descendants of these Dutch settlers.[13]

During the early years of English penetration in India intermarriage between the English and native Indians not only extensively took place but was encouraged as a deliberate policy by the English authorities. In 1678 the court of directors of the British East India Company wrote the president of Madras that

> the marriage of our soldiers to the native women of Fort St. George is a matter of such consequence to posterity that we shall be content to encourage it with some expense, and have been thinking for the future to appoint a *pagoda* to be paid to the mother of any child, that shall hereafter be born of any such future marriage, upon the day the child is christened, if you think this small encouragement will increase the number of such marriages.

B
BB
[113]

This policy in all probability did not so much initiate interracial crossing as recognize its existence in an informal

---

[13] Robert E. Park, "Race Relations and Certain Frontiers," in *Race and Culture Contacts*, ed. E. B. Reuter (New York, 1934), pp. 67-68.

B
BB
175
121
171

state. Unions were not confined to the lower classes but extended into even the upper social ranks, not only of the English, but of other European nationalities as well.[14]

Miscegenation and interracial marriage are perhaps always incidental to the expansion of a racial frontier. As Park has pointed out: "Transplanting a people, like transplanting any other organism, is a ticklish business, and interbreeding is one way of successfully accomplishing the transition."[15]

B
BB
175
563*
[565]

Thus, the Brazilian society of the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries came to be founded largely upon families in which Indian or part Indian women were the consorts and mothers.[16] At least this was generally true of the lower classes, but it was by no means limited exclusively to them.[17]

B
BB
[583]
[795]
[585]

These *de facto* unions were gradually "regularized by the church into Christian marriage," thus lending the powerful sanction of the ecclesiastical authority, chief guardian of the mores in a sacred society, to interracial crossing. The church was joined in this policy by the state, which legalized mixed unions. Thus, neither church nor state injected any "strain for consistency"[18] into the colonial mores which had grown up quite naturally in response to the exigencies of colonization but instead themselves offered support to the "definitions of the situation"[19] already laid down in the prevailing attitudes.

B
BB
[113]

---

[14] See Cedric Dover, *Half-caste* (London, 1937), pp. 117 ff.

[15] *Op. cit*., p. 57.

[16] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 60.

[17] E.g., the *mameluca* descendants of Caramurú married into prominent families.

[18] See William Graham Sumner, *Folkways* (Boston, 1906), p. 5.

[19] See W. I. Thomas, *Primitive Behavior* (New York and London, [illegible]37), pp. 8-9.

B
BB
[113]

8
BB
175
*563
121

The mating in Brazil of Portuguese men with native women was probably facilitated by the fact that many early colonizers were Moçarabes from southern Portugal, who had long been acquainted with the darker peoples and in whom "consciousness of race" was reputedly weak.[20] In fact, in some cases at least, African blood may have flowed in their veins.

It is possible that the first experience of the Portuguese with a darker race was the experience of a conquered people with their more swarthy conquerers. For the Moors, whose occupation of Portugal extended over more than five hundred years (711–1244), were perhaps darker in pigmentation than the Iberian peoples among whom, as lords of a conquered land, they settled. At least we know that their advance into the Iberian peninsula was led by the Berbers of northern Africa, whom Ripley describes as possessed of a slightly concave nose which in profile suggests the Negro, with hair varying from wavy to curly, beards rare, and body hair seldom heavy.[21] Ripley attributes their resemblance to the Negro to admixture with negroid tribes south of the Sahara.

If it is true that the Moors were of darker pigmentation than the Portuguese among whom they settled, men of dark hue had, at the time Brazil was colonized, been for centuries men of prestige in Portugal. They had brought in with them

---

8
BB
[113]

[20] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 60. From the fifteenth century onward, Negroes were common even in Lisbon. Nicolau Clenard, French tutor of the (at that time) crown prince Dom Henrique, once wrote in a letter: "I believe there is in Lisbon a greater number of Moors and Negroes than of whites. There are nests of slaves in every house" (quoted from Domingos de Magalhães, *Os indigenas do Brasil*, by Luis Anselmo da Fonseca, *A escravidão, o clero e o abolicionismo* [Bahia, 1887], p. 165).

[21] William Z. Ripley, *Races of Europe* (New York, 1899), pp. 277–78.

B BB

a superior culture; were more learned in the arts and sciences. 175
They had become the wealthy class who occupied 563*
the towns or lived in the principal castles and on the great 121
estates. Consequently, it came to be considered an honor for Portuguese women to mate with them, and we know that such marriages often occurred, even among members of the royal family.[22] Thus, the Portuguese, long before the discovery of Brazil, were "accustomed to mixed unions and their offspring."[23]

If the Portuguese came to look upon the dark Moors, and the somewhat negroid Berbers among them, as objects of prestige and eventually as marriageable individuals, the importation into Portugal of African Negroes (who from 1433 on were introduced in considerable numbers,[24] particularly as agricultural laborers in the Algarves at that time almost depopulated by the long wars of the Moorish expulsion) would have found the Portuguese accustomed to associating on a basis of social equality with, or even being inferior to, people of dark color. Even a royal prince is known to have had intimate Negro associates, for King Affonso VI's chief delight as a boy, it is said, was to roam the streets of Lisbon "at the head of a troop of mulattoes and Negro slaves."[25] Traces of African descent are still today unmistakable in the population of Lisbon.[26]

In the Jesuit schools at Bahia in the sixteenth and seven- 600 B BB [113]

---

[22] Stephens, *op. cit.*, p. 23; Stanley Lane-Poole, *The Story of the Moors in Spain* (New York and London, 1886), pp. 48, 55, 247.

[23] Keller, *op. cit.*, p. 104.

[24] African slaves became so numerous that, by the middle of the sixteenth century, they were said to outnumber the free men of Lisbon.

[25] Stephens, *op. cit.*, p. 330.

[26] Noted by Dr. Robert E. Park on a recent visit to Lisbon.

BB

In
*563 the Jesuit schools at Bahia in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, mixed-blood, pure Indian, and Portuguese
871 children were accepted with equal favor and educated together.
797 "The chronicles of the time reveal no segregation or any other form of discrimination inspired by prejudice against the Indian; the program adopted by the padres appears to have continually fostered friendly intermingling of
BB the races."[27]

175
*563 By the time the relatively small numbers of Indians at Bahia had been absorbed into the dominant population group, African women had been imported in sufficient numbers to continue extensively the process of race mixture. The scarcity of white, or near-white, women, at least as mates for men of the upper classes, was not now so acute as formerly; consequently, most of the sexual unions with African women were extra-legal,[28] comparable in some measure to interbreeding in our South, except that in the case of Brazil the extent of intermixture was perhaps greater.[29]
B Padre Nobrega wrote from Bahia in the early days of the
BB colony: "Among the people here there are none who do not possess several *negras* from whom they have many
175 children."[30] By 1819 the number of *mestiços* in Brazil was
*162 given as 628,000—a figure not greatly inferior to that of the
563 whites, who were estimated at 843,000.[31] The pure Negro, it

---

[27] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 120.

[28] Marriages with Negroes were at first frowned upon. Thus an *alvará* of 1755 which referred to marriages of white men with Indian women as "convenient and noble" condemned "staining one's self" by marrying Negroes or Jews (Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 156).

[29] See Freyre, *op. cit.*, esp. chaps. iv and v.

[30] Manoel de Nobrega, *Cartas do Brasil, 1549–1560* (Rio, 1886), quoted in Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 302.

[31] Alcide d'Orbigny, *Voyage dans les deux Amériques* (Paris, 1836), p. 155, quoted in Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 155.

B
BB
175
162

563*

is said, did not usually exist in Brazil much longer than the EB
third generation.[32] In Minas Geraes, in 1835, while importations [175]
from Africa were still large, there were 170,000 mulat- [162]
toes to 305,000 blacks.[33]

Thus miscegenation has gone on in Brazil in an unobtru- B BB
sive way over a long period of time. In few places in the 175
world, perhaps, has the interpenetration of peoples of diver- 563*
gent racial stocks proceeded so continuously and on so exten-
sive a scale.[34] BB

One circumstance in Bahia still favorable to miscegena- 357
tion is the system of household service universal in upper- 563*
class, principally white, families. Whereas no inconsider-
able portion of the domestic labor in the United States, 464
at least in northern areas, is white, consisting largely of [171]
peasant immigrant women from Europe, household labor in Bahia is almost invariably black or dark mulatto. For example, of 250 servant women noted, 197 were black, 47 were mulatto (predominantly dark), 4 were *cafuso*,[34a] and only 2 were white. In other words, only 0.8 per cent appeared to be of unmixed white descent. For this reason, interbreeding between males in white upper-class families and servant girls
leads almost always to black-white, or at least mulatto- BB
white, crosses.

The disposition to tolerate intermixture with the African 563*

---

[32] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 163.

[33] *Ibid.*

[34] Calmon writes (*ibid.*, p. 158): "Nenhum outro povo tão ligeiro marchou para a estabilização de um tipo procedente dos mais opostos fatores; principalmente em nenhum outro as propriedades unitivas do idioma, da religião, do meio fisico, se conjugaram tão intimamente para uniformizar, num imenso territorio (Luc Durtain disse que o Brasil é um dos cinco países verdadeiramente cosmicos) a descendencia de inumeros troncos, celtico, negroide, aborigene."

[34a] Indian-Negro mixed-blood.

*
563 grew up during slavery, and no circumstance has subsequently arisen to change it. In the United States, on the other hand, the spread of contraceptive practices[15] and the increasing race consciousness of the Negro have led to a decided decrease in miscegenation. Traditional behavior in Bahia is, in this respect as in many others, well defined. The sanction of custom has become, as it always does eventually in any case, moral sanction.

*
563
583 Race mixture is further favored in Bahia today by the widespread custom of *mancebia*,[16] or those conjugal unions outside marriage in which there is some degree of permanency. In many cases the women involved are mulattoes, rarely blacks. The man agrees to pay for rent and food; the woman, to care for the house and children. The man may have, at the same time, a legal family, although informal unions are often entered into by young men previous to marriage.

*
563
826 Miscegenation is also favored in Bahia today by the prestige which ordinarily attaches to the so-called "whiter" child. Dark mothers who bear "whiter" children consider themselves especially favored and are so looked upon by their immediate associates. A black mother proudly showed her light child and said, "Estou limpando a minha raça" ("I am cleansing [i.e., I am 'whitening'] my race"). One also

---

[164]
[554]
[882]
[15] In Bahia there is not the fear of venereal disease common to this country. Its contraction is regarded by young men as an indication of sexual coming-of-age and perhaps enhances their prestige among their associates (cf. Freyre, *op. cit.*, pp. 49 ff.).

[193]
[192]
[16] This term is used only in more polite conversation. The woman involved is called *manceba*, the verb is *mancebar*, and the participle *mancebado*. The popular expression, however, is *amasia*, or *amiga* (the feminine form of "friend"), or *amante*, or *comboso*, for the woman; the verb is *amasiar* or *amigar*, the participle *amasiado* or *amigado*.

563
826

often hears in Bahia the expression *melhorando a raca* ("improving the breed").[37]

[567] [178] The attitude here inferred arose during slavery, when it became a distinct privilege for a Negro woman to bear a child to her white master; for she and her progeny were thereby placed in a more advantageous position, especially as far as material benefits, and even freedom, were concerned.

João Varella, in a booklet entitled *Da Bahia do Senhor do Bomfim*, reproduces the figure of a Negro woman bearing a young child bound to her back by a wide cloth. "When the child was black and ugly," Varella writes, "he was usually carried in this fashion. If, however, he was a *coisa mais limpa* (literally, 'a cleaner thing'), he was borne in front, in his mother's arms, so that all the world might the more readily see him."

This desire "to marry whiter" is not limited to the female portion of the black population. Successful males here, as in Haiti and the United States, generally seek to insure further their status and that of their children by marrying lighter-

---

[1743]

[37] Of twenty-four babies delivered at the free maternity ward of Santa Isabel Hospital from Negro and mulatto mothers, four, an obstetrician thought, would grow up relatively "white," while only two appeared to be completely negroid. Although pigmentation apparently is not fixed at this early period, the appearance of *manchas* (or deeply colored "stains," called in popular speech *genipapo* after a common Brazilian fruit of a similar coffee-brown color), on either the back or buttocks is, in Bahia, commonly considered an index of subsequent dark pigmentation over the entire body. Three of the babies from dark mulatto women and one whose mother was a light mixed-blood showed no evidence of *manchas*. One dark mulatto mother, when requested, removed her child's clothing and proudly displayed his back free from these marks. The obstetrician, with a smile and a friendly pat on the mother's shoulder, inquired, "It's father was white, wasn't he?" The colored mother, pleased, replied, "I have five other children like him, all without *manchas*."

* 563

[826] colored women. A common expression heard in this connection is: "I don't want to go back to Africa."

Race mixture is further favored in Bahia today by the economic and social position of the occasional immigrant, usually from Portugal or Spain. Ordinarily from the lower class, he arrives unattached, poor, and with little or no education. He meets a rigid class line and, at least during the first years, before he gains some measure of economic competence, is ordinarily cut off from a better class marriage. Moreover, in many cases he conceives of his stay as temporary. Many immigrants, especially among the Spanish, have left families in Europe to whom they expect to return once they have accumulated a sizable competence.

* 563 583 In his struggle to gain a footing, the immigrant soon discovers that the lower-class black or mixed-blood woman is a valuable assistant. She may become his cook and housekeeper, supplement his income by taking in washings or by preparing and peddling food delicacies, and ordinarily demands little in return. So frequently do such unions occur, especially among Portuguese immigrants, that the Portuguese have come to be popularly regarded, not only in Bahia but throughout Brazil, as peculiarly attached to Negro women.

[441] However, as we have indicated, not all immigrant men living *amancebados* with Negro women are from Portugal. A number of the *vendas*, or small grocery stores, scattered about Bahia are owned by Spanish immigrants, many of whom live with Negro women, as similarly does occasionally an Italian, an Englishman, an American, or a German.[18]

---

[18] A German who had been manager of a nail factory in Bahia returned a few years ago to Germany. For sometime thereafter a Negro woman with whom he had lived and their son received 200 milreis regularly each month

BB
563*

One reason why race mixture in Bahia is more extensive than in the United States is that in Bahia it goes on by legal intermarriage in a less restricted way than with us. Although interbreeding between individuals from extreme ends of the color scale is largely extra-legal, intermarriage becomes more frequent as the colors approach along this continuum.

B
BB
563*

The general tendency is for the predominantly European portion of the population to absorb the lighter mixed-bloods while the mulattoes in turn absorb the blacks. This means that the Brazilian population is constantly becoming more European, less negroid, in appearance, a tendency which is referred to by local intellectuals as "progressive Aryanization." As Oliveira Vianna has said: "Podemos já assignalar . . . . uma tendencia que cada vez mais se precisa e define: a tendencia para a aryanização progressiva dos nossos grupos regionaes. Isto é, *o coefficiente da raça branca eleva-se cada vez mais em nossa população.*"[31a]

B
BB
[596]
B
BB
[593]

Family ties are, as we have noted, tenacious. Loyalty to the clan still today transcends loyalty to the state, the church, or any other institution. There is strong personal attachment between white parents and colored offspring, both legitimate and illegitimate, and these ties obviously place the mulatto in an advantageous position for social advancement.

It is commonly thought in Brazil that the Brazilian

---

from Germany. The man also sent money to a second Negro woman, her two girls and a boy, for whom he, while still in Brazil, had built a comfortable home.

[31a] "A progressive whitening of our population is clearly evident. In other words, the proportion of white blood is constantly increasing" (*Evolução do povo brasileiro* [2d ed.; São Paulo, 1933], p. 172). See also João Pandiá Calogeras, *Formação historica do Brasil* (3d ed.; São Paulo, 1938), p. 36.

B
* BB
563 mixed-blood is superior in vitality to both ancestral stocks.[39] The mulatto, being a "native plant," is popularly considered to have been better acclimated than either the European or the African. The Indian-white mixed-blood, concluded Colonel Artur Lobo da Silva of the Brazilian Army Health Service on the basis of a study which he made, is physically superior to both the white and the native Indian.[40]

B
* BB
563
16 There is some evidence, however, that the Brazilian mixed-blood is less resistant than the European and the black to certain diseases, for example, tuberculosis. Comparative statistics given for Bahia some years ago by A. Pacifico Pereira support this hypothesis. Although the percentage of *mestiços* in Bahia in 1904 was given as 35.1 per cent, the percentage of mixed-bloods among those dying from tuberculosis in that year was 49.0 per cent; while the whites, presumably 31.4 per cent of the population, furnished only 21.4 per cent of the deaths from this disease; and the blacks, who were 26.3 per cent of the total population at that time, furnished 26.9 per cent.[41] To resolve the problem of the vitality of the Brazilian mixed-blood in comparison with his parent-stocks would seem to require more extended research.

BB
* 563 The most obvious effect of miscegenation is to reduce physical differences between the races. In Bahia intermixture has now, for more than four hundred years, been breaking down physical barriers and reducing that visibility which

---

[39] See, e.g., Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 163.

[40] "A anthropologia do exercito brasileiro," *Archivos do Museu Nacional* (Rio), XXX (1928), 33.

[41] A. Pacifico Pereira, *A tuberculose na Bahia* (Bahia, 1904), p. 15. The remaining 7.2 per cent of the population were resident aliens, who accounted for 2.7 of the deaths from tuberculosis.

BB
563*

in the United States always serves to call out the traditional responses long associated with variations in social status.

BB
[826]

Today there exists in Bahia the belief that the population is gradually but persistently "whitening," a conviction difficult to understand, given the heavy preponderance of Africans among the population which originally migrated to this area and the negligible number of European immigrants in recent times.

BB
563*
165

The probable greater mortality of blacks may in part account for this change. According to a recent unpublished study, the infantile death rate among the lower classes in Bahia, which, as we have seen, are principally black and dark mulatto, is approximately twice that of the upper classes; and, in 1932, deaths under five years of age constituted nearly one-third of all deaths for that year (1,698 out of 5,407). At the same time there does not seem to be any marked difference in fertility between the races.

BB
[842]
B

BB
563*
826

At any rate, Bahians frequently comment on an appreciable change in the color of the population within their memories. One continually hears remarks like that of a mixed-blood citizen who said:

> Formerly, the *pretos* (blacks) were the most numerous group in Bahia, the *pardos* (browns) next, and the *brancos* (whites) last. Today, the *pardos* are in the majority, the *brancos* next, and the *pretos* last. I am convinced that before long the *pretos* will have completely disappeared. The *brancos* will soon overtake and, in the course of time, completely absorb the *pardos*.

The mixed-bloods tend to look upon themselves as transition points in an inevitable whitening process. Pride in the present advanced stage is common, and the end result is eagerly anticipated. From the mulattoes, as from the whites, one frequently hears the declaration: "We Brazilians are

B
BB
*563
826

rapidly becoming one people. Some day not far distant there will be only *one* race in our country."

On visiting Brazil, Theodore Roosevelt once wrote: "Perhaps the attitude that the Brazilians, including the most intelligent among them, take is best symbolized by a picture which we saw in the Art Museum in Rio. It portrayed a black grandfather, a mulatto son, and a white grandchild, the evident intention of the painter being to express both the hope and the belief that the Negro was being absorbed and transformed so that he would become a white man." Quoting a Brazilian statesman, Roosevelt continued: "You speak of Brazil as having a large Negro population. Well, in a century there will not be any Negroes in Brazil, whereas you will have twenty or thirty millions of them. Then for you there will be a real and very uncomfortable problem, while for us the problem in its most menacing phase will have disappeared."[44]

B
BB
*563
659
[114]
[162]

It is difficult to check this general impression that the population is constantly becoming more and more European in appearance. Reliable statistics on the present distribution of the various ethnic groups are not available. No adequate data of this sort have recently been compiled by any agency. The last Brazilian census to include racial categories was taken a half-century ago, in 1890. At that time the racial division in Bahia was given as: *brancos*, 32.0 per cent; *pretos*, 26.4 per cent; and *mestiços*, 35.1 per cent.[45]

3
BB
[826]

Vital statistics, however, are still recorded in the city by

---

[44] *Outlook*, CVI (February 21, 1914), 410-11.

[45] *Caboclos* were given as 6.5 per cent. It is difficult to understand how so large a number of Indians, or Indian mixed-bloods (the term is variously used at different times and in different places in Brazil), could have at that time existed in the city of Bahia.

B
BB
563*
659
826

color categories, three being officially recognized: *branco*, *preto*, and *pardo*. These classifications are based upon physical appearance, the principal criteria being pigmentation and hair texture. Racial intermixture has now proceeded to the point where public officials say no attempt is made to indicate ethnic distinctions. Thus the *branco* category includes many light mulattoes and the *preto* category many dark mixed-bloods.

B
BB
563*
826
171

These official color divisions directly reflect popular distinctions. It is therefore important to note that their usage indicates a shift in criterion from racial descent (as in the United States) to physical appearance; and physical appearance is a characteristic which miscegenation tends continually to modify. Whereas in the United States one drop of Negro blood, if it be known, makes a man a Negro, in Bahia many individuals are listed in the census as white (and, one might add, are so considered by their friends and associates) whose grandmothers were Negroes of pure African descent.

BB
563*
826
[291]

For instance, the grandmother of a *branco* politician who holds a responsible position in the Rio government, and who himself shows no noticeable traces of Negro ancestry, is said to have been a black woman who wore on Bahia's streets "a *saia grande* and a *panno da Costa*."[44] The *branco* wife of a prominent physician, fair and blue eyed, similarly had an African grandmother. A former governor, to all appearances white and so considered throughout the community, is only two generations removed from an African forebear. Cases might be cited indefinitely similar to that of a Bahian who, referring to a prominent local woman invariably con-

---

[44] Elements of the distinctive costume, partially African in origin, which is worn in Bahia by Negro women (see chap. ix.).

* 563 826 sidered white, casually commented: "I learned the other day that she has a Negro grandmother. Someone who knew her family twenty years before she was born showed me a picture of the woman. The grandmother was as black as coal."

That such discovery led, and will lead in all similar cases, to no alteration in the social standing of the individual involved, to no modification in the social esteem in which he or she is held, is a significant indication of the character of the Brazilian racial situation as compared with that in the United States, for example, where a similar revelation would create a scandal. "We never go very far into a person's past," explained another Bahian. "That would be impolite."

The meaning of the term *branco* (white) in Bahia is, as we have indicated, a significant index of the racial situation. [217] A recent comparison of the classification of the first five hundred individuals listed as *brancos* in the files of the Gabinete de Identificação with the photographs (one, sometimes two, occasionally three) attached to the individual's identification record,[45] indicated that the racial probabilities were as given in Table 2.[46]

* 563 826 It is clear that many individuals are considered white at Bahia who not only have Negro ancestors but whose physical characteristics definitely attest this fact. The old saying, "Quem escapa de branco, negro é" ("Who can't be a white

---

[45] An identification card is required of all students, travelers, applicants for licenses, etc.

[46] Considering the means employed, one must allow perhaps for some error in the result. But the photographs had received no "retouching." And even if color distinctions were still somewhat subject to misinterpretation, hair texture and facial characteristics were rather readily distinguishable. It is quite probable that what error did occur was in the form of an understatement rather than of an exaggeration.

563 *

man is a Negro"), has now been largely replaced by, as 826
Freyre says, the "more Brazilian saying": "Quem escapa de
negro, branco é" ("Who isn't a Negro is a white man").

With due regard, then, to such qualifications regarding 563 *
the precise meaning of *branco* as these facts suggest, we may 826
note that the classification of births in Bahia in 1932 indi- 162
cated the color distribution to be as given in Table 3.

TABLE 2

PROBABLE ETHNIC ORIGIN OF THE FIRST FIVE HUNDRED INDIVIDUALS LISTED AS *Brancos* IN THE FILES OF THE GABINETE DE IDENTIFICAÇÃO, BAHIA, 1937 [217]

Probability	Number	Per Cent
Whites	340	68.0
Mulattoes*	95	19.0
Indian-white mixed-bloods†	39	7.8
Indian-white-Negro mixed-bloods†	26	5.2
Total	500	100.0

* Individuals with the following physical characteristics were noted: (1) nose very broad, lips very full; (2) dark skin, hair almost kinky, lips thick; (3) skin *café com leite* ("coffee with milk"), hair exceedingly curly; (4) hair almost kinky; (5) lips full, nose broad, considerable prognathism.

† Ordinarily only slight traces of Indian ancestry evident in each case.

Since the total registration of births for each of these 563 *
years averages slightly in excess of five hundred in a city of 163
an estimated 360,000, the records are obviously incomplete. 114
Many midwife deliveries go unrecorded; and, since these [565]
births occur usually among the lower classes, which are [162]
largely black and dark mulatto, the relative color percent-
ages are probably skewed toward the white pole.

Deaths are less likely to go unrecorded. But since deaths 165
563 *

*165
563

occur to a considerable extent among the older generation, they throw no light on the extent of miscegenation in recent times. Consequently, their relative frequencies do not accurately reflect the present racial distribution in the *total* population.

*
563
163

TABLE 3*

BIRTHS ACCORDING TO COLOR, BAHIA, 1932

COLOR	CITY PROPER		OUTLYING VILLAGES		TOTAL	
	Number	Per Cent	Number	Per Cent	Number	Per Cent
Branco	1,482	33.3	65	11.0	1,547	30.7
Preto	659	14.8	114	19.3	773	15.3
Pardo	2,314	51.9	411	69.7	2,725	54.0
Total	4,455	100.0	590	100.0	5,045	100.0

* Source: City records deposited in the Secretaria de Saude e Assistencia Publica da Bahia.

[217]
[127]

*165
*563

TABLE 4*

DEATHS ACCORDING TO COLOR, BAHIA, 1932

COLOR	CITY PROPER		OUTLYING VILLAGES		TOTAL	
	Number	Per Cent	Number	Per Cent	Number	Per Cent
Branco	1,375	25.4	79	9.8	1,454	23.4
Preto	1,310	24.2	191	23.7	1,501	24.2
Pardo	2,722	50.4	536	66.5	3,258	52.4
Total	5,407	100.0	806	100.0	6,213	100.0

* Source: City records deposited in the Secretaria de Saude e Assistencia Publica da Bahia.

[217]
(127)

Bearing in mind these qualifications, we may note the color distribution among deceased at Bahia in 1932 (Table 4).

Short of a racial census, an adequate statistical statement 563*
of the racial composition of Bahia would probably require an 121
extended sampling of the population in various parts of the 125
city—a procedure not feasible under the limits of this study. 162
Samples readily obtainable at the numerous festivals such as [796]
Segunda Feira do Bomfim, Conceição da Praia, the Vespers of Reis, etc., are not practical for the reason that participation of one or another of the ethnic components is ordinarily out of proportion to its size in the general population. But at Carnival, when nearly the entire population frequents the public thoroughfares, this difficulty disappears. A new obstacle arises, however, in the form of a considerable infiltration of population from surrounding areas. And since the whites are ordinarily from the upper-income groups and consequently more able to travel, the white percentage of the city's population is probably at that time swollen beyond its
normal proportion. The "Micarêta," or second Carnival, [796]
held one week after Easter, avoids this latter disadvantage. Of five thousand people noted among the participants in the "Micarêta" for 1936, the racial percentages appeared to be those given in Table 5.

Thus one can perhaps confirm the common-sense judg- 563*
ment of Bahian citizens to the effect that at least half, and 162
perhaps more, of the population is now noticeably mixed, that both biologically "pure" whites (but not "whites" in the social sense) and biologically "pure" Africans are relatively few in number.

563*
Some notion of the change in physical characteristics by
generations, at least among members of the lower classes, 142
may be had from a study of five hundred cases of mothers 125
and their offspring applying at Bahia's free children's

*

[142] clinic.[47] The offspring of 221 black and 200[48] mulatto moth-
[125] ers appeared to vary from their mothers as indicated in
Table 6.

Since cases in which only obvious variations appeared
were recorded as differing, the data would indicate a rather
noticeable variation by generations. At least this is true in
[836] so far as mothers are concerned. Accurate information on
fathers is difficult to obtain, since, in the section of the population whence these cases come, one finds extensive cohabitation without formal marriage, either civil or religious.

TABLE 5

ETHNIC ORIGIN (AS DETERMINED BY INSPECTION) OF FIVE THOUSAND PARTICIPANTS IN THE "MICARÊTA" FESTIVAL, BAHIA, 1936

[162]

Racial Identity	Number	Per Cent
European	1,585	31.7
Negro	900	18.0
Mulatto	2,495	49.9
*Cafuso**	20	0.4
Total	5,000	100.0

* The term *cafuso* is employed to designate an individual of mixed Indian and Negro descent.

So widespread has the dispersion of African blood in the predominantly European group now become that relatively few families in Bahia are of undiluted European origin, without African strain somewhere in the lineage. This mixture of the races in Bahia is in some respects similar to the

---

[47] Since pigmentation, it is presumed by local physicians, does not become "fixed" until approximately six months after birth, children under one year were eliminated from the tally.

[48] Seventy-nine children were white of white mothers.

563*

mixture of the nationalities in the United States, where old families of pure English descent have for some time been mingling their blood with that of Germans, Scandinavians, Slavs, and the Mediterranean peoples. "Even if one marries a person who does not himself possess some African blood," said a young lady of the upper class, "this same individual will have cousins or other relatives of African descent. Somewhere there will be a connection."

"It is very hard to say a man doesn't have some Negro blood coming from somewhere in his recent or remote past," said a prominent *branco* lawyer and politician. "Take myself, for instance. I can't say for certain that my grandparents didn't have African connections. 'Quando não vem de perto, vem de longe' ['If it isn't close, it's distant']."

TABLE 6

VARIATION IN PHYSICAL CHARACTERISTICS BETWEEN CHILDREN AND THEIR MOTHERS,* BAHIA, 1936

[162]
[142]

CHILD	MOTHER			
	Black		Mulatto	
	Number	Per Cent	Number	Per Cent
Color lighter, hair "straighter"	55	24.9	45	22.5
Color lighter	12	5.4	34	17.0
Hair "straighter"	12	5.4	20	10.0
Color lighter, hair more kinky	0	0.0	2	1.0
Color darker, hair "straighter"	0	0.0	1	0.5
Color darker	0	0.0	3	1.5
Hair more kinky	0	0.0	3	1.5
Color darker, hair more kinky	0	0.0	1	0.5
No noticeable variation	142	64.3	91	45.5
Total	221	100.0	200	100.0

* As determined by inspection.

The widespread dispersion of Negro blood in the *branco* group obviously makes it difficult for its members to draw sharp, clear-cut racial distinctions. Relatively few pure Europeans, as we have seen, exist. And if rigid distinctions were made between those individuals who appear to be European and those who in their color and features indicate some African lineage, the dividing-line would in many cases pass directly through family groups. The natural ties which ordinarily grow up between parents and offspring, and between brothers and sisters, constantly militate against such invidious distinctions. In like manner, similar ties in the United States tend to undermine nationality distinctions and to fuse together in sentiment and attitude individuals of, for example, English, Danish, French, Czech, and Italian origin. "It's difficult to keep the colors distinct in Bahia," said a *branco* educator. "Look at this boy of mine; he's white! And this girl; she is, you might say, a bit of a *mulata!*" A prominent political figure who is commonly considered white but shows slight traces, especially in his hair, of African ancestry, has a wife who also is considered white but similarly possesses slight indications of African origin. Of their nine children, all except three, possibly four, could readily "pass" in the United States. Each of the others shows slight evidences of African lineage. Said the father playfully, as he caressed a small daughter, "Here's a typical *mulata*." The sense of this remark seemed similar to that of a father in the United States saying, "Look at my little blue-eyed girl," or "Here's a real brunette."[49]

Thus miscegenation, whether by way of legally constituted marriages or otherwise, extends personal relations to the point where they inhibit the rise of caste prejudice. Natural ties, personal and familial, grow up to cement with common bonds of sentiment individuals from both racial stocks. 563*

---

[49] Occasionally, children are more negroid than either parent. For instance, the daughter of a Portuguese immigrant and a Brazilian-born *branco* wife has a "yellowish complexion," lips somewhat thick, and nose strongly suggesting the Negro. But the myth of the so-called "throwback," or black child born to near-white parents, is apparently unknown.

"Racial intermixture has had a long history, a history older than civilization itself," commented Theodoro Sampaio, a prominent Bahian mixed-blood.

> Wherever the conquering Romans went, mixture occurred. Spain and Portugal for centuries interbred with the Moors; Italy, Greece, and the Mediterranean isles, all early mingled their blood with that of Africa. In Crete—that old center of ancient civilization—are statues of men with crinkly (*crespo*) hair. The Gothic hordes which overran Europe as the Roman Empire was crumbling were themselves much mixed; and wherever they went they added their blood to that of the peoples whom they conquered. Race-crossing is obviously no new thing; it has been common the world over wherever races have come together. How natural, then, that Brazil should blend her races into one, and that we Brazilians should become *one* people.

Among the mixed-bloods there is still a wide range of variation in physical type. The distribution, however, is probably skewed toward the Caucasian pole. Indian traits have virtually disappeared, the native element having been almost completely absorbed into the predominantly European population. The occasional traces of Indian characters which are still discernible are usually found in combination with Negro characters and are probably a consequence of the recent migration into the city from the *sertão* of predominantly negroid individuals of partial Indian descent. 563* 142

To designate some of the intermediate types which extensive intermixture has now produced, a number of popular expressions have arisen. These terms describe the variations more accurately than do the official categories. The latter, as we have seen, are limited to three: *branco*, *preto*, and 563* 142 826

*

563
142
826

pardo; but common speech adds *cabra* (or *caibra*), *Cabo Verde* (*Cape Verde*), *sarará*, and *moreno*.

The *cabra*, or *caibra*, is slightly lighter in pigmentation than the *preto* and has hair a little less kinky. The *Cabo Verde* is very dark, with Caucasian features and black, glossy, "straight" hair. The infrequent *sarará* is light in color, with hair red (or sandy) and kinky. The *moreno*, many Bahians say, is the new physical type which Brazil is developing.

*

563
142
826
832

Quite significantly, the *morena* (or feminine *moreno*) is the "ideal type" of Bahian femininity. She is in many cases an individual of remarkable beauty. Typically, she has dark-brown eyes and dark hair, quite wavy, perhaps even curly, and Caucasian features; her color is *café com leite* (literally, "coffee with milk"; i.e., like that of one "heavily tanned"), and she has a healthy appearance. The term *morena* is seldom mentioned to a Bahian male without there appearing an instant change in his expression. His face "lights up," and a smile breaks on his lips. He pronounces *morena* with a tone indicative of admiration, affection, desire.[10] He seems pleased, happy in the contemplation of an agreeable object. Poets, both professional and amateur, pour out passionate stanzas in her honor,[11] songs are sung to her,[52] romances written.[53] Of 146 male students responding to the query, "All things being equal, whom would you prefer to marry, a *branca*, a *morena*, a *parda*, a *preta*," 117, or 80.1 per cent, replied "a *morena*." Similarly, of 93 white female students responding to a like question, 80, or 86 per cent, preferred a *moreno* for a mate. 563* 142 826 832 [582]

---

[10] The *morena* has the reputation of being more desirable than lighter Brazilian women; she is commonly described as "more *ardente*" (passionate), "more *adstringente*" (clinging).

[539]

[11] As, for example, the following:

Elsa . . . .
Number One girl,
Pretty little "*paca*" [small Brazilian
animal]
Caboclo-colored butterfly,
Splendidly "*morena*." . . .

I danced the "*cateretê*" *samba* with Elsa,
Her warm flesh quivering,
Her breasts full, almost exploding,
Inside her little white blouse.
And then she fell into *my arms* willingly, voluptuously,
Her eyes like burning coals,
Her ruby lips
Glued to mine in delirious pleasure.

Ah! Ah! mad girl!
"Bamba" girl!
Devilish girl!

The *morena* may, or may not, have African blood.[54] But at least in Bahia this category includes many individuals of partial African descent. For instance, a study of five hundred women classified as *morenas* in the Gabinete de Identificação indicated the probable distribution given in Table 7. 563* [125]

It is the opinion of Arthur Ramos[55] that, although "the charms of the *morena* exert a profound sexual attraction" and the regard in which she is held "has a sexual base in the Freudian sense," the present attitude toward the *morena* "grew out of the enthusiasm and the sentimentalism of the abolition campaign. The *morena* expresses in a symbolic way the union of the two races—the black and the white—and the absence of [caste] prejudice." [832]

The *morena* probably constitutes a decided bond be-

---

[52] As, for example, the following:

Beautiful morena,
Morena,
Morena who makes me suffer!
The full moon, so bright,
Is not as luminous as your eyes.
You are a *morena*,
A wonderful girl.
There's not a *branco* who hasn't
fallen for you.

Often,
When you pass by,
Men quarrel over you; [533]
Everyone eagerly anticipates
Your smile. [539]

Your heart is a boarding-house,
A family hotel
Along the seashore.
Oh, *moreninha*, do not rent all!
Leave at least a corner
For me to live in!

[53] A rock on the island of Paquetá in Guanabara Bay at Rio de Janeiro very popular with young lovers, has been dedicated to the *moreninha*. [823]

[54] Pronouncing the word *morena* (or *moreno*) with a certain emphasis or changed inflection indicates darker color. (194)

[55] Stated in personal correspondence with the author.

* 563 tween the races, serving at once as a symbol and as a means of white-Negro union. When, as often happens, marriage occurs between a *branco* and a *morena* some of whose ancestors were Africans, the resulting offspring obviously make it more difficult for white fathers to consider African blood prejudicial—an attitude intensified in the new generation, which actually possesses some African blood.

[125]

TABLE 7

PROBABLE ETHNIC ORIGIN OF THE FIRST FIVE HUNDRED WOMEN CLASSIFIED AS *Morenas* IN THE FILES OF THE GABINETE DE IDENTIFICAÇÃO, BAHIA, 1936

Probability	Number	Per Cent
Whites	131	26.2
Mulattoes	308	61.6
White-Indian mixed-bloods	28	5.6
Negro-Indian mixed-bloods	15	3.0
Negro-White-Indian mixed-bloods	18	3.6
Total	500	100.0

* 563 192 The term "Negro" is seldom heard in Bahia. It is a *palavra pesada*, a harsh, even offensive, term. Its actual meaning is "African," i.e., "foreigner." In this respect it is a term somewhat similar to "Wop," "Dago," "Sheeny," "Greaser." It also implies slave status and hence calls up memories of the harsher aspects of slavery of which the blacks do not like to talk and the whites are ashamed. Its use is therefore "not good form," and one hears it ordinarily employed only in anger, as an epithet. If otherwise used, it must be "with a smile." *Mulato* is coming to have a somewhat similar connotation, and, as a white Bahian put it, "the better people are beginning to use *moreno* instead."

At the same time, *meu negro* ("my Negro"), with its variation 563*
meu nego[16] and diminutive *meu negrinho*, all spoken in 192
soft tones, are terms of endearment used even by whites in [832]
speaking to other whites, especially in cases of great intimacy as, for instance, between lovers. Their use constitutes, [576]
as a Bahian put it, "um modo de tratar bem" ("a way of being nice"). Occasionally one hears these expressions on [571]
the lips of a beggar asking alms of a white and, if he appears well to do, of a mulatto as well. Clerks sometimes employ them in addressing a customer. They appear to call up tender memories of intimate, personal relations like those existent, for example, between Mammy and Scarlett O'Hara in Margaret Mitchell's *Gone with the Wind.*

The term *branco da Bahia* ("Bahian white") is also heard, 563*
although it is ordinarily employed *outside* Bahia. It has ref- 192
erence to the local custom of including many light mixed- 826
bloods in the *branco* category. The phrase *branco por procuração* ("white by proxy") is occasionally used in Bahia but never when speaking to such an individual directly or in his presence. Light mixed-bloods are sometimes referred to as *bem areiadas* ("well sandpapered"); very dark young Negro boys as *pregos* ("nails"); very dark blacks as *pretos retintos* (literally "black blacks," or "black as coal"), and *reclames do pixe* (literally "shouts of tar," i.e., "black as pitch"). The phrase *ele tem genipapo* refers to the possession of *manchas*, as previously noted. Of a person who shows slight traces of Negro ancestry, it is said, "Ele tem dedo na cozinha" ("He has a finger in the kitchen"). Additional descriptive words or phrases include: *de côr escura* ("of dark color"), *de côr*

---

[16] The feminine forms are *minha negra. minha nego*, and *minha negrinha*. [193]

*
563 *morena, de côr branca, de côr parda, de côr preta, mestiço*
192 ("mixed-blood"), and *moleque*.[57]
826 In the Bahian interior four categories are in common use: *branco, moreno, roxo* ("purple"),[58] and *preto*. *Pardo, mulato*, and *negro* are seldom employed. Occasionally, *curiboca* is used in referring to a cross between a *preto* and an Indian.

Indicative of the (as yet) somewhat indeterminate character of these categories are the variations in meaning which several of these terms seem to have for different individuals. For example, *moreno*, an upper-class lady of European descent said, "might for all practical purposes be considered as identical with *branco*," an opinion concurred in by numerous other individuals from the upper class. But a lower-class *preto* thought of *moreno* as "almost identical with *pardo*"; a lower-class *parda* considered a *moreno* more negroid than a *pardo;* while other individuals made a distinction between two classes of *morenos: morenos claros* ("light *morenos*"), and *morenos escuros* ("dark *morenos*").

*
563
826 In classifying a given individual, hair texture is much more important than color of skin. One often hears in Bahia the expression, "Ele é um pouco escuro, mas o cabello é bom" ("He is a bit dark, but his hair is good").

---

[57] Also spelled *muleque*. The word is of African origin and was originally used to refer, as we have seen, to a small Negro boy. It is now occasionally employed in Bahia, without regard to color, in the sense of "street urchin."

[58] The purple tinge of the skin of black individuals under the bright rays of the tropical sun is probably responsible for this expression.

CHAPTER V

INTERMARRIAGE

175
563*

AS WE have already seen, the first Portuguese settlers in Bahia were almost exclusively males and, like the Dutch under similar circumstances in South Africa and in Java, the English in India, and the English and Americans in Hawaii, took native women for wives. It is reported that when Thomé de Souza dropped anchor in Todos os Santos Bay, he found in and about the site on which the city was subsequently founded "more than forty" Portuguese men living with native women.[1] According to legend, De Souza was much indebted to the Indian spouse of one of these adventurers, "the comely Paraguassú," daughter of chief Itaparica of the local Tupinambás, for the eventual success of the settlement.

173
563*

Paraguassú had been living with a Portuguese sailor, Diogo Alvares Correia, who, some years earlier, either was shipwrecked or had deserted ship at this point. He had since that time lived with the Indians on what is now known as Graça Hill, which lies within the present limits of the city, and had founded an extensive half-breed family. With the passing of time he has become a legendary figure to whom living descendants proudly trace their lineage. As given by Alvares do Amaral,[2] the legend appears more plausible than Southey's account[3] and is as follows:

---

[1] Francisco A. de Varnhagen, Visconde de Porto Seguro, *Historia geral do Brasil* (3d complete ed., 4 vols.; São Paulo, n.d.), I, 300. Based on a *Carta* by Nobrega.

[2] *Resumo chronologico da Bahia* (Bahia, n.d.), p. 201.

[3] Robert Southey, *History of Brasil* (3 vols.; London, 1810), I, 30–31.

Diogo Alvares Correia, or Caramurú . . . . was a native of Vianna do Minho, in Portugal. While still a young lad, overcome with the desire to see new lands, he shipped with a vessel bound for India. But the ship was buffeted by contrary winds and finally, lashed by a severe storm, was broken in pieces and cast upon the coast of Brazil at the mouth of the Rio Vermelho near a place called by the Indians *Mairaguiquity* and now known as Mariquita. This was in 1510. The shipwrecked sailors who escaped being eaten by fish served as choice morsels for men, for they were all made prisoners and subsequently devoured by the savage Tupinambás with the exception of Diogo Alvares Correia, who was saved by a young Indian girl, by name Paraguassú, the daughter of Itaparica, the chief of the tribe, who implored her father not to kill this man since she had at first sight become very fond of him; to which appeal the chief was attentive and presented her with Diogo, who then aided the Indians in recovering the spoils of the wreck among which were several kegs of powder and ball, and some muskets. Of the latter he prepared one and began to fire it, shooting down some birds. The flash of fire, the noise of the discharge, and the death of the birds caused great terror among the natives, for they had never before known firearms. Thenceforth they treated Diogo with great veneration, giving him their daughters for concubines, and the chief offering his daughter for a wife. Diogo was given the name of Caramurú-Assú, which in their idiom means "sea-dragon." He was also called "man-of-fire."[4]

In this savage state Diogo Alvares lived for some time, dwelling in a village later called Villa Velha, today the site of Graça until, some eight years later, in 1518, a French ship arrived in Bahia, and he decided to sail back in it by way of France to Portugal. When the ship, filled with a fresh cargo of Brazilwood, set sail again, he and the gentle Paraguassú were on it. Several of his Indian concubines, seeing him leave, swam out after the ship . . . . , among them the charming

---

[4] Antonio Alexandre Borges dos Reis (*Chorographia e historia do Brasil, especialmente do estado da Bahia* [Bahia, 1894], pp. 161-62) records a variant account of Caramurú's rescue: "Paraguassú, chancing upon him hiding in a pocket of a reef into which he had crawled to escape detection, and taking him under her protection, saved his life, he gaining afterwards, thanks to his qualities as a civilized man, the influence which he came so effectively to exercise."

173

Moema, who, exhausted, perished in the billows of the sea. This un- 563*
happy Indian maiden is still today sung by the poets. . . . .

On returning from Europe, Catherina Paraguassú, endowed with a beauty that was first among her people, performed the duty of a true heroine by receiving as her guest the first Governor-general, Thomé de Souza. She and her husband made the native Indians, without the least hesitancy, subject themselves to the Portuguese dominion. And it is from Diogo Alvares Caramurú and Catherina Paraguassú that the ancient and noble house of Garcia d'Avila, so celebrated for its wealth and civic services, is descended.

Subsequent to the arrival of Thomé de Souza, Diogo had [585]
been legally married to Paraguassú. And the church soon [583]
saw to it that most, if not all, of the similarly informal unions [795]
between European men and native Indian women were "regularized in Christian marriage."

Although incoming Portuguese colonists and adventurers 175
had readily entered into informal unions with native women, 583
they appear at first to have hesitated before actual marriage. 585
It was the Jesuits, we are told, who "managed to conquer in 563*
the early colonists the repugnance which they originally held [797]
toward marriages with Indian women."[5] "Most of them [the Portuguese] here," wrote Padre Nobrega from Pernambuco in 1551, "have for a long time kept Indian women from whom they have had children; but to marry them was considered a scandalous thing (*grande infamia*). They are now marrying and assuming a proper life."[6] At any rate, intermarriage eventually became a firmly established custom, sanctioned by both church and state.

Although the scarcity of European women, so notable 175
during the first century of colonization, had by the early 563*

---

[5] Gilberto Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936), p. 302.

[6] Padre Manoel de Nobrega, *Cartas do Brasil, 1549-1560* (Rio, 1886), quoted by Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 302.

*175 563 seventeenth century largely disappeared, Zacharias Wagner at that time observed that unions of Portuguese men with Indian or mixed-blood women were still of frequent occurrence.[7] [829] Capistrano de Abreu records the desire of native women to have children "belonging to the superior race, since, according to the ideas current among them, parentage was important only on the paternal side."[8] Freyre, following Varnhagen, thinks "a decided sexual preference" was involved.[9]

* 563 593 [848] Intermarriage assures to the family relationships of the mixed-blood a relative permanence and continuity not always characteristic of informal unions. Although human beings are responsive to the natural claims of paternity, illegitimate offspring are often denied the regular presence of a father in the family and the relative security in other respects of legitimate children.

175 212 *563 [567] Among the Africans imported into Bahia were numerous individuals possessed, as we have seen, of a cultural equipment superior not only to that of the native Indian but also "to that of the majority of the white colonists .... many of whom were illiterate and the greater portion only semiliterate."[10] In the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries there was so little literacy among the Europeans that "not rarely rich *fazendeiros* in the interior requested their friends on the coast to arrange a son-in-law who, although he had no

---

[7] Alfredo de Carvalho, "O Zoobillion de Zacharias Wagner," *Revista do Instituto Archeologico, Historico e Geographico de Pernambuco*, Vol. XI (1904), quoted by Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 59.

[8] Capistrano de Abreu, *Capitulos de historia colonial* (3d. ed.; Rio, 1934), quoted by Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 59.

[9] *Op. cit.*, p. 59.

[10] *Ibid.*, p. 212.

175
212
563*

other possessions, did know how to read and write."[11] Incidentally, some of these men were light mulattoes.

175
563*
567

The Negro women known in Bahia as "Minas" were famed for their fine physiques, their proud, dignified bearing, and their culinary skill.[12] They were probably Fulahs and Ashantis who were called "Minas" after the name of the Portuguese slave factory on the West Coast known as Forte de el Mina,[13] whence they were imported into Brazil. They approximated the whites in color and features perhaps more closely than any other imported Africans. Araripe Junior writes that they made "excellent companions." "Healthy, ingenuous, and affectionate, it was inevitable," he concludes, "under the precarious conditions of the first and second centuries, that they should dominate the situation."[14] It is probably among these women that the first legal marriages of Europeans with Negro women occurred. In 1730 the governor of Rio de Janeiro, Luis Vahia Monteiro, stated that "there is no Mineiro [gold miner] who can live without a Mina Negro woman. They say that only with them are they lucky."[15] The Minas became not only *amigas* and *mancebas* of the Europeans but eventually *donas de casa* ("housewives").

---

[11] Henry Koster, *Travels in Brazil, 1809 to 1815* (2 vols.; Philadelphia, 1817), II, 178–79.

[12] Braz do Amaral, "Os grandes mercados de escravos africanos," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, tomo especial, *Congresso Internacional de Historia de America* (1927), V, 481.

[13] Arthur Ramos, *As culturas negras no novo mundo* (Rio, 1937), pp. 324–25.

[14] Araripe Junior, *Gregorio de Mattos* (Rio, 1894), quoted by Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 220.

[15] F. J. Oliveira Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro* (2d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 149.

175
*563
567
[583]

Dampier, who visited Bahia in the seventeenth century, knew several Europeans living in common-law marriage with Negro women. By this time the relations were not merely casual affairs. "Many an African woman," we are told, "had managed to gain the respect of her white mate; some through the fear inspired by their *mandingas* (black magic); others, like the Minas for example, by their affectionate natures and womanly qualities."[16] "At least a minority of these women had by this time achieved for themselves . . . . positions as housekeepers to the whites; no longer were they kept in the *senzalas* merely for the physical pleasure of their masters and the increase of his human capital." By the early nineteenth century the marriage of white men with *mulheres de côr* were, we are told, not rare.[17] The women involved, like the Osage Indian women of the United States, for instance, whose oil lands have increased their desirability as wives for white men,[18] often possessed considerable property. Such cases were "commented upon in intimate circles but without acrimony, especially when the excuse proved to be the dowry of the bride."

[581]
[171]

175
*563

Other marriage partners of the whites were mixed-bloods, men as well as women. Gradually, we are told, marriages with mulattoes came "no longer to be disdained as they formerly were, now that the high position of the mulatto

---

[16] Freyre, *op. cit.*, p. 302.

[17] Koster, *op. cit.*, II, 178.

[18] "The white demand for Osage women, who are rich in oil land, is now so great that the Indian agent requires every prospective husband to give a bond, submit to a physical examination, and present character references. White husbands have become so easy to get that they are now considered somewhat less desirable than even Indian men of other tribes" (Ralph Linton, "An Anthropological View of Race Mixture," *Publications of the American Sociological Society*, XIX [1924], 76).

175

and the proof of his moral qualities have led people to overlook the evident contrast of his physical characters, and his black origin is lost sight of in the approximation of his moral and intellectual qualities to those of the white."[19] 563*

In Bahia today people neither think nor talk very much about interracial marriage. It is of no more consequence, perhaps, than interclass marriage or marriage between different nationalities in the United States. Few marriages of any kind cross class lines. Marriages between a member of the upper class, on the one hand, and an individual who has climbed up out of the lower class into an intermediate position, on the other, or between the latter and a member of the lower class, do occasionally take place. But they occur very rarely between individuals from the upper and the lower strata. 563* 565

It is the impression of competent residents well acquainted with the social structure of Bahia that marriages cross race lines more often than class lines; that is, that marriages between individuals from different occupational and income levels within each racial group are less frequent than marriages between members of the different racial groups in the same class. Unfortunately, reliable statistical data upon this important point are not available.

According to the official records, 42 cases of intermarriage occurred at Bahia out of a total of 1,269 marriages during the year and four months from September 1, 1933, to December 31, 1934. Although this figure represents only 3.3 per cent of the marriages recorded, it does not include those cases in which one of the participants, although classified according to local categories as a *branco* or a *branca*, actually 563* 162

---

[19] Jean Baptiste de Lacerda, "The *Metis*, or Half-breeds of Brazil," in *Papers on Inter-racial Problems*, ed. G. Spiller (London, 1911), p. 381.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

*
563
162 has some degree of color in his ancestry. In other words, the white–*branco da Bahia* marriages are omitted.[29] It represents, therefore, the number of intermarriages from the local point of view, but, as a government official pointed out, it does not accurately reflect the amount of actual race-crossing.

*
563
565 Among the whites of the upper classes a definite line is drawn at intermarriage between individuals from the extreme limits of the color scale, just as a line is drawn, and perhaps for the same reason, at marriage between individuals from the lower and upper limits of the class scale. Although such marriages do occasionally occur, they are ordinarily frowned upon. Thus, of 149 students classifying [125] themselves as *brancos* and responding to the query, "Do you object to marrying a *preto?*" 139, or 93 per cent, replied "Yes." Of 140 similar students, 93, or two-thirds, even objected to dancing with a black.

The brother of a former governor of Bahia, scion of a family which traces its lineage back through a long line of colonial and European aristocracy, had never married but had lived all his life with a lower-class Negro mistress. When, on his deathbed, he desired to marry the woman and thus legitimize the children, his family objected so strenuously that the attempt was abandoned. However, opposition was not only on color but also, and more importantly, on class grounds.

Hence, white-Negro *consorcios* which involve a member of the upper class are ordinarily extra-legal, outside marriage. In the upper circles intermarriage becomes more pronounced as the colors approach along the white-black continuum.

---

[29] It is also true, of course, that *branco da Bahia-pardo* marriages are included.

563*
565

No effective opposition appears to an individual with *um pouco da raça* ("a little color"), provided he also possesses the requisite characteristics of upper-class standing.

As we have indicated, marriages between individuals of different colors, like marriages between individuals from the same race, ordinarily take place within class lines. Thus, of twenty-four marriages at Bahia in which one partner was a *branco* or a *branca* and the other a *preto* or *preta*, all the individuals, with the possible exception of one couple, were from the same class. When such marriages occur outside class lines—that is, between individuals from different occupational or income levels—the economic and social advantage, as might be anticipated, will ordinarily be in favor of the white.[11] A *preto*, speaking of the marriage of a certain white woman on the Ilha de Mare to a black, explained, "She got more out of it than he did ['foi mais para ela']. He had money and she didn't."

463
563*
565

Of 72 cases of intermarriage upon which it was possible to secure accurate and relatively complete information, 61, or 85 per cent, were contracted by individuals from the same occupational level. Of the 11 remaining cases in which people married across class lines, in 8, or 73 per cent, the social and economic advantages accrued to the white partner. In the remaining 3 cases, in which white individuals married a spouse from a lower occupational level, the whites were all women, a circumstance probably to be expected, given a social order wherein women are ordinarily at a disadvantage socially and at the same time under pressure to avoid spinsterhood.

434
563*
565

Of 35 cases on which reliable information regarding financial condition was available, only 8 were from the same eco-

[11] To some extent this is also true of intermarriage *within* the same class.

*434

563 565 nomic level. Of the 27 others, in 21, or 80 per cent, of the cases the financial condition of the white was less favorable than that of the colored partner. Of the 6 other cases, in which monetary advantage was in favor of the darker individual, 3 of the whites involved were males, and 3 were females.

One of the males had married the daughter of a respected and widely revered mixed-blood educator, an "authority" on Portuguese grammar, with whom many Bahians of the upper classes had studied and into whose family, by reason of the father's prestige, anyone in Bahia would deem it an honor to be accepted. Moreover, the difference in economic level between the two families was slight. A second had married a "beautiful *morena*" whose physical charm, it is said, readily compensated for the difference in economic status.

* 563 565 [114] [463] [434] In 19 cases of intermarriage on which information was obtained from a town in the interior (Itaquara), 15 were from the same occupational level. In the 4 cases in which one spouse came from a lower social stratum than the other, the social advantage was in each case in favor of the white. Thirteen of the 19 couples came from the same economic level.

One may say that the frequency of intermarriage at Bahia varies inversely with class level. In other words, intermarriage takes place readily in the lower circles, occasionally among whites who are climbing in the class scale, and rarely with whites in the upper class.[33]

When intermarriages involving upper-class individuals do occur, however, "society" does not completely close its doors

---

[33] This generalization does not hold for *brancos da Bahia*, or those mixed-bloods who have passed over into the white category.

563* 565

on the couple. "Some people feel sorry for them and try to treat them as usual; but, especially if the black is from the lower classes, there is always a difference," commented a member of the upper class. If someone marries a person a great deal darker than himself, one hears the phrase "Ele não tem vergonha na cara" (literally, "He does not have shame in his face").

563* 565 554

"But it would be different," added a white upper-class woman, "with Dr. Raul Calogeras,"[33] naming a prominent *preto*, a man of considerable personal charm, with the poise and bearing of a "gentleman," an able engineer for six years in charge of the sanitary service at Bahia and for twenty years at the head of a similar service for the city and state of São Paulo, once a federal senator and friend of the former president of Brazil, Washington Luiz. He is also nationally regarded as the principal Brazilian "authority" on the Tupi language. For years he has been president of an important intellectual and social institution in Bahia among whose membership, principally white, are to be found many of the leading intellectuals of the city. "Several white women whom I know would feel themselves honored to be his wife."

563* 565

The implications of this remark are highly significant, if one would understand the actual racial situation at Bahia. It indicates rather clearly that opposition to marriage with a black is more importantly on class than on racial grounds. When black color comes no longer to identify an individual as a member of the lower class, opposition to him tends to disappear. Virtually no opposition attaches to the marriage of light mixed-bloods into even the upper class, especially if they do not show in their features or color too obvious evidence of Negro origin.

---

[33] The name is, for obvious reasons, fictitious.

*
563
565
In 1914 Theodore Roosevelt wrote of Rio de Janeiro: "In the lower ranks intermarriages are frequent, especially between the Negroes and the most numerous of the immigrant races of Europe. In the middle class these intermarriages are rare, and in the higher class almost unknown so far as concerns men and women in whom the black strain is at all evident. But even in the higher ranks there is apparently no prejudice whatever against marrying a man or girl who is, say, seven-eighths white, the remaining quantity of black blood being treated as a negligible element."[24] Although the Bahian aristocracy has maintained itself as endogamous as any similar group in Brazil, or perhaps even more endogamous, individuals possessing at least some Negro blood are now marrying into its ranks.

*
563
565
554
A dark mixed-blood at Bahia, a prominent and relatively wealthy commercial figure, courted and married a girl from a distinguished white family. A common expression heard in connection with this case of intermarriage and which perhaps sums up in a pithy statement the racial situation at Bahia is: "Negro rico é branco, e branco pobre é negro" ("A rich Negro is a white man, and a poor white man is a Negro"). This is merely another way of saying that class (one criterion of which is wealth), not race, is the primary consideration.

A prominent medical specialist, a dark mixed-blood, has a blond German wife whom he courted and married while a student in Germany. Because of his professional competence, intellectual ability, and personal charm, he occupies a high position in the community. He is a member of the most exclusive social club, membership in which is an infallible index of social status. Since his professional practice is extensive

---

[24] "Brazil and the Negro," *Outlook*, CVI (February 21, 1914), 410.

563 *

and his clients are drawn largely from the élite, he is well to do financially. His wife, it is said, is envied by other white women. 565 [554]

A woman of the upper class when asked if a woman's social standing declined after her marriage to a black or dark mulatto said: "This depends largely on the man. It may; but if he is cultivated and refined, it may not. A woman marrying Dr. Raul Calogeras would not lose caste." [558]

Obviously, then, a distinction must be made between interclass and intraclass marriages. The following reasons given by whites responding affirmatively to the query, "Do you object to marrying a *preto?*" indicate that their objection was basically on class, rather than on racial, grounds:

> Because *pretos* seldom have social standing.
> Because they are ordinarily lower in the social scale.
> Because they are usually crude and stupid.
> Because they belong to a low class.
> Because it would lower me.
> Because I think both should be on the same social level.
> Because black color usually lowers one's social position.
> Because I think social equality is indispensable for marriage.

These statements all reduce perhaps to one general statement: The Negro ordinarily lacks class.

A distinction must also be made between those individuals who are noticeably negroid and those who are *branqueados*, who have only *um pouco da raça*. As an upper-class white woman remarked: "It's different with the lighter shades. You can't easily draw the line between the pure whites and those with only *um pouco da raça*. Race mixture has now become so extensive that there wouldn't be many left to choose among." Very light mixed-bloods often marry whites without any question whatever arising. For instance, the four sons and two daughters of a fam- 563 *

*
563

ily which shows slight traces of African ancestry all married white spouses, *brancos finos* ("genteel whites"), as a friend put it. One married the daughter of a distinguished physician and professor at the Faculty of Medicine. Another married into a prominent upper-class family. A third married a young man whose family possesses considerable wealth and lives in a palatial home in one of the select residential areas. The fourth married a descendant of the colonial aristocracy, now a state deputy, an able lawyer, and professor at the Faculty of Law.

A seventeen-year-old white girl "of good family," after replying in the negative to a query whether she would marry a *preto*, was asked, "How dark a man would you be willing to marry"? After reflecting a moment, she replied, "One about like Reginaldo," naming a light mixed-blood with *bom* ("good") hair.

An important commercial figure shows slight traces of Negro lineage, particularly in his hair. He is intelligent, capable, "dynamic." His wife is white, handsome, of gracious bearing. Their daughter, beautiful, of "charming personality," would pass easily for white anywhere. Her fiancé is almost white, but shows a few traces of Negro lineage.

178
*
563

The rate of interracial marriage is probably increasing, although positive data are not available. As the black and the mixed-blood rise in class, one would expect this to take place. Several individuals from different class levels were quite certain that intermarriage is more prevalent today than formerly. "The races used to stay apart much more than they do now," commented a *preta* cook. "Once in a while a dark person and a white would marry, but it was rare. The whites used to say he was *uma mosca dentro do*

563*
178

leite ('a fly in the milk'). There wasn't so much mixture then."

565
563*

One may perhaps say, then, that black color, although an undeniable handicap to marriage into the upper classes at Bahia (at least when sufficiently obvious to be readily observable) is not an absolute bar and may be overcome with the aid of such advantages as wealth, intelligence, occupational proficiency, beauty, and personal charm. The individual involved will be accepted more on the basis of his mental and social qualities than on racial descent.

However, since a Negro cannot escape his color but, on the contrary, constantly carries with him this indelible badge of low status, he tends to be catalogued by one meeting him for the first time as a member of the lower status group. Only as he simultaneously or subsequently gives evidence of other characteristics ordinarily associated with upper-class standing, such as economic competence, professional skill, educational achievement, "gentlemanly bearing," etc., is this original conception modified; and even then the fact of his being in appearance like a lower-class man remains one of the criteria of him and is undoubtedly a handicap.

It is in the light of this distinction that one perhaps best understands what at first sight appears to be discrimination on the basis of race. Since to a large extent discrimination follows color lines, one is likely to assume its similarity to that which we know in the United States and naïvely posit an automatic relationship between race and discrimination. But if one focuses his attention on those *homens de côr* who have risen in class and who for this reason are no longer subjected to the same prejudices as others of their fellows

*565
563

who have not yet risen, he sees that the connection between race and discrimination is not direct but *indirect;* that not necessarily discrimination on the basis of *race* is involved but discrimination on the basis of *class*, involving in most cases, quite expectedly, individuals of color, owing to the concentration of the darker portion of the population for centuries in the lower status ranks.

Race has undoubtedly been a factor in Brazil in fixing classes and making them, to some extent at least, hereditary. But race as a criterion of class is breaking down, increasingly, as more and more individuals of dark color give evidence of the possession of, or the ability to achieve, other characteristics indicative of superior status. [554] The significant fact is that a black or dark mulatto *can* overcome the handicap of color, *can* overbalance this liability by means of other assets. His social position is not fixed and rigid. It is always subject to change.

[P. 157]

000

IV

RACE AND SOCIAL STATUS

[P. 158 is blank]

CHAPTER VI

THE RISE OF THE MIXED-BLOOD 175

EARLY in the colonial period race mixture resulted 563*
in an intermediate population group in more favor- 567
able position for social advancement. Mulatto slaves, 357
because they were ordinarily chosen by their masters and 554
mistresses for the more delicate and exacting household tasks, to be *mucamas* (maids), *amas de crear* ("mammies"), and other *pessoal de casa* (house servants), early developed into a distinct group apart from the field hands.[1] They were baptized, received the master's name, and often were married in accordance with the prescribed legal and religious practices, thus establishing legitimate families and adding to the social security of their offspring by building up a family tradition.

Many *mulatinhos*, illegitimate children of the *senhor*, 175
learned to read and to write even more quickly than white, 56
legitimate children, outstripping them in preparatory and 848
even advanced studies. The Reconcavo of Bahia yields a [145]
number of such cases.[2] Particularly fortunate, we are told,
were the children of priests. Their fathers, being ordinarily [793]
from upper-class families and possessing money and prestige, transmitted to their offspring, colored as well as white, ad-

---

[1] F. J. Oliveira Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro* (2d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 157; Jean Baptiste de Lacerda, "The *Metis*, or Half-breeds of Brazil," in *Papers on Inter-racial Problems*, ed. G. Spiller (London, 1911), p. 379.

[2] Gilberto Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936), pp. 324–25. The author throughout this chapter is greatly indebted to Freyre's *Sobrados e mucambos* (São Paulo, 1936), esp. chap. vii.

175
56
848
793

vantages of ancestry, social position, intellectuality, and wealth. The professions were readily open to them, and "marriages into the bosom of the most exclusive families"[3] sometimes took place. "More fortunate even than the son of a priest" and "A child of a priest is never unhappy" are expressions still heard at Bahia.[4]

*175
563
567

Significant also was the widespread system of *creação*, whereby colored children who were being reared within the master's house, the so-called *crias*, *irmãos de creação*, *malungos*, *muleques de estimação*, gained position as "persons of the house," somewhat comparable to poor relations in the households of medieval Europe. Often they were seated at the patriarchal table as if members of the family. Some even rode in the family vehicle with their masters.

Owing to the peculiar personal associations in which the mulattoes grew up, they tended to develop certain traits
[157] favorable to their advancement. They were usually more intelligent, we are told, more aggressive, more dexterous, and
[463] more cunning than the pure blacks. Consequently, they were often assigned to the more skilled occupations, such as shoemaking, carpentry, and tailoring, where they developed occupational skills symbolic of greater personal worth than ordinarily attaches to unskilled labor.

Because they were liberated in preference to the blacks, the mixed-bloods, early in the colonial period, began to enter the free classes.[5] The disproportion between black

---

[3] Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 324.

[4] "The social ascension of children of priests, both white and light mixed-blood, has always occurred with great facility" (*ibid.*, pp. 323-24).

[5] In addition, the king of Portugal in 1773 intervened in their behalf, denouncing those persons "so lacking in the sentiments of humanity and of religion" that they still keep in slavery persons "whiter than they are" (Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 327).

BRAZIL SL1

BB
175
563*
567
B
175
162
563*
567

and mulatto slaves noticeable even before 1800, had by the end of the first quarter of the nineteenth century become great. In 1822, for instance, the free blacks in Maranhão were reckoned at 9,308; the free mulattoes, at 25,111. Only 6,580 mulattoes were still in bondage as compared with 77,954 blacks. Thus, in this important center of Negro concentration, over three-fourths of the mixed-bloods had by 1822 been emancipated, whereas approximately only one-eighth of the blacks had been liberated. Walsh in 1828 reports that there were at that time in Brazil approximately 160,000 free blacks and 400,000 free mulattoes. In 1835, among a total of 170,000 mulattoes in Minas Geraes, only 40,000, or less than one-fourth, were reported to be slaves; while 250,000 out of an estimated 305,000 blacks, or approximately five-sixths, were still in bondage.[4] Although no figures are available for Bahia, it is likely that similar proportions held here also.

BB
[175]
[162]
[563]*
[567]

These numerically important liberated mulattoes began their rise in social rank by becoming small farmers (*lavradores, sitiantes*), or artisans (both rural and urban), street merchants, small shopkeepers, etc., taking their places beside those lower-class whites who either had not yet risen or did not possess the requisite ability to rise.

BB
563*
463
175

Free blacks, as well as free mulattoes, were able to establish themselves in manual occupations more readily than their brothers in the United States because the descendants of Europeans in Brazil have ordinarily looked down upon manual labor, as attested by the common saying: "Trabalho é para cachorro e negro" (work [that is, hard manual labor] is for Negroes and dogs). "Whatever may have been the en-

BB
175
563*
463
461

---

[4] Maurice Rugendas, *Voyage pittoresque dans le Brésil*, trans. from the German by de Colbery (3 vols.; Paris, 1835), p. 27.

B
BB
*175
563

463 ergy exerted by their immigrant fathers, creoles [native Bra-
461 zilians] ordinarily imbibed the colonial prejudice against labor, and assumed the airs of gentlemen." Free men of color
B entering agricultural or artisan employment "in no way
BB aroused the jealousy of Europeans."[7]

175 The mobility of the Brazilian population in the colonial
565 period, both vertically and horizontally, facilitated climb-
55 ing. Changes in status during the lifetime of a given individual were common phenomena and at times even precipitous, a condition reflected in the common saying "Pae taberneiro, filho cavalheiro, neto mendicante" ("Father an innkeeper, son a squire, grandson a beggar"). Endogamy among the rural aristocracy, even in such *fidalgo* centers as Bahia and Pernambuco, was never absolute. Clerks and small merchants in the cities, immigrant peddlers in the interior, modest proprietors of small farms, owners of small
B herds of cattle—all aspired to, and some succeeded in attain-
BB ing, the ranks of the rural aristocracy.[8]

*175 Similarly significant was freedom to move in space. For
563 in areas distant from those of their birth, light mulattoes of
567 slave origin often managed to pass for individuals born of
463 free parents. They were thus able readily to strip from themselves the social stigma of servile origin. One of the functions of the *bandeiras* and the *monções*[9] was to assist ambitious individuals to whom migration and the freedom of the frontier appeared to offer the most rapid and successful means of social advancement. Many mixed-bloods sought out new homes and became settlers, stock-raisers, small

---

[7] H. A. Wyndham, *The Atlantic and Slavery* (London: Oxford University Press, 1935), pp. 249–50.

[8] Vianna, *op. cit.*, p. 153.

[9] The *bandeiras* (also called *monções*) were groups of hardy explorers and frontier fighters who explored the interior or raided Indian villages for slaves.

B
SB

175 *

senhores de engenho, fazendeiros, etc.[10] Often they were runaway slaves.[11] In the cities they became masons, cobblers, tinsmiths, soldiers, actors, and at times reached even the small bourgeosie.[12] 563 567 463

B
SB

The mulatto, owing to his closer approximation in physical characteristics to the European, was better able than the Negro to appropriate certain symbols of status—the small shoe and the little boot, for instance, the wearing of which was an important index of social standing in colonial and imperial Brazil.[13] Small feet, particularly among women, were for a long time, and still are, fashionable. 175 563* 565 291 826

As the mulatto rose in class, he came to occupy something

---

[10] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, pp. 190–91, 205, 238.

[11] "I heard of a mulatto slave who ran away from his master; and in the course of years had become a wealthy man, by the purchase of lands which were overrun with cattle. He had, on one occasion, collected in pens great numbers of oxen which he was arranging with his herdsmen to dispatch to different parts for sale, when a stranger who came quite alone, made his appearance, and rode up and spoke to him, saying that he wished to have some private conversation with him. After a little time they retired together; and when they were alone the owner of the estate said, "I thank you for not mentioning the connection between us, whilst my people were present." It was his master, who had fallen into distressed circumstances, and had now made this visit in hopes of obtaining some trifle from him. He said that he would be grateful for anything his slave chose to give him. To reclaim him, he well knew, was out of the question—he was in the man's power, who might order him to be assassinated immediately. The slave gave his master several hundred oxen, and directed some of his men to accompany him with them to a market, giving out among his herdsmen, that he had thus paid a debt of old standing, for which he had only now been called upon" (Henry Koster, *Travels in Brazil, 1809 to 1815* [2 vols.; Philadelphia, 1817], I, 244–45). B

BB

[12] Vianna, *op. cit.*, p. 143. In 1774 a law opened to *homens pardos* access "to all offices, honors and dignities, without discrimination on account of difference in color" (*Annaes da Biblioteca Nacional*, XXXVII [1913], 85). See also Pedro Calmon, *Historia social do Brasil* (3 vols.; São Paulo, 1937–39), I, 168. [671]

[13] "The use of shoes and little boots, which was at first almost entirely limited to persons recently arrived from Portugal, spread among those men

B
BB

175 As the
*563 mulatto rose in class, he came to occupy something
analogous to a middle position distinct from either that of
701 the dominant European or that of the subject African. In
B the colonial period, "to appease the repugnance felt by
BB whites at being put on the same level with mulattoes,"[14] the
[794] latter were segregated for military duty. Thus separate battalions were organized at Bahia and elsewhere for whites, for *pardos*,[15] and for *pretos*.[16] Similarly, separate church organi-
B zations arose for *pardos* (Palma, Guadaloupe, Boqueirão) as
BB well as for *pretos*.[17]

175 In the Brazilian rural society of the colonial period
565 Oliveira Vianna identifies three distinct social strata: the predominantly white *senhores* of the upper rank, the pre-
B dominantly mixed-blood free artisans, *rendeiros*, and petty
BB

---

*175 and women of the Brazilian aristocracy who were blessed with small feet.
The difficulties of the blacks, even when serving as pages, to adjust them-
563 selves to this new European and aristocratic style so ill adapted to their
565 large and flat feet, can be easily understood. The mulattoes, on the other
291 hand, who possessed smaller feet, well formed according to the European standard, could adapt themselves more readily to a practice which Handel-
826 mann observed constituted in nineteenth-century Brazil one of the marks of class distinction" (Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, pp. 329–30).

[14] Vianna, *op. cit.*, p. 164; see also his *Populaçoes meridionaes do Brasil* (3d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 140.

[15] In Bahia, the Regimento dos Pardos. See Luiz dos Santos Vilhena, *Cartas*, edited and annotated by Bras do Amaral (2 vols.; Bahia, 1922), pp. 253–54.

BB
[16] In Bahia, as elsewhere, Os Henriques.

[764]
[17] In Bahia, Rosario de João Pereira, Barroquinha, Corpo Santo, Rosario "at the foot of the Pelourinho." Cf. also: "The cemetery for Africans was located next to the Misericordia Cemetery, as one can see from the map made of the city of Salvador and its suburbs by Carlos Augusto Weyll" (J. B. von Spix and C. F. P. von Martius, *Através da Bahia* [excerpts from the larger work, *Reise in Brasilien* (3 vols.; München, 1823–31)], trans. Pirajá da Silva and Paulo Wolf [3d ed.; São Paulo, 1938], pp. 141–42 [translators' note]).

B BB 175

officials of the middle tier, and the predominantly black slaves of the lower stratum.[18] 565 B

The duration of this particular organization was, however, brief. As the color line bent further under pressure of the rising mulatto, certain of the more able or more successful mixed-bloods broke through into the upper tiers. BB [563] * [178]

The development of the cities increased the possibilities for economic advancement to individuals who, like the mulattoes, were noted for their skill as artisans and—what was more important—for their intellectual ability.[19] The rise, after independence in 1822, of the *academias superiores* offered to the more able mixed-bloods possibilities not previously attainable. Since by reason of their mental alertness the mulattoes often excelled, it is said, in those pursuits wherein intellectual ability is an essential for success, the development of these centers of advanced study opened, at least to the ambitious and favored ones among them, ready access to the rising professional classes, especially as *doutores* or *bachareis*.[20] Many promising young mulattoes were aided to a professional training by indulgent white fathers or other relatives and friends among the dominant class. B BB 563 * 555 463 871 175 BB

Of a prominent Brazilian intellectual, Raul Calogeras, whose father was a Bahian planter and whose mother was a Negro slave, we are told: 157 563 *

> Raul was very intelligent, and showed remarkable ability in his studies. It is said that when a very young boy at Santo Amaro, he used to slip away late at night, after his mother's master had gone to bed, to study by the street lamp on the corner near the house. When his father discovered this, he was much impressed, and other signs

---

[18] Vianna, *op. cit.*, pp. 72–73.

[19] *Ibid.*, p. 151; Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, pp. 160–61, 190.

[20] Physicians, lawyers and engineers.

BB

159
*563 of Raul's intelligence and his ability to apply himself multiplied the
interest which his father took in him, and he supplied all his needs.
When his father left the Reconcavo to come to Bahia, he brought
Raul with him, and here, under his tutelage, Raul went to primary
school where he had as white playmates his father's nephews and
others. And later, when his father went to Rio, he took Raul with
him. The boy never left his father's company as long as his father
lived.[31]

Raul was a very dark mixed-blood with kinky hair. He
came to be a prominent citizen and was noted not only for
his fine figure, distinguished bearing, poise, and personal
B charm but also for his intelligence and professional com-
BB petence. At one time he was a much-loved confidant of a
recent president of Brazil.

*563 Significant also, so far as the rise of the mulatto is con-
555 cerned, is the fact that early in the nineteenth century the
565 return of young professional men who had been trained in
571 Europe—in Coimbra, Montpelier, Paris, and other centers—
175 enhanced the prestige of the rising professional classes.
These young lawyers and physicians, among whom were a
[463] number of quite capable mulattoes, were returning to Brazil
after an education abroad, ordinarily more traveled, better
B informed, and more urbane than their brothers or half-
BB brothers on the plantations, in the army, or among the
[177] clergy. They were especially attractive, we are told, to the
upper-class ladies of the time. The importation of fashion-
able articles from the Continent—Parisian haberdashery,
perfumes, hair-dressings, and English shoes—with the use of
all of which these returning young men were quite familiar,
enhanced their standing among the élite. The increasing

---

[31] From a letter to the author from a man reared in the same community as the individual in question and long acquainted with him. For information on the later life of this mixed-blood see Appen. A.

B
BB
563 *
571
565
175

The increasing prestige of youth, accelerated by the popular rule of young King Dom Pedro II, together with the increasing dominance of the cities in which the young graduates located, also contributed to their rise in social esteem.

B
BB
178
563 *
571
565
175

The disruption of the old order based upon slavery, owing to the loss of the sugar monopoly, the increasing dependence of rural *senhores* on their urban agents and commission merchants, and the progress of the abolition campaign, eventually leading as it did to widespread desertion of slaves from the *engenhos*, also facilitated the rise of the professional classes. There was under way a gradual transfer of prestige from the rural aristocracy,[32] which had been almost exclusively European, to the urban intelligentsia, which increasingly included mulattoes, particularly of the lighter shades; for example, Gonçalves Dias, Natividade Saldanha, José do Patrocinio, Machado de Assis, Barão de Cotegipe, Olavo Bilac, Domingos Caldas Barbosa, Salles Torres Homem, Nilo Peçanha, Domicio da Gama, Dom Silvero Gomes Pimenta, Dom Luiz Raymundo da Silva Brito, Tobias Barretto, Antonio Vieira, José Mauricio, Auta de Souza, Francisco Gé Acabaya de Montezuma, the Rebouças brothers, and "hundreds of other Brazilians," as João Dornas Filho says, "whose great mental capacity has brought resounding fame to Brazil."[33]

8
BB
175
563 *
571
[565]

Dom Pedro II elevated to the nobility a prominent mixed-blood who was subsequently known familiarly as "Barão do Chocolate."[34] The Count do Gobineau speaks of meeting

---

[32] For a sketch of the rise of the Brazilian aristocracy see Alan K. Manchester, "The Rise of the Brazilian Aristocracy," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, XI, No. 2 (May, 1931), 145–68.

[33] *A escravidão no Brasil* (Rio, 1939), p. 228.

[34] Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 190.

4: Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SLI

B
B B
*175
563
463
571
B
[644]

The Count do Grobineau speaks of meeting three mulatto ladies-in-waiting to the Brazilian empress, one "marron," one "chocolat eclair," one "violette."[25] Montezuma became a viscount and sat in the national senate, as did also Salles Torres Homem. The best elements of the aristocracy attended the receptions for the noted engineer, Andre Rebouças.[26] His brother Antonio, a federal deputy, on requesting a representative on the crown council for the *população mulata* was heard attentively by the *camara*.[27] Domicio da Gama and the Barão de Cotegipe were long prominent in political and diplomatic circles. Dom Silvero Gomes Pimenta became an archbishop. No musician is said to have been more distinguished at court than the mixed-blood, José Mauricio. Domingos Caldas Barbosa, the son of a Negro woman from Angola, acquired considerable fame in the salons of Rio de Janiero and of Lisbon as a singer of popular songs. The eighteenth-century sculpture of Antonio Francisco Lisboa, better known as Aleijadinho, which may still be seen today in the old churches of Ouro Preto, Sabará, São João d'El Rei, and other cities of Minas Geraes, attracted much favorable comment. José Basilio da Gama, whose *Uruguay* is said to be the best epic poem of the colonial period, the writer, Machado de Assis, and the lyric poet, Antonio Gonçalves Dias, were universally accorded high rank in Brazilian letters. Tobias Barretto was honored as a poet but even more as a jurist and annotator of German philosophical works which he had translated. José de Natividade Saldanha, an able poet, was one of the leaders of the revolt in Recife in 1824.

---

[25] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 354.

[26] Visconde de Taunay, *Homens e cousas do imperio* (São Paulo, 1924), p. 145, noted by Calmon, *op. cit.*, II, 112.

[27] Antonio Pereira Rebouças, *Recordações da vida parlamentar* (2 vols.; Rio, 1870), I, 524, noted by Calmon, *op. cit.*, II, 113.

B
BB
175
463
563*
571

José do Patrocinio became an able editor and wielded a powerful influence in the abolition movement. Joaquim Manoel was a violinist of considerable talent. A number of Francisco Braga's musical compositions achieved acclaim, and he was later invited to teach composition in the National Institute of Music. The Bahian mulatto, Francisco Chagas, better known as "Cabra," carved images with such skill that at least five of them ("Nossa Senhora do Carmo," "São Benedito," "São João e Magdalena," "Nossa Senhora dos Dores," and "Senhor da Redempção") may still be seen in the Igreja do Carmo. Valentim da Fonseca e Silva, popularly known as "Master Valentim," achieved fame as a skilled worker in gold and silver. The mulatto, Jesus, was a notable figure in an influential school of painting which flourished in Bahia in the eighteenth century. Crispim do Amaral, better known by his pseudonym "Falstaff," and Pedro Americo were accepted as among the most competent Brazilian painters of the nineteenth century. Antonio Gonçalves Teixeira e Sousa, Laurindo Rabello, and Gonçalves Crespo, all won acclaim in the Brazilian world of letters, and at least the latter of these three in the Portuguese world of letters as well. The psychiatrist, Juliano Moreira, became director-general of the hospital for the insane in Rio de Janeiro and was elected an honorary professor of the Faculty of Medicine in Bahia. The name of the Hospital João de Deus in Bahia was, in 1936, changed in honor of him to the Hospital Juliano Moreira. Theodoro Sampaio became widely known and respected throughout Brazil as an able engineer, intellectual figure, and linguistic scholar. José Ferreira de Menezes, Monteiro Lopes, Cardoso Vieira, Eliseu Cesar, Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga, and (in more recent times) the Bahian brothers, João and Octavio Manga-

BB
[743]

B
BB
175

463 beira, have all been influential politicians with national repu-
*563 tations. Luiz Gama, mulatto journalist and lawyer, born a
slave in Bahia, became exceedingly popular not only in São
571 Paulo, where he came to reside, but throughout Brazil. At
least one president of the Republic, Nilo Pecanha, had Afri-
b can ancestors.[28]

643 It is said the royal family set the example of social accept-
644 ance of the darker Brazilians and gently rebuked those
*563 whites inclined to be hesitant in the matter. Dom João VI,
in his audiences at São Cristovão, cordially received men of
175 all stations, and the two Pedros (Dom Pedro I and Dom
Pedro II) continued the tradition. Once, at a court ball,
Princess Isabel, noting that a lady had declined to dance
with André Rebouças, herself offered to dance the subse-
B quent waltz with him, "to compensate for the affront to this
BB illustrious man."[29]

175 The range of acceptance was at that time broadening.
178 Formerly only the exceptionally able mixed-bloods, or those
*563 most similar to the Europeans in color, had been incorpo-
rated into the upper circles. But "the prestige of the title
'doutor' began to overcome much of the prejudice which had
been so active and apparently so invincible during three pre-
vious centuries."[30] Similarly, an army uniform, "especially

---

[28] For information in some detail on prominent Brazilian mixed-bloods see Arthur Ramos, *The Negro in Brasil* (Washington, 1939), *passim*.

[29] Calmon, *op. cit.*, II, 114. Affonso de E. Taunay (in a letter to the author) reports the incident thus: "At a court ball the Princess Isabel, Countess of Eu and heir to the throne of Brazil, insisted on dancing with André Rebouças, a mulatto who was almost black (albeit a man of great mental and moral worth), in order to censure the attitude of certain ladies of the court who had objected to him as a dancing partner."

[30] Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro*, p. 145.

B
BB
175
178
563 *
714

Similarly, an army uniform, "especially the gold braid of an officer, Aryanized and 'aristocratized' many mulattoes into whites."[31]

B
BB
175 *
563
567
178
[538]

The rise of the mixed-bloods was also facilitated by the conviction which, since at least the late eighteenth century, had been crystallizing in the minds of Brazilian intellectuals to the effect that the Negroes, whose strong arms and backs had long furnished the country's labor supply, were to a considerable extent the actual builders of Brazil. In prose and poetry not only the toil of the slave but also the creative energies of the free people of color came to be exalted.[32] This appreciation of the African contribution to Brazilian civilization increased with the progress of the abolition campaign. Especially were the *amas* extolled.[33] Much of the abolition sentiment had its sanction in the affectionate gratitude of young aristocrats whom they had reared.

The rise of the mulatto, as also that of the black, was further favored by the gradual, rather than catastrophic, character of the emancipation process which in Brazil released most of the lower stratum of society from servile status gradually and as individuals, under circumstances favorable to the continuance of those intimate personal ties so highly advantageous to a "new freeman." Moreover, final emancipation was not, as in our South, brought about as an incident of civil strife, and the normal relations which had

---

[31] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 318.

[32] See Borges dos Reis, "Colonos indigenas e escravos," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, XXVIII (1902), 61. Note also Alvarengo Peixoto's stanza:

> ". . . . homens de varias accidentes
> pardos, pretos, tintos e tostados
> . . . . os fortes braços feitos ao trabalho."

[33] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 128.

B
BB
175
178
* 563 grown up naturally between the races were never threatened,
567 let alone destroyed, by a program of reconstruction originating from without and imposed by armed conquest. Individual ability, personal ties and family solidarity, instead of external pressure, were the levers of social advancement. The
B rise of the mixed-blood and of the black in Brazil has always
BB had effectively in its favor those sentiments and personal attachments which primary relations tend normally to develop.

175 Such political upheavals as did occur tended to advance
* 178 the mixed-bloods not as a group but as individuals. Thus
563 the overthrow of the monarchy and the rise of the republic
565 marked a definite break with the rural aristocracy and accelerated the rise of a new class, that of the *bachareis* and
463 the *doutores*, among whom were many mulattoes. And, more
669 recently, the recrystallization of the political structure following the "revolution of 1930" found many Bahian mixed-bloods in positions of trust and responsibility, since the new political "ins," who were diligently seeking to solidify their gains and to establish themselves firmly in power, found it expedient to accept such support as was readily at hand.
B Again the mixed-bloods figured prominently, not as a group
BB per se but as individuals belonging to an eligible professional class.

* 175 The role of sex and of romantic love should not be over-
563 looked. The sexual attraction which the mulatto male ex-
832 erted upon daughters of rich and influential European families led quite often to elopement or, occasionally and in-
583 creasingly, to marriage with parental consent.[14] Similarly,

---

[14] "The daughters, the *yáyás* of the *sobrados*, the *sinhás* of the *casas grandes de engenho*, let themselves be kidnaped by these Don Juans, even by such as were plebeian and of color. . . . . Sellin noted the large number of young ladies eloping . . . . during the latter half of the nineteenth century. They were girls whose parents, for reasons of blood or of social position, had

B
BB

175
563*
583
832

the mulatto women profited by the myth of the sexual potency of the hybrid,[15] the high mortality of white women (especially during the nineteenth century), and the consequent successive marriages of elderly patriarchs who sought an increasing degree of sexual stimulation. Cases of "marriages of elderly white men from illustrious families, descendants of barons and well situated in life, with beautiful octoroon, quadroon, or mulatto women who carried themselves like fine ladies and gave evidence of a sexual ardor beyond the ordinary,"[16] increasingly occurred.

B
BB
563*
565
463

Today, the mixed-bloods are gaining a constantly increasing measure of social recognition. Among them are to be found prominent lawyers, jurists, physicians, engineers, politicians, diplomats, priests, educators, business and commercial magnates, musicians, painters, poets, novelists, journalists, planters.[17] In other words, the mulattoes have now penetrated to the top of the class scale.[18]

---

not consented to their marriage with men for whom they had come to feel a sentimental or sexual predilection" (*ibid.*, pp. 156-57). Note also the novel *O mulato* (3d ed.; Rio, 1889), by Aluisio de Azevedo, whose hero is a mixed-blood *bacharel* educated in Europe and enamored of a white girl from a family "full of prejudices of white purity." Gilberto Freyre calls this book "a human document warm with the life of the time."

[15] A popular saying commonly heard in Bahia is: "A white woman for marriage, a Negro woman for work, a *mulata* for sexual intercourse."

[16] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 337.

[17] See Lacerda, *op. cit.*, pp. 381-82; Manoel de Oliveira Lima, *The Evolution of Brazil Compared with that of Spanish and Anglo-Saxon America* (Palo Alto, 1914), p. 39; Rudiger Bilden, "Laboratory of Civilization," *Nation*, CXXVIII (January 16, 1929), 73; Thomas Ewbank, *Life in Brazil* (New York, 1856), p. 267; Professor and Mrs. Louis Agassiz, *A Journey in Brazil* (Boston and New York, 1888), p. 124; Theodore Roosevelt, "Brazil and the Negro," *Outlook*, CVI (February, 1914), 409.

B
BB
[157]
[559]

[18] To accelerate his social climbing, the mixed-blood has developed certain characteristic personality traits: "a pleasant smile and manner, a cordial

B
BB
178

* 563
565

In all probability, the movement was at first largely vertical. When, however, the mixed-blood had gained some economic or professional competence, had definitely established his personal worth, he tended to be recognized as an "exceptional" individual; that is, as a person rather than as a member of a group. As the numbers of these "exceptional" individuals multiplied, the social conventions were subjected to constantly increasing pressure, since it is difficult to treat "exceptional" individuals in situations of intimate social intercourse differently from the way they are treated in intellectual, commercial, or political circles. This "strain for consistency" tends in time to modify conduct.[39]

Thus, as the mixed-bloods rose in class, this upward movement was accompanied by what might be called "horizontal progression." The individual who was rising in rank and establishing himself in the upper intellectual and economic circles began actually to penetrate the "inner sanctuaries" of the more exclusive social groups, breaking down marriage and familial taboos. The class tradition, in so far as it had been fixed by race, gradually began to give way under the irresistible pressure exerted upon it by the rising mulatto group.

B
BB
[155]

This rise was accompanied by the personal stresses and strains which an individual in the process of moving from one class to another ordinarily experiences. The first mulattoes to penetrate the upper tiers reflected in their personal

B
BB
[157]
[557]
[463]

---

show of hospitality, the use of diminutives as a means of being both respectful and intimate at the same time" (Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, pp. 357–58).

[39] Moreover, class interests tended to become more and more important and eventually to bind members of the same class with common bonds of sentiment, attitude, and idea, and thus to cut across lines of color or of racial descent.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1

B
BB

178
563 *
565
155

lives participation in two different, and to some extent antagonistic, worlds which met and fused, so to speak, in their own personalities. They were perhaps, to some extent at least, "marginal men."[40]

The Brazilian mixed-blood was marginal, however, in the cultural rather than in the racial sense. Often he had moved during his lifetime from the lower rungs of the class ladder to the middle or even upper tiers. He had achieved some measure of recognition and was enjoying certain of the advantages of the upper classes. At the same time he was deeply sensitive to his servile origin and to the fact that he inescapably carried with him in his physical characteristics a mark of low status. Thus, Gonçalves Dias was, we are told, throughout his life a melancholy soul. "A wound always bleeding, although hidden under the cloak of a *doutor*. Sensitive to his inferior origin, to the stigma of his color, to his negroid features always shouting at him from his mirror, 'Remember you are a mulatto!' "[41] The mixed-blood became noted for an extravagant use of perfume which seems to have been an overcompensation for the body odor, the so-called *catinga*, or *budum*, reputedly characteristic of the African. At home the mulatto sought to keep out of sight the "*tira-teima* of the family," the relative whose dark color or negroid features too clearly betrayed his "less noble" origin. In an attempt to convince himself and others of his identity with the upper strata, he often developed an "emphatic Aryanism" and became, like Machado de Assis or Olavo Bilac, "a champion of the white against the black."[42]

B
BB
[302]
[147]

---

[40] See Robert E. Park, "Human Migration and the Marginal Man," *American Journal of Sociology*, XXXIII (May, 1928), 881; Everett Stonequist, *The Marginal Man* (New York, 1937).

[41] Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 320.

[42] *Ibid.*, pp. 335, 355, 563; Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala*, p. 324.

B
BB
*178
563
565

It should be noted that, although the light mulattoes have ordinarily set the pace in this struggle to rise and have contributed the bulk of the advancing individuals of color, they have not completely monopolized the advance.[43] They have been followed, and in some notable cases even outdistanced, by individuals from the darker portions of the population. For example, Henrique Dias, the black hero of the expulsion of the Dutch from Pernambuco, was made a member of the nobility and granted membership in the Ordem de Christo.[44] A black is today president of an important intellectual and social institution at Bahia. Another is a member of the most exclusive club. But the appearance of black individuals among the upper classes is still today quite rare. In the attempt to achieve higher standing in the social order, the blacks have had to contend even more decidedly with the handicaps of starting on the bottom and of bearing constantly with them a physical badge of slave ancestry and a symbol of low status.

B
BB
[157]

It is perhaps also true that individuals of African descent, mixed-bloods as well as blacks, have risen in class more slowly than has the Negro in the United States. Being less under the stigma of racial inferiority, the Brazilian blacks and mixed-bloods have naturally had less incentive to demonstrate to a hostile white world their personal competence and ability to achieve. Hence, it is likely that they have been less ambitious, less aggressive, than their northern brothers, and consequently have risen *as a group* less rapidly.

---

[43] See Manoel Querino, "Os homens de côr preta na historia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, XLVIII (Bahia, 1923), 353–63; see also Augusto Victorino Alves Sacramento Blake, *Dicionario bibliographico brasileiro* (Rio, 1893), II, 452–55.

[44] Heinrich Handelmann, *Historia do Brasil* (Portuguese trans. by the Instituto Historico e Geographico of *Geschichte von Brasilien* [Berlin, 1860]; 2 vols.; Rio, 1931), I, 381.

CHAPTER VII

THE PRESENT ETHNIC COMPOSITION OF THE CLASSES IN BAHIAN SOCIETY

463 *
563
[555]
[557]

TODAY one finds at Bahia a freely competitive order in which individuals compete for position largely on the basis of personal merit and favorable family circumstance. Individual competence tends to overbalance ethnic origin as a determinant of social status.

However, the darker portion of the population, as we have already noted, have had to contend with the serious handicap that their parents or grandparents or other immediate ancestors began on the bottom as propertyless slaves of the white ruling class and now bear constantly with them, by reason of color and other physical characteristics, indelible badges of this slave ancestry, ineradicable symbols of low status. It is not surprising, therefore, to find that the relatively unmixed blacks are still concentrated in the low-pay, low-status employments and that they gradually disappear as one ascends the occupational scale, until in the upper levels they are seldom to be found.

But the mixed-bloods, especially the lighter mulattoes, evidence a strong tendency to climb the occupational ladder. Although the darker individuals still occupy very largely the low-pay employments, the lighter mulattoes tend to be concentrated in the middle tier; while a considerable portion, especially of very light mixed-bloods, or *brancos da Bahia*, as they are sometimes called, have penetrated into the upper strata.

*
563
463

The whites, as might be anticipated, are concentrated in the upper levels. Their numbers, both absolute and relative, diminish sharply as one descends the occupational scale, and they appear only in small percentages in the lower tiers.

463
+162
563

TABLE 8

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION IN THOSE EMPLOYMENTS AT BAHIA IN WHICH BLACKS APPEAR TO BE PREDOMINANT, 1936

EMPLOYMENT	SAMPLE	PERCENTAGE				
		Black*	Mulatto	White	*Cafuso*§	Total
Carregadores†	100	93.0	7.0	0.0	0.0	100
Laundresses	200	89.5	9.5	0.0	1.0	100
Carroceiros‡	100	83.0	15.0	0.0	2.0	100
Masons	125	82.4	16.8	0.0	0.8	100
Stevedores	125	81.6	15.2	1.6	1.6	100
Truck helpers	250	81.2	18.0	0.8	0.0	100
Domestics	250	78.8	18.8	0.8	1.6	100
Street laborers	225	78.3	21.2	0.5	0.0	100
Candy-peddlers	100	77.0	21.0	1.0	1.0	100
Cobblers	70	74.4	22.8	2.8	0.0	100
Venders	200	68.5	28.0	3.5	0.0	100
Newsboys	100	68.0	31.0	1.0	0.0	100
Shoe-shiners	50	66.0	32.0	2.0	0.0	100
Streetcar motormen	80	60.0	32.5	5.0	2.5	100
Truck-drivers	150	44.7	43.3	10.7	1.3	100

* It is, of course, possible that individuals with some degree of mixture are included in this category. Color and hair texture were the differentials particularly noted.

† *Carregadores* operate at the port, discharging the functions of porters and baggagemen.

‡ Individuals who own a mule and a two-wheeled cart and transport goods about the city are known as *carroceiros*.

§ Indian-Negro mixed-blood.

Of the employments in which relatively unmixed blacks and mulattoes were found to predominate, those in which there appeared to be more blacks than mulattoes (together with the corresponding percentages) were as indicated in Table 8. The mulattoes in each case were predominantly dark mixed-bloods.

563*
463
162

Of the same employments (in which blacks and mulattoes were found to predominate), those in which there appeared to be more mulattoes than unmixed blacks were as indicated in Table 9.

TABLE 9

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION IN THOSE EMPLOYMENTS AT BAHIA IN WHICH MULATTOES APPEAR TO BE PREDOMINANT OVER BLACKS, 1936

EMPLOYMENT	SAMPLE	PERCENTAGE				
		Mulatto	Black	White	*Cafuso*	Total
Barbers*	150	74.0	20.0	6.0	0.0	100
Band musicians†	98	68.4	23.5	8.1	0.0	100
Street-sweepers	75	62.7	34.7	2.6	0.0	100
Streetcar *fiscais*‡	50	62.0	24.0	10.0	4.0	100
Streetcar conductors	80	58.8	22.5	16.2	2.5	100
Firemen†	100	58.0	32.0	9.0	1.0	100
Bus *cobradores*§	90	54.5	30.0	12.2	3.3	100
Taxi-drivers	85	54.1	31.8	9.4	4.7	100
Police*	150	54.0	32.6	13.4	0.0	100
Bus-drivers	90	50.0	27.8	17.8	4.4	100
Soldiers†	750	48.1	40.5	11.1	0.3	100

* These mulattoes were predominantly light.

† These mulattoes were predominantly dark.

‡ Individuals who check streetcar conductor's records.

§ *Cobradores* are fare-collectors in some cases, changeboys in others.

Of the employments in which whites and mulattoes appear to be predominant, those in which there appeared to be more mulattoes than whites were as given in Table 10.

Of the same employments (in which whites and mulattoes were found to predominate), those in which there appeared to be more whites than mulattoes were as indicated in Table 11.

Thus, the occupational groups found to be composed probably three-fourths or more of relatively unmixed blacks

*

563
463
162

included: *carregadores*, laundresses, masons, stevedores, truck helpers, *carroceiros*, unskilled laborers, domestic servants, and candy-peddlers; those found to be composed perhaps two-thirds or more of blacks (in addition to the foregoing): cobblers, street venders, newsboys, and shoe-shiners; and those composed half or more of blacks (in addition to the above): streetcar motormen.

[701]

TABLE 10

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION IN THOSE EMPLOYMENTS AT BAHIA IN WHICH MULATTOES APPEAR TO BE PREDOMINANT OVER WHITES, 1936

Employment	Sample	Percentage			
		Mulatto	White	Black	Total
Army officers:					
Superior*	33	57.6†	42.4	0.0	100
Inferior	38	47.4	34.2	15.8	100‡
Clerks	350	55.1§	44.6	0.3	100

* The range was from lieutenant upward.

† There were only two dark mulattoes.

‡ *Cafuso*, 2.6 per cent.

§ These mixed-bloods were predominantly light.

The occupational groups which appeared to consist half or more of mixed-bloods, included: clerks, barbers, band musicians, army officers (superior), police, firemen, streetcar conductors, streetcar *fiscais*, taxi- and bus-drivers, bus *cobradores*, and street-sweepers. Approximately two-thirds of the band musicians appeared to be mulattoes, and about three-fourths of the barbers.

Among those occupational groups which are composed probably three-fourths or more of whites were found priests,

*
563
463
162

bank employees, and businessmen;[1] among those two-thirds white (in addition to the above): professors in the Faculdades, lawyers, politicians, and cabaret entertainers;[2] and among those half or more white (in addition to the groups just named): physicians, commercial and government employees, and teachers in the secondary schools.

TABLE 11

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION IN THOSE EMPLOYMENTS AT BAHIA IN WHICH WHITES APPEAR TO BE PREDOMINANT, 1936

EMPLOYMENT	SAMPLE	PERCENTAGE				
		White	Mulatto	Black	*Branco da Bahia*	Total
Bank employees	125	84.0	2.4	0.0	13.6	100
Priests	50	76.0	8.0	0.0	16.0	100
Businessmen	40	75.0	7.5	0.0	17.5	100
Cabaret entertainers	26	73.1	11.5	0.0	15.4	100
Professors (Faculdades)	232	70.3	14.2	0.0	15.5	100
Lawyers	413	67.1	9.7	1.7	15.2	100*
Politicians	60	66.7	11.6	1.7	18.3	100†
Physicians	100	63.0	20.0	1.0	16.0	100
Teachers (secondary)	58	57.0	24.1	3.4	15.5	100
Commercial employees	325	54.8	27.4	1.6	15.3	100‡
Government *funcionarios*	250	45.2	32.8	5.6	16.0	100§

* Indian-white descent, 0.7 per cent; Indian-Negro descent, 0.7 per cent; white-Negro-Indian descent, 0.5 per cent; incomplete records, 4.4 per cent.

† *Mameluco* (white-Indian mixed-blood), 1.7 per cent.

‡ *Mameluco*, 0.6 per cent; *cafuso*, 0.3 per cent.

§ *Mameluco*, 0.4 per cent.

Of the first 500 *brancos* applying in 1935 at the Gabinete

---

[1] If *brancos da Bahia* are included in the white group, one would have to add cabaret entertainers, professors (advanced schools), politicians, lawyers, and physicians.

[2] If *brancos da Bahia* are included, one would have to add physicians, teachers in the secondary schools, and commercial employees.

*
563
463
162

de Identificação for cards of identification, 292 were males. Of these, 213 were classified as students, 17 as businessmen, 11 as salesmen, 8 as government clerks, 8 as commercial employees, 5 as soldiers, 4 as teachers, 4 as hucksters, 3 as peddlers (a Rumanian Jew, a Pole, and a Spaniard), 3 as bus *cobradores*, 2 as engineers, 2 as house servants, and 1 each as carpenter, printer, auto mechanic, sailor, ship's engineer, tailor, musician (instrumental), vocalist, magistrate, laborer, farmer, and *proprietario* (one whose income is derived from rentals). Of the 208 females, 170 were classified as students, 24 as teachers, 7 as government clerks, 5 as housewives, 1 as vocalist, and 1 as typist.

Of the first 500 *pardos*, 244 were males. Of these, 90 were classified as students, 44 as peddlers, 25 as soldiers, 13 as commercial employees, 9 as mechanics, 7 as operators of bakeries, 7 as *carregadores*, 7 as shopkeepers, 6 as farmers, 4 as shoemakers, 3 as orchestra players, 3 as teachers, 2 as barbers, 2 as gardeners, 2 as house servants, 2 as beggars,[3] 2 as masons, 2 as bus *cobradores*, 2 as sailors, 2 as shoe-shiners, and 1 each as salesman, painter, carpenter, ironworker, tinsmith, vulcanizer, tailor, butcher, waiter, and truck-gardener. Of 256 females, 214 were classified as students, 30 as teachers, 4 as housewives, 2 as dressmakers, and 1 each as embroidery worker, designer, house servant, and beggar.

Of the first 155 *pretos*, 125 were males. Of these, 17 were classified as students, 51 as hucksters, 17 as *carregadores*, 8 as soldiers, 4 as bus *cobradores*, 3 as farmers, 4 as bakers, 2 as mechanics, 2 as masons, 2 as shoemakers, and 1 each as commercial employee, small shopkeeper, government clerk, decorator, hairdresser, pianist, jazz orchestra player, ironworker, leather worker, cabinet-maker, *carroceiro*, house

---

[3] *Mendicantes.*

563*
463
162

servant, sailor, farmer, and shoe-shiner. Of the 30 females, 23 were classified as students, 2 as teachers, 2 as housewives, and 1 each as street peddler, domestic servant, and government clerk.

563*
434

Inferences based upon this occupational distribution, together with certain other indices (such as tax returns, automobile ownership, the purchase of different-priced seats at cinemas and sport events), indicate that blacks and the darker mixed-bloods ordinarily occupy the lower economic levels, the medium and light mulattoes the middle position, and the whites (including the *brancos da Bahia*) the upper stratum.

[556]

A Bahian official engaged in income-tax collections knew of no rich blacks in the city,[4] but he did know of several well-to-do mixed-bloods, among whom were a few dark mulattoes. Most incomes in the upper brackets, however, are those of whites.

563*
162
493

Of 116 cars being driven along the central thoroughfare, the Rua Chile, during a popular festival, in 90, or 77.6 per cent of the total, only whites were riding; in 26, or 22.4 per cent, mixed-bloods were among the occupants;[5] while no cars were occupied by blacks. However, on a similar occasion, of 50 cars noted, 2 were occupied exclusively by blacks.

563*
162
546

At a cinema performance, of 63 persons occupying *poltronas* at 2$200 a seat, 73 per cent were whites, 20.6 per cent

---

[4] Although at Ilhéos in the rich cocoa area south of Bahia a few blacks and dark mulattoes are quite well to do. For a sketch of life in this region see Jorge Amado, *Cacau* (Rio, 1933).

[5] The 6 cars in which only mulattoes were riding constituted 5.2 per cent of the total (only 1 car was occupied by dark mulattoes); the 19 cars in which both whites and mulattoes were riding constituted 16.3 per cent of the total (3 cars were occupied principally by *brancos da Bahia*, 16 by whites, with only one or two light mulattoes in each case); 1 car (0.9 per cent of the total) contained one black and five dark mulattoes.

*

563

162 were mulattoes, and only 6.4 per cent were relatively un-
[546] mixed blacks; while, of 30 occupants of general admission seats at one-half this price, only 20 per cent were whites, 40
[526] per cent were mulattoes, and 40 per cent were blacks. Among spectators at a Sunday-afternoon soccer game, one
*563 noted the distribution as given in Table 12.

162 Of five hundred mothers applying for aid at the state's
743 free children's clinic, only 9.2 per cent were white, 40.6 per cent were mulatto, predominantly dark, and 44.5 per cent appeared to be relatively unmixed blacks.[6] Of 1,511 photographs displayed in eleven photograph galleries, 73.2 per cent were probably of white individuals, 24.9 per cent of mixed-bloods, and only 1.7 per cent of unmixed blacks.[7]

*
563
162
526

TABLE 12

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION OF SPECTATORS AT A SPORTS EVENT,* BAHIA, 1936

SEATS	PRICE (IN MILREIS)	OCCUPANTS	PERCENTAGE			
			Blacks	Mulattoes	Whites	Total
Reserved	10	143	2.1	23.8†	74.1	100
Grandstand	7	267	4.1	29.4†	66.5	100
General admission	3	519	51.1	39.9‡	9.0	100

* *Futebol* (soccer), Campo da Graça, March 22, 1936.

† Chiefly light mulattoes, many of whom were very light with only slight traces of Negro lineage.

‡ Principally dark mulattoes.

*
563
162
[743]

*563
565 In interpreting this ethnic distribution in the occupations and according to financial means, one might point out that

---

[6] The remaining 5.7 per cent were *cafuso* (21 individuals), *branco da Bahia* (2 individuals), *mameluco* (2 individuals), and of Indian-white-Negro descent (1 individual).

[7] In addition, 0.2 per cent were *cafuso*.

563* 565

the present social order at Bahia results, as it probably does in a free class society anywhere, from the tendency of the more advantaged and the more able to rise to, or to maintain themselves at, the top. Since the Africans began in Brazil at the bottom, the present distribution of color through the class scale obviously indicates the extent to which the Negroes (either pure or diluted) have been able to survive and to rise in competition with the Europeans and their descendants, who in the main began at the top. The present distribution is therefore that probably to be expected, even in a freely competitive society, given the original slave status of the Negro, his relatively disadvantaged position upon receiving freedom, the consequently limited opportunities for economic advancement, and the comparatively brief time he has enjoyed a freely competitive status.

563* 171 463

One might also note that racial distribution in the occupations and with reference to economic status is not greatly dissimilar at Bahia to that in the United States. In other words, the Negro, either pure or mixed with the white, has slowly but steadily advanced both in Brazil and in this country, until today he is represented there and here in all the professions and in many, if not most, of the occupations. Even the relative numbers in the different levels of the occupational and economic scales are somewhat similar in the two cases.

563* 571 171

The differences, however, are profound. Whereas in the United States the rise of the Negro and of the mixed-blood has been principally within the limits of the Negro world, in Brazil the rise has been with reference to the total community; that is, the Negro in Bahia not only competes freely with all others of his own color but can and does compete with all aspirants to the same class; and, if he has ability and

* 563
171 gives evidence of definite personal worth, he will be ac-
571 cepted for what he is as an individual, and his racial antecedents will, at least to a considerable degree, be overlooked.

The extent of participation of the different ethnic units in the total life of the community may be indicated by analyzing racial participation in such institutions as exclusive clubs, schools, labor unions, and churches.

* 563 One of Bahia's most exclusive clubs, membership in which
571 is definitely indicative of advanced social status, is composed
575 of Bahian "society," including most of the leading officials
565 and many of the more prominent citizens. Numerous receptions for visiting celebrities are held at this club, and its dances are considered to be among the principal social functions of the year. No blacks have yet been admitted, although several mixed-bloods, including a number of *brancos da Bahia* and even a few dark mulattoes, are regular and honored members. Whites, of course, predominate.

* 563 Among the members is a dark mixed-blood, with Cauca-
571 sian hair and features, a prominent citizen, an able eye, ear,
575 nose, and throat specialist trained in Europe, and husband
463 of a white wife. Of him a Bahian of undiluted European de-
759 scent once commented, "You know when I went to see him
554 about my eyes the other day, I never once thought of him as colored. I needed professional advice and I simply recalled that he, like his father before him, was the best eye specialist in Bahia." Another member of this club is a dark mixed-blood, a wealthy exporter, prominent in Bahian commercial circles, and husband of a white wife, upon whose visits into the interior, it is said, all those with whom he has business dealings (including whites) feel deeply honored when he visits them in their homes.

Not listed among the members is a dark mixed-blood of distinguished bearing, probably Bahia's leading colored citizen, son of a white planter and a black slave, able engineer, once federal senator, president of an important intellectual and social organization, and "authority" on the Tupi language. However, an officer of the club, a white banker from one of the leading families whose aristocratic lineage, general competence, and recent contribution of a governor to the state and a federal senator to the national *[illegible]mara* unquestionably admits its members to the most exclusive circles, once remarked that "if this distinguished colored citizen should sometime apply for membership, there would be no doubt that a man of his intelligence, refinement, and professional competence would be accepted without serious question."

563 *
571
575
463
554

In the schools there is no segregation in any form. Students, however, are predominantly white and light mulatto. The participation of blacks is somewhat limited, and there is a progressive elimination of the darker shades as one climbs the educational ladder. Illiteracy is high, especially in the lower class, in which, as we have seen, blacks and dark mulattoes predominate.

563 *
871

Table 13 indicates more equable participation of the blacks in the elementary schools, especially in those which are state supported, attendance at which is free and hence more accessible to Negro children, concentrated as their parents are in the lower economic levels.

563 *
872

In a parade of school children celebrating Emancipation Day (the thirteenth of May) twelve elementary schools participated, each group being dressed in its distinctive uniform. For example, the boys of one school wore light gray suits with a blue stripe down the trousers, blue belts, and

563 *
872
527
292

*
563

872 gray caps with blue bands; while the girls wore light gray
527 dresses with blue belts, blue collars, and blue cuffs. Of ap-
[292] proximately 325 pupils in the parade, about two-sevenths were black, two-sevenths white, and three-sevenths mulatto, indiscriminately mingled. In eight schools, the proportions were not greatly dissimilar. Two schools, however, were

87
162
*563

TABLE 13

COMPARATIVE SCHOOL ATTENDANCE OF THE ETHNIC UNITS AT BAHIA, 1936

School	No. of Schools Sampled	Black	Mulatto	White	Others	Total
Elementary:						
Public	22	438	496	385	16*	1,335
Private	8	40	97	175	3†	315
Parochial	6	31	88	318	13‡	450
Secondary	5§	34	99	390	2‖	525
Superior (Faculties of Law, Medicine, Engineering)	3	12	88	424	6¶	530
Trade	3	88	122	123	2**	335
Normal	1	45	83	157	0	285

* *Cafuso*, 9; *mameluco*, 7.

† *Cafuso*, 2; *mameluco*, 1.

‡ *Cafuso*, 5; *mameluco*, 8.

§ One public, 2 private, 2 ecclesiastical.

‖ *Cafuso*, 2.

¶ *Cafuso*, 2; *mameluco*, 4.

** *Cafuso*, 1; *mameluco*, 1.

*
563 principally black and mixed-blood (in one of which there
872 were 16 blacks, 34 mulattoes, 8 whites); and two schools
527 were largely white (in one of which there were 25 whites, 8 mulattoes, and 5 blacks).

*873 During the 1936 Peruada, which is an annual *festa*
563 held by students at the Faculdades, of 168 individuals par-
[162] ticipating in a parade, 3 per cent were black, 10 per cent
[527] were mulatto, and 87 per cent were white.

At the graduating exercises of one of the Faculdades, no black families were present. The guests were principally white, including a number of *brancos da Bahia*. A few mulattoes, principally light, also attended. A dark mixed-blood assisted with the ushering, in the course of which he led two of his relatives (young light mulatto ladies) to excellent seats well to the front. Later, as the room became crowded, he was seen to request two white men to give up their seats to two other mulatto ladies. The request was courteously complied with. When, during the subsequent formal ceremonies, this dark mixed-blood received his diploma, he was given by his fellow-students (chiefly whites) a vigorous round of applause, he being one of the few so honored. "He is a fine man with a brilliant mind," remarked a white colleague. 563* 873

A number of teachers, particularly in the elementary and secondary institutions, are mixed-bloods, but the greater number are whites. Although 120 of 148 white students responding to an inquiry regarding the matter did not object to being taught by a *preto* teacher, black instructors are rare and are limited, with few exceptions, to the elementary ranks. This is, in all probability, largely due to the fact that comparatively few blacks have so far received educational advantages equal to the whites. 563* 87

For instance, of 232 instructors at the four Faculdades (Law, Medicine, Engineering, and Economics), none was black; 163, or 70.3 per cent, were white; 36, or 15.5 per cent, were *branco da Bahia;* and 31, or 13.4 per cent, were mulatto.[8] Of 69 *professores cathedraticos*, 54, or 78.3 per cent, were white; 10, or 14.5 per cent, were mulatto; 5, or 7.2 per cent, were *branco da Bahia;* and none was black. Of 5 profes-

---

[8] One was an Indian-Negro mixed-blood, and one was of Indian-white descent.

*
563 sors honored as *paranymphos*,[9] all were white. Of 21 faculty
87 members honored with *homenagem*,[10] 6 were mulattoes (2
quite negroid), 1 was *branco da Bahia*, 14 were whites, and
none was black.

In a prominent secondary institution, of 18 instructors, 1 was a black, 5 were mulattoes, 3 were *brancos da Bahia*, and 9 were whites. In another secondary school, of 33 instructors, 7 were mulattoes, 6 were *brancos da Bahia*, and 20 were whites. While of 30 elementary teachers noted in state schools, 3 were blacks, 10 were mulattoes, 6 were *brancos da Bahia*, 1 was a *mameluco*, and 10 were whites.

*
563 In educational circles one often hears of a dark mixed-
554 blood of distinguished bearing with snow-white hair and
875 beard who organized some years ago one of the present secondary institutions and whose two sons are well-known and widely respected educators. Several whites now prominent in local and national circles speak with pride of their schooling under this distinguished man.

A similar attitude is not infrequently manifested with reference to other colored teachers or professors; for instance, a prominent medical specialist and noted lecturer at the Faculty of Medicine; a legal "authority" and author of textbooks in law, now associate justice of the Brazilian supreme court; a prominent nerve specialist; a noted surgeon; and the city's ablest and most quoted literary critic.

*
563 In a private elementary school a class of boys ranging in
872 age from seven to eleven years were being taught by a Negro
875 teacher. Among the group were two whites, one *branco da*

---

[9] Each graduating class in the secondary and professional schools selects one of its more popular teachers or professors for special recognition as *paranympho*.

[10] Graduating classes also select, besides a *paranympho*, several teachers or professors to be honored with *homenagem*.

563*
872
875

Bahia, one mulatto, and three blacks. Several substantial white citizens had received their early training under this man.

563*
217

The public library is patronized indiscriminately by members of all ethnic groups. Blacks, however, appear among its frequenters only in rather limited numbers. For instance, of 560 individuals using the library facilities on different days and at different hours during the day,[11] only 9.6 per cent were blacks, while 35.9 per cent were mulattoes and 52.7 per cent were whites.[12]

563*
467
[565]

In labor unions organization definitely follows class lines, and ethnic differences are largely lost sight of in the pursuit of common ends. Leadership, however, tends to be white or near-white, even in those unions composed predominantly of blacks and dark mixed-bloods. For instance, at a "solemn assembly" for the installation of new officers in a local labor union whose membership, limited to 550, is overwhelmingly Negro (as indicated by a detailed check of the members with the aid of the union secretary), the retiring president was a *branco da Bahia* and the incoming president a light mulatto. Only eleven *brancos* (probably all, or nearly all, of whom are *brancos da Bahia*) and relatively few mulattoes are to be found among the membership.[13]

---

[11] Samples were taken for each hour from 9:00 A.M. to 4:00 P.M., with the exception of 12:00 noon to 2:00 P.M., when the institution was closed.

[12] Also 7 (1.2 per cent) *cafusos*, 3 (0.5 per cent) *mamelucos*.

[544]

[13] Of the speakers, 6 were blacks, 5 were mulattoes (2 quite light), 1 was a *branco da Bahia*, and 1 was a white. Among the themes presented were: "Solidarity! All Workers Are Brothers!" "Since the Revolution of 1930 Workers Are No Longer Slaves"; "Viva Getulio Vargas, the God, the Jesus, and the Senhor do Bomfim [patron saint of Bahia's poorer classes] of the Workers!" "Remember the Chicago Workers Who Died for Liberty!" "Save Brazil's Wealth from Exploitation by *Norte-Americanos* Who Hope To Seize Her Mines and Her Waterfalls and Make Slaves of Her People!" "Look to the World's Greatest Socialist and Sociologist, Jesus Christ."

*
563
794

In the churches, both Catholic and Protestant, one notes the side-by-side, unsegregated worship of all ranges of the color scale. For instance, out of 927 worshipers present one Sunday morning[14] at the Matriz Nossa Senhora de Sant' Anna, 277 were blacks, 327 were mulattoes, 312 were whites, 9 were *cafusos*, and 2 were *mamelucos*. At the ancient and historic Igreja do Carmo on another occasion,[15] of 227 persons attending Mass, 34 were blacks, 109 were mulattoes, and 84 were whites. At the famed São Francisco Church one Sunday morning,[16] of 470 worshipers, 124 were blacks, 187 were mulattoes, and 159 were whites. At Santo Antonio da Barra on another Sunday,[17] of a total of 177 persons present, 74 were blacks, 52 were mulattoes, and 48 were whites. One of the best-dressed audiences in the city, at the Convento de Piedade, numbered,[18] among a total of 285, 52 blacks and 64 mulattoes.

Of a total of 7,396 worshipers in thirty-eight Catholic churches, cathedrals, and chapels scattered throughout the city, including (in addition to the foregoing) the Matriz da Vitoria, the Mosteiro de São Bento, the Cathedral, the Matrix de Nazaré, the Basilica do Bomfim, Conceição da Praia, Campo Santo, Rosario de João Pereira, Barroquinha, Palma, Ajuda, Pillar, Conceição do Boqueirão, and the Matriz do Rio Vermelho, 25 per cent were blacks, 33.3 per cent were mulattoes, and 40.8 per cent whites,[19] the various ethnic groups being in each case indiscriminately represented throughout the audience. A similar distribution was

---

[14] July 26, 1936, 9:00–10:30 A.M.

[15] August 2, 1936, 8:30 A.M.

[16] January 5, 1936.

[17] August 16, 1936, 8:15 A.M.

[18] January 12, 1936, 9:00 A.M.

[19] Absolute numbers: black, 1,846; mulatto, 2,462; white, 3,019; *cafuso* 50; *mameluco*, 19.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

563 *
794

noted in two Protestant churches, one Baptist, the other Presbyterian. Of a total of 157 worshipers, 27.4 per cent were blacks, 29.9 per cent were mulattoes, and 42.7 per cent were whites, seated indiscriminately, in each case.

563 *
793

Although 104 of 130 white students responding to an inquiry regarding the matter did not object to receiving the sacrament from a black priest, priests and pastors are usually white, only occasionally mulatto (ordinarily light), and very rarely black. For instance, of 43 priests officiating at Mass, 42, or 98 per cent, were white, and 1 was a mulatto, quite light. Of 60 novices at the Seminary of Santa Thereza, only 7 were mulattoes, 1 very dark.[20] Of the 2 Protestant pastors, 1 was white, the other a dark mulatto. In the latter's audience were over a score of whites.

563 *
794

Altar boys are often mulattoes, occasionally blacks. For instance, of 70 altar boys seen assisting with Mass, 35, or 50 per cent, were whites; 3 were *brancos da Bahia;* 20, or 28.6 per cent, were mulattoes; and 11, or 15.7 per cent, were blacks.

A similarly mixed participation may be noted in meetings of the spiritualist cult. At a session of the União Espirita Bahiana, for instance, of 73 persons present, 20 were blacks, 26 were mulattoes, and 27 were whites.[21] Among the leaders gathered about a table in front of the audience, 2 were whites, 2 were *brancos da Bahia*, 1 was a mulatto, and 2 were blacks.

563 *
795

In noting the circumstances under which the Brazilian racial accommodation has taken and is taking place, one ought not to overlook the fact that Catholic ideas and practice, permeating as they do very largely the whole moral order at

---

[20] One *mameluco*, 52 whites.

[21] Also 1 *cafuso*.

*
563
795
[571]
Bahia, tend to implement and to support the Brazilian racial policy. For the Catholic church, by emphasizing ritual, centers attention *outside the individual* upon common objects; while the Protestant churches, by emphasizing belief, center attention *upon the individual*, thus tending to increase self-consciousness and, consequently, awareness of difference which, in so far as the self and its distinguishing characteristics are identified with a group, automatically increases *group*-consciousness.

795
571
The Catholic conceptions tend to lay emphasis upon the community, upon the totality of individuals. For it is through his participation in the community that the individual in the Catholic view gains recognition as a person. The Protestant churches, on the other hand, tend to emphasize the individual. It is by reason of his inherent worth that the community in which he participates gains meaning in the Protestant ideology.

The Catholic procedure thus tends to unify the community, while the Protestant procedure tends to divide it into separate groups, each of which emphasizes its points of difference with all the others and tends to be divisive in its attitude toward the others. Obviously, a sect (which is by its very nature a conflict group) can in no other way live. The Catholic procedure lays a premium upon solidarity, while the Protestant lays a premium upon diversity.

*
563
857
Indicative of race relations among the younger generation at Bahia is the behavior of three groups of children who were observed playing together in Campo Grande. Aged approximately four to fifteen years, they were hilariously enjoying themselves. When first noted, there were at the "giant stride" 4 blacks, 5 mulattoes, and 2 whites. At the teeter-totter were 1 black, 9 mulattoes, and 15 whites. At

the garden swing were 11 blacks, 8 mulattoes, and 7 whites. 563*
There was considerable moving about from group to group. 857
In the garden of the governor's palace a similar band, aged about seven to thirteen years, were laughing and shouting together around another teeter-totter. Among them were 3 blacks, 5 mulattoes, and 4 whites. "Beginning with his earliest years," wrote a white student, "a child in Bahia is accustomed to associating with all racial types without any distinction being made between them."

In Campo da Graça[33] 6 whites and 5 mulattoes (one of 563*
whom was quite dark) composed the team of the Faculty of 526
Law in a soccer game with the Faculty of Medicine (among whom were 7 whites, 3 mulattoes, and 1 black). In the subsequent professional contest 9 whites, 4 mulattoes, and 4 blacks composed the visiting team from São Paulo, coached by a *cafuso*. Bahia's colors were upheld by 2 whites, 5 mulattoes, 9 blacks, and 1 *cafuso*. The referee was a *brânco da Bahia*.

At an informal basketball game played on an outdoor court at the Fortress of São Pedro, a black and 4 mulattoes composed one team; a black, 2 mulattoes, and 2 whites, the other. The referee was a black.

At a tea dance given at Bahia's most exclusive club in 563*
honor of Getulio Vargas, president of Brazil, the city's most 574
distinguished citizens and their families, to an approximate total of 600, were present. No blacks were among the guests, [535]
and only 28 individuals were noticeably negroid, 6 of whom were dark mulattoes. At a banquet subsequently given the President, all individuals seated at his table were white. A number of mixed-bloods, however, principally light mulattoes, were among the guests. Two of the six speakers at the

[33] On March 22, 1936.

* 563 527 Two of the six speakers at the dedicatory exercises for the newly constructed Instituto de Cacau on the following day were *brancos da Bahia* (each with only slight indications of Negro ancestry), and four were whites.

* 563 635 574 [344] [633] During the visit of a neighboring governor, a procession formed in the Avenida Sete de Setembro to escort the distinguished visitor, together with the Bahian governor, Juracy Magalhães, to the latter's palace. Riding in the procession, alighting in front of the palace, and following the two chief executives into the spacious rooms of the governor's mansion, were presumably the city's political élite, all in formal attire. Of a total of 99 persons, 70 were whites, 22 were very light mulattoes with only slightly noticeable traces of Negro lineage, 7 were dark mulattoes, and none was black. Of the escort of 23 army officials dressed in appropriate uniform, 9 were whites, 12 were very light mulattoes, 2 were dark mixed-bloods.

* 563 635 Of 46 members of the state legislature, 69.4 per cent were whites, 15.2 per cent were *brancos da Bahia*, and 11.0 per cent were mulattoes.[13] Of 14 aldermen, 8 were whites, 4 were *brancos da Bahia*, and 2 were mulattoes (both very light).

* 563 69 In legal proceedings no discrimination is at all evident. Colored individuals appear not only among the defendants but also among those engaged in the defense or the prosecution, as well as among the jury itself. Whites, however, predominate.

* 563 693 [756] Of the officers of the medical association, 6 were whites, 3 were *brancos da Bahia*, and 3 were mulattoes. Of 18 members of an elective supervisory body for the legal profession, 14 were whites, 3 were *brancos da Bahia*, and only 1 had noticeable evidence of mixed ancestry and that principally

---

[13] One deputy was a black, and there was also 1 *mameluco*.

563*

in pigmentation. An able lawyer, with an extended period of 693
practice in Bahia, he was well regarded by his associates.

At a formal dinner given by *A Tarde*, probably the most 563*
influential Bahian daily, in honor of a noted journalist and 574
poet, 15 whites, 4 *brancos da Bahia*, 3 light mulattoes, and 6 571
medium or dark mixed-bloods sat down together at the banquet table. Among the guests, according to the account on the subsequent day, were "all the editorial writers and collaborators of this newspaper, together with a few specially invited friends and admirers of the honored guest [a white]."

Among the members attending a session of the Bahian 563*
Academy of Letters were 5 whites, 1 *branco da Bahia*, and 3 814
mulattoes. One of the latter is an able poet, quite dark, with kinky hair.

Present at a tea dance given by Bahia's Girl Guides at the 563*
exclusive club previously mentioned were the city's social 565
élite, including the governor. *A Tarde*, in reporting the 535
event, said, "As was to be expected, there was present our 575
best society—all of it, almost—making the occasion one of 571
elegance and distinction." Of the 414 guests, 346 were 571
whites, 64 were very light mulattoes (exhibiting only slight traces of Negro ancestry), and 3 were dark mixed-bloods. One of the latter, with kinky hair but Caucasian features, was accompanied by a light mulatto wife, almost white, and two light mulatto daughters. One of the latter danced once during the afternoon—with a white youth. Of 30 Girl Guides serving the guests, 3 showed slight traces of Negro
origin. The only blacks present were the members of the [533]
jazz orchestra (composed of 3 blacks and 6 dark mulattoes) [357]
and 2 maids who had accompanied white families.

The president of a literary, semiscientific, and social or- 563*
575
571

563
571 ganization which numbers about 345[24] of the city's intellectual
575 élite, is a dark mixed-blood, the able engineer and
Tupi scholar previously mentioned. The secretary of the organization
is white, but during his absence on federal appointment
in Rio the assistant secretary, a dark mulatto
educator, discharges the secretarial duties. Of the 30 officers
and committeemen of this institution, 24 are whites, 2 are
brancos da Bahia, and 4 are mulattoes. Among the whites
* are several scions of the old aristocracy.

563 At a dinner of the Rotary Club, which numbers among its
574 members some of the city's most prominent businessmen, 42
575 whites, 5 *brancos da Bahia*, and 1 very light mulatto (a visitor)
were present. The guest speaker was white. Of 55 members,
47 are whites, 6 are *brancos da Bahia*, and 2 are very
* light mulattoes.

563 Of 28 citizens assuming prominent roles in a community
575 organization designed to erect a mausoleum to Castro Alves,
15 were whites, 5 were *brancos da Bahia*, 7 were light mulattoes,
* 2 were dark mulattoes, and 1 was a black, the latter an
563 able engineer and local historian. At a public meeting in
544 honor of Castro Alves, the speaker was a white politician
with a national reputation, an able man of letters, and scion
of the old aristocracy. Of 200 individuals in the audience,
only 18 were colored (15 mulattoes, mostly very light mixed-bloods,
* and 3 blacks).

563 At a recital given by a noted Brazilian pianist, where
545 there were present, according to a newspaper account, "the
most select of Bahia's artistic and social circles,"[25] the audience
was composed of 116 whites, 14 mulattoes, predominantly
light, and 2 blacks.

---

[24] According to the secretary of the organization.

[25] *Estado da Bahia*, January 22, 1937.

Celebrating the one hundredth anniversary of the birth of 563*
Carlos Gomes, famed Brazilian composer of the operas 527.
Guaraný and *Fosca*, 389 Bahians gathered in the Instituto
Geographico e Historico. Of these, 316 were whites, 61 were
mulattoes (predominately light), 11 were blacks, and 1 was
a *cafuso*. With the governor of Bahia (white) on the platform [635]
were 12 citizens in formal dress, all whites[26] except the governor's
bodyguard, a light mulatto in army uniform. Two
young ladies in formal dress, both white, sang and declaimed. [544]
Of the 3 subsequent speakers, 2 were whites and 1
was a *branco da Bahia*. The military police band, which furnished [701]
instrumental music for the occasion, was composed of [533]
9 blacks, 26 mulattoes, 2 whites, 3 *cafusos*, and 1 *mameluco*,
under the direction of a mulatto bandmaster. Fifty students
from the Instituto de Musica da Bahia sang one of Gomes'
compositions. All were whites, except 2 light mulattoes.

Twenty-one women, aged eighteen to forty, were present 563*
at a cooking school sponsored by a foreign resident. A novel 874
experience in Bahia, where for generations Negro servants [252]
have prepared the food, this school had assumed somewhat [357]
the character of a fad. The group included several ladies
from upper-class families, well to do, educated and traveled.
The wife of the governor occasionally attended. Present
were 18 whites and 3 light mulattoes, among the latter a
morena, perhaps the best-dressed lady of the group. Her
father is deceased, and her mother is a dressmaker in moderate
circumstances. The girl's beauty, pleasant manner, and
constant well-tailored appearance have secured for her admittance
into the upper circles. She is often invited into the
"best" homes. Another of the mixed-bloods present was

---

[26] Including one *branco da Bahia*.

*
563 very light. Her mother is a *sarará*, her grandmother is a
874 dark mulatto with kinky hair, and her husband is also a dark
mixed-blood. Her family, it is said, has gradually risen from
[555] the lower class by reason of constantly taking advantage of
[565] every educational opportunity, by increasing their economic
competence, and by deliberately cultivating "good manners."

*
563 At a "night club," where there were gambling, liquid re-
547 freshments, and partners for dancing, of 128 guests,[27] 62
535 were whites, 40 were *brancos da Bahia*, 21 were mulattoes
(several quite dark), 1 was a *cafuso*, and 4 were blacks. Of the 26 female entertainers (dancers and singers), 19 were whites,[28] 4 were *brancas da Bahia*, and 3 were mulattoes (all very light). None of the darker patrons danced during the evening.

*
563 In the main gambling-room the group about the table
547 were principally whites, with a few light mulattoes and an
525 occasional dark mixed-blood. In the hallway near the entrance, however, was another gaming-table where stakes were lower. It was patronized principally by dark mulattoes, together with an occasional black, a few *brancos da Bahia*, and very few whites.

796 Carnival at Bahia lasts three days and is perhaps the most
204 popular festival of the year. At the close of one celebration plans are immediately set on foot for the next. From time to time throughout the ensuing twelve months, newspapers carry reports of the development of these plans, and, beginning about a hundred and fifty days before Carnival, a regular daily feature appears, the time before the big event being checked off, day by day, much as United States newspapers sometimes check off the days preceding Christmas; except

---

[27] On September 26, 1936.

[28] Including a very swarthy Syrian girl.

796
204

that the period of time involved is much greater in the case of Carnival.

796
575
[578]

In 1936, as for some years previously, three clubs competed in presenting floats on the opening and closing evenings of Carnival. The rivalries, especially between Cruz Vermelha and the Fantoshes, are intense, the Innocentes em Progresso appearing to be rather generally admired.

[533]

Preceding, during, and following the parade, Negro *batucadas* and *cordões* pass through the milling crowds. The *batucadas* are usually composed of fifteen to twenty young men, invariably blacks or dark mulattoes, who carry small drums, *cuicas*, and *xaque-xaques*,[29] and parade in single file. The music is one toned and monotonous, reminiscent of the *candomblé* ritual. A *cordão* consists of fifty or sixty people of both sexes and all ages, invariably blacks and dark mulattoes, inclosed within a roped quadrangle, some marching, rather informally, some constantly whirling and dancing, all singing African songs and beating their palms. A banner, usually of silk and velvet, bears the group's name. It may be Outum Obá de Africa, Ideal Africano, Onça,[30] or some similar designation. The group also includes from ten to fifteen musicians with brass instruments, a few blacks in African costume, and a dancer bearing an animal's head (tiger, lion, *onça*, etc.). The women and the small children are usually dressed in the *Bahiana* costume, to be described in detail in a subsequent chapter.

563*
796

In a spirit of levity common to the Carnival season, one will occasionally see a group of whites and light mulattoes burlesquing the *cordão*. Encompassed by a rope, they pass through the crowd, singing, dancing, and beating their palms. In one of these *blocos*, as they are called, 16 of the

---

[29] See chap. ix.

[30] The *onça* is the Brazilian jaguar.

*
563
796

participants were whites and 12 were mulattoes, all light except one. There were no blacks. Whereas in a *cordão* noted, 24 were blacks, 19 were dark mulattoes, and none were whites. In 9 *batucadas*, of a total of 157 young men, 113, or 72 per cent, were blacks; 40, or 25.5 per cent, were mulattoes, all dark except one (who, although light of skin, had kinky hair); 3 were *cafusos*, and only 1 was white.

In the milling, dancing, singing crowd one ordinarily sees whites with whites, blacks and dark mulattoes with blacks and dark mulattoes, the exceptions being that a white occasionally accompanies a group of dark mulattoes and blacks, while *brancos da Bahia* and light mulattoes are often to be seen with whites. For instance, three young men, abreast, arms over each other's shoulders, danced past, singing their way into, and through, the crowd. One was a light mulatto, one a *branco da Bahia*, one a white. About twenty girls in single file danced past, each with her hands on the shoulders of the one in front, all singing, the line weaving in and out of the crowd. Among them whites and light mulattoes were indiscriminately mingled; the leader of the group was a light mulatto.

If one notes carefully the individuals who perform various functions in the Carnival parade, he is likely to find the blacks principally occupied with the menial task of guiding the horses which pull the floats, although occasionally they act as escorts or musicians. The "queen" of the Carnival and the "queens" of the Carnival clubs are all whites, the heralds are whites, as also, with rare exceptions, are the girls on the floats. For instance, of 168 young ladies from Bahia's "best" families on the floats in the Carnival parade of 1936, all were whites except 2, and these were very light mulattoes (see Table 14).

563*
796
178

The entire racial and cultural situation at Bahia is thus symbolized in the Carnival celebration. The *cordão* points to the persistence of African survivals, adherence to which still isolates to some extent the darker portion of the population. The young blacks and dark mulattoes who parade solemnly, quite self-consciously in the long files of the *batucadas*, represent those youths who, although they have in large measure broken with the African cultural forms of their parents or grandparents, have not yet been entirely incorporated into the European world. Whites and light mulattoes dance together and sing their way through the milling crowds. While most of the blacks and dark mulattoes, neither identified with the African tradition to the extent of participating in the *cordões* nor yet sufficiently established in class to move freely in the white world, merely mill about.

TABLE 14

PARTICIPATION BY ETHNIC UNITS
CARNIVAL PARADE, BAHIA, 1936

563*
796
162

	Black	Mulatto	White	*Cafuzo*	Total
Club sponsors (in autos)	13	67	73	1	154
Heralds			3		3
Horsemen	14	47	42		103
Horsewomen			16		16
Trumpeters	13		1		14
Bandsmen	45	51	5		101
Squires	111	5	1		117
Girls on floats		2	166		168
Men on floats		4	14		18
Queens			3		3
Pages	5	14	8		27
Escorts	6		4		10
Truck-drivers	1				1
Total	208	190	336	1	735

563*
796
178

563 796 This is the general pattern. The exceptions, however, are significant. One occasionally notes, for instance, a darker person participating, apparently without any inhibition or the slightest show of self-consciousness, in the fun of the lighter groups. He ordinarily is an able individual, as evidenced by general appearance, bearing, and speech. Occasionally a white, in appearance and dress evidently of lower-class identity, will be celebrating with black or dark mulatto companions. Among the directing personnel, mulattoes appear in limited numbers, assisting the whites in planning and executing the various activities.

563 565 In like manner, the upper social circles at Bahia remain today predominantly white. Only the lighter mixed-bloods, with few exceptions, have penetrated the upper tiers. The darker mulattoes, and particularly the blacks, have only in rare instances gained admittance.

But it is just these few individuals who indicate most clearly the actual racial situation at Bahia. The Negroes began on the bottom. The acceptance, then, of an occasional black, a few dark mulattoes as well as numerous light mixed-bloods into the upper circles points conclusively to the fact that if a person has ability and general competence, the handicap of color can be, and is constantly being, overcome. While it is undoubtedly true that status continues extensively to coincide with color, the fact that certain individuals who are quite dark and otherwise possessed of negroid traits have nevertheless been admitted into exclusive clubs and otherwise have attained positions of trust and responsibility in the community demonstrates quite clearly that in Bahia color is subordinate to other indices of class identification. 555 Individual competence overbalances racial descent in the final determination of status. Color is undoubtedly a handi-

563 *
565
555

cap. But it always tends to be discounted if the individual in question possesses other characteristics of upper-class identity, such as professional competence, intellectual ability, educational achievement, wealth, an "engaging" manner, personal "charm," poise, "breeding," and, especially with the females, beauty. All these are characteristics which define status in a society based upon class rather than upon caste distinctions.

In this connection, an incident in Brazil noted by Edschmid is illuminating:

> The conductor [of the street car] passed all the men wearing collars into the first-class compartment whether they were white, yellow, brown, or black. He relegated all men without collars, regardless of their pigmentation, to the second class. He only looked for a collar. He sent a black-boy with a collar but without boots or shoes into the first, and he relegated a handsome English lad in a low-cut jersey to the second class.[31]

---

[31] Kasimir Edschmid, *South America* (New York, 1932), p. 370.

CHAPTER VIII

RACIAL IDEOLOGY AND RACIAL ATTITUDES

815 829 [178] IN RECENT years there has grown up in Brazil a lively interest in the African and his descendants. This has resulted, among other things, in the holding of two *Congressos Afro-brasileiros*, the first of which met in Recife in November, 1934, and the second in Bahia in January, 1937. Composed of intellectuals having a common interest in the Brazilian Negro, their agenda indicate that such interest is confined almost entirely to three fields: (1) the history of African importation and slavery; (2) problems of acculturation, with especial attention to the survivals of African cultural forms; and (3) anthropometric variations. Generally absent is any concern with problems of racial conflict or accommodation, implying quite definitely the comparative absence of these problems in the social order as well as the comparative absence of any race consciousness answering to them on the part of the Negro or any other ethnic group.

[641] The participants in the 1937 *Congresso*, which met in Bahia, visited fetish-cult centers, witnessed *capoeira*[1] and *samba*[2] presentations, studied the material relics of fetish-cult ceremonies available in Bahian museums, honored the memory of Nina Rodrigues (who some forty years ago pioneered in studies of the Afro-Brazilian cults in Bahia),[3] and

---

[1] See chap. ix.

[535] [2] The *samba*, probably of African origin, is a dance with vocal accompaniment (see chap. ix), as well as a musical form.

[3] See Nina Rodrigues, *L'Animisme fétichiste des nègres de Bahia* (Bahia, 1900) and *Os africanos no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1932).

815
829
[64]

passed resolutions protesting police interference with the *candomblé* and demanding full religious liberty in the exercise of its rites.

Papers presented to this congress by Brazilians dealt with such subjects as "Slave Insurrections in the Province of Espirito Santo during the Nineteenth Century," "Old Documents concerning the Negroes of the Palmares," "Castro Alves and Brazilian Poetical Treatment of the Negro Slave," "The *Africano* in Bahia," "Chapters in Afro-Brazilian Ethnology in Rio Grande," "Bantú Contributions to Religious Syncretism in Brazil," "A Revision of Afro-Brazilian Ethnology," "The *Africano* and His Culture in Brazil," "The *Orixá*[4] of the Poor," "The School of Nina Rodrigues," and "The Negro and the Problem of Acculturation in Brazil." Only one paper was not concerned with ethnological or historical problems; and it, although it took account of ethnic differences, did not treat of any form of racial conflict. It dealt with "The Negro Criminal in Bahia."

Similar questions were discussed in the first *Congresso Afro-brasileiro*, which met in Recife, sponsored by Gilberto Freyre, a social historian whose *Casa grande e senzala* and *Sobrados e mucambos* throw significant light upon the Negro in colonial and imperial Brazil.[5] This gathering was, because of its informal character and the attempt to present factual data, "something new in Brazil."[6] As Freyre describes it:

> There was lacking both formality and a consciousness of class. Around a table, at the head of which different individuals took turns

---

[4] *Orixá* is a Yoruba word meaning "deity."

[5] An interesting estimate of Freyre's work by Dr. Lewis Hanke appears in the *Quarterly Journal of Inter-American Relations*, July, 1939, pp. 24-44, under the title "Gilberto Freyre: Brazilian Social Historian."

[6] Gilberto Freyre, "O que foi o primeiro Congresso Afro-brasileiro no Recife," in *Novos estudos afro-brasileiros*, ed. Freyre *et al.* (Rio, 1937), p. 348.

815
829 presiding in accordance with the varying subjects under consideration, were seated erudite *doutores* from lecture-room and laboratory; huge *filhas de santo*;[7] aged Negro cooks who brought from . . . . the crude kitchens of their mud huts recipes of . . . . Afro-Brazilian dishes; Negroes from the cane fields (like Jovino, whose paper was as full of errors in Portuguese as of *saudades* of the time of the *almanjarras*);[8] . . . . *babalorixás*[9] like Pae Anselmo; queens of the *maracatú*[10] like Albertina de Fleury, whose name reminded José Lins do Rego[11] of the heroine of a romance by Proust; certain others who, although illiterate or semiliterate, had such intimate knowledge of Afro-Brazilian matters as to be able to make an appreciable contribution to the Congress; students of law, engineering, and medicine . . . . ; elderly folklorists like Rodrigues de Carvalho, who never missed a session . . . . ; individuals like Nobrega da Cunha, who knew intimately the ritual of the *macumba*;[12] psychiatrists of the ability and reputation of Ulysses Pernambucano, who was acclaimed with all justice Honorary President; artists like Luis Jardim and Cicero Dias; intellectuals, journalists, and special representatives of Rio newspapers; the teacher, Ernani Braga, who collected for the Congress a number of invocations to Xangô[13] sung by the young ladies of the Conservatorio on the closing day of school [794] to the enthusiastic applause of the best people of Recife. Individuals

---

[7] *Filhas de santo* are ceremonial dancers of the fetish cult (see chap. x).

[535] [492] [8] On the sugar plantations of colonial Brazil the beam to which animals were hitched to turn the millstone and crush the cane was called the *almanjarra*.

[793] [9] Priests of the fetish cult are sometimes called *babalorixás*. The word is formed from the Nagô words *bábá* ("father") and *orixá* ("deity").

[794] [10] The *maracatú* was an organization of Negroes which formerly participated in Carnival at Recife (see Mario Sette, *Maxambombas e maracatús* [São Paulo, n.d.], pp. 339–41).

[538] [11] José Lins do Rego is a noted Brazilian novelist whose realistic accounts of lower-class life, particularly in the state of Pernambuco, have helped to reveal a level of culture about which little had previously been written. See, e.g., his *Banguê* (Rio, 1934); *Menino de engenho* (2d ed.; Rio, 1934); *Usina* (Rio, 1936); *Historias da velha Totonia* (Rio, 1936); *Pureza* (Rio, 1937); [794] *Pedra Bonita* (Rio, 1938); *Doidinho* (Rio, n.d.).

[12] The Afro-Brazilian fetish cult is known in Rio de Janeiro as the *macumba*.

[776] [13] Xangô (pronounced "Shân-go") is a deity of the fetish cult (see chap. x).

815
829

> who at last had seriously taken up "these Negro things" and had found them to be something more than merely picturesque, ... to be, in fact, a great living part of the genuine Brazilian culture.[14]

Before this democratic gathering were read such papers in history and ethnology as the following:[15]

England and the Slave Traffic
Three Centuries of Slavery in Parahyba
The Negro in the History of Alagôas
The Negro during the Dutch Occupation
Unusual Slaves
Physical Deformities of Negro Slaves
The Republic of the Palmares
The Negro Laborer in the Time of the *Banguê*[16] Compared with the Negro Laborer in the Time of the Sugar Factories
The Diet of Brazilian Slaves
Abolition and Its Causes
African Diseases in Brazil
Negro Music in Africa and Brazil
The Negro in the Folklore and Literature of Brazil
The Drama among Early Brazilian Negroes
The Contribution of the Negro to Brazilian Culture
A List of Nagô Words
Xangô
The Legend of Xangô and Its Corruption in Brazil
Invocations to Xangô Heard in Recife
African *Seitas*[17] in Recife
Notes on the *Catimbó*[18]

---

[14] *Op. cit.*, pp. 348–52.

[15] In several cases titles have not been translated literally; instead, an effort has been made to indicate more definitely the actual subject matter discussed.

[16] The primitive sugar mill used in colonial Brazil, often called the *engenho*, was also known as the *banguê*. [249]

[17] A fetish-cult center is often referred to as a *seita*.

[18] *Catimbó* is a word commonly used in northeast Brazil to designate the fetish cult, which is also known as the *candomblé* (in Bahia) and the *xangô* (in Recife). [794]

815
829

Ohum Eniadúdú[19]
Recipes for Afro-Brazilian *Quitutes*[20]
The *Calunga*[21] of the Maracatús
The "People's Library" and the "Modern Collectanea"[22]

Obviously, there is implied in these titles no interest other than in history and ethnology. But in the following ten papers, although there again appears to be no concern with problems of racial accommodation, one does note an awareness of physical differences and an interest in their measurement.

Some Anthropological Measurements of the Population of Recife
Some Data on the Physical Characteristics of the Population of Recife
Some Physical Measurements of Brazilian Negroes and Mulattoes
A Study of Cephalic Indices and Color Variation among Mulattoes in Pernambuco
A Contribution to the Study of Lapicque's Index
Physical Measurements of Negro Students
Comparative Heights and Weights of Newborn *Branco*, *Pardo*, and *Preto* Babies
A Statistical Study of Longevity in *Brancos*, *Pardos*, and *Pretos*
The Comparative Incidence of Tuberculosis in *Pretos* and *Brancos*
[776] Mental Disease among the Negroes of Pernambuco

---

[262] [19] Under this title two topics were considered: (1) legends from Dahomey and (2) Anamburucú (an Afro-Brazilian deity [see chap. x]).

[20] *Quitutes* are food delicacies.

[778] [776] [21] The *calunga* referred to here was a richly adorned female image representing a water deity. It was carried by the "Dama do Passo," a female dancer of the Maracatú.

[214] [22] The "Modern Collectanea" and the "People's Library" are two sets of inexpensive leaflets containing ballads and other folklore, historical sketches, anecdotes, prayers, recipes, etc. See, in this connection, Jorge Amado, "Literatura dos negros e mulatos da Baía," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal de São Paulo*, XLVIII (June, 1938), 179–82.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
, BRAZIL SL1

B
BD
815
563*
829

Quite exceptional in their subject matter are the following three papers:

Race Mixture in Brazil as a Eugenic Factor
The Mixed-Blood and the Problem of Degeneracy
The Social, as Opposed to the Racial, Causation of Degeneracy

These three papers, concerned as they obviously are with the oft-considered question of the relation of race mixture to degeneracy, indicate some concern in Brazil with this problem and thus appear at first sight to imply an interest in race relations in the North American sense of that expression. The question at issue turns out to be, however, largely an academic one, evoked perhaps by foreign literature and concerned with supporting arguments of white superiority and of Negro inferiority originating in Europe and the United States. At any rate, it is true that certain scholars, at a loss to account for the persistence in twentieth-century Brazil of African cultural forms, have seriously come to question the cultural capacities of the black race and to believe the future of Brazil prejudiced by the infusion of African blood.

B
BB
829
563*
[178]
[177]

Thus, about 1900, Nina Rodrigues, intimately acquainted with a number of Africans in Bahia and impressed with the slow rate at which they and their descendants were sloughing off African cultural forms and being assimilated into the white world,[13] and also influenced to a considerable degree by foreign writers,[14] raised very earnestly the question of "the capacity of the Negro to accommodate himself to the civilization of the superior races."[15] Doubting specifically the ability of the Negro to take on European civilization,[16]

---

[13] *Os africanos no Brasil*, pp. 407–9; see also *ibid.*, chaps. v–vii.

[14] *Ibid.*, chap. vi, esp. pp. 388–98.

[15] *Ibid.*, p. 385.

[16] *Ibid.*, p. 391.

B
BB
*
563
829

he identified the "Negro problem" with the question of "the cultural capacity of the Brazilian Negro; the means of increasing it or of compensating for its deficiencies; the actual value of the African's contribution in acclimating Europeans to the tropical zone; and the advisability of diluting the black population with a preponderance of white blood which would then control the country."[17]

The significant facts about these conclusions of Nina Rodrigues are (1) that they in no way challenged the commonly accepted Brazilian assumption of the inevitability of race mixture and (2) that, when this inquiry into the Negro's native capacity to assimilate European culture was published (posthumously) for the first time in 1932, it immediately aroused a storm of protest, to allay which such zealous but scientifically minded disciples of Nina Rodrigues as Arthur Ramos thought it necessary to remind Brazilians that "the Bahian master" had been influenced by "certain postulates of the epoch in which he labored" and that his followers are well aware that "the science of our days challenges the accuracy" of such conclusions.[18]

Restating, then, the "Negro problem" as far as Brazil is concerned, Arthur Ramos considers it "first of all a historical problem, a question of the slave traffic, of the different tribes imported, of the history of slavery, etc." He continues:

> It is further a problem in anthopogeography, a question of the physical characteristics of the various Negro stocks both in the areas of their origin and in Brazil, and of the variations occurring by reason of the change in their environment. It is an ethnographic problem, a question of the habits, traditions, etc., of the Negro in the countries of his origin, and their modification in the new habitat. It is a biological problem, a question of racial heredity and race mix-

---

[17] *Ibid.*, p. 392.

[18] *O negro brasileiro* (Rio, 1934), p. 22.

B
BB

563*
829

ture. It is a linguistic problem, a question of the influence of African dialects upon the Portuguese language. It is a sociological problem, a question of the influence of the Negro upon Brazilian social life.[29]

As here defined, then, the concern of Brazilian intellectuals interested in the Negro lies in problems other than those arising from racial maladjustment, with the possible exception implied by the phrase "questions of racial heredity and race mixture," and similarly suggested by the titles of the last-named three papers presented to the first Afro-Brazilian Congress. But, if the situation is analyzed more fully, one finds that each of these three papers *attacks* the positions that the Negro is racially inferior and that race mixture leads to degeneracy.

The thesis of Negro inferiority is today perhaps most forcefully defended by Oliveira Vianna, able sociologist and member of the National Academy of Letters. Well versed in the race literature of Europe and of the United States and impressed, like Nina Rodrigues, with the difficulties in the way of assimilating the African and his descendants, Vianna has written:

B
BB
[177]

> The pure Negroes never will be able, not even the most advanced representatives of the race, to be assimilated completely into the white culture; their capacity for civilization—their "civilizability," so to speak—does not extend beyond merely imitating, more or less imperfectly, the habits and customs of the whites. Between the Negro's mentality and that of the Caucasian lies a substantial and irreducible difference which no social or cultural pressure, no matter how long it may be continued, can possibly overcome.[30]

B
BB
[114]

---

[29] *Ibid.*, p. 19.

[30] Oliveira Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro* (2d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 156. It is obvious from a careful reading of his books that this able scholar inadvertently fails to distinguish between the biological and the cultural determinants in mental functioning and personality and that he also confuses cultural achievement with racial potentiality.

8
BB
*563
829
114

Thus the Negro, being "insensible to those superior impulses which constitute the dominant force in the white's mentality," contributes to the superior classes, Vianna contends, "only when he loses his purity and mixes with the white."[31]

Recognizing, however, that there are in Brazil "both inferior and superior mixed-bloods," Vianna offers in explanation that "a fortunate crossing of a superior type of Negro (for the Negro is not a unit) . . . . with a white individual well gifted eugenically may produce a superior mulatto . . . . if, by chance, in the play of hereditary influences, the eugenic potentialities of the white predominate."

In another connection Vianna maintains that

> the entire development of Brazilian collective mentality has in reality been nothing more than a continuous bringing-over . . . . of the racially inferior portions of our population to European mentality and morality: that is, to the mind and character of the white race. The superior mixed-bloods, those who during the long period of our national development have risen socially, did not rise nor establish themselves because of their mixed-blood mentality. Instead of preserving as they climbed the characteristics of their hybrid type, they on the contrary lost those very characteristics, left off being psychologically mixed; that is, they Aryanized themselves.[32]

To this latter passage the author of one of the three papers referred to above takes energetic exception.[33] Quoting this passage in full, he immediately disclaims any addiction to what he calls "the Aryan fetish of the illustrious sociologist." He maintains instead that "the greatness of Brazil comes from race mixture"; it has resulted in a better-adapted and more resistant individual, "the new variety, the mixed-blood *superior being*."

---

[31] *Ibid.*, p. 161.

[32] *Populações meridionaes do Brasil* (3d ed.; São Paulo, 1933), p. 154.

[33] A. Austregesilo, "A mestiçagem no Brasil como factor eugenico," in *Novos estudos afro-brasileiros*, ed. Freyre *et al.*, pp. 325-33.

B
B B
563*
114
829

Sharply departing from Vianna, and also from Jorge de Lima and Euclydes da Cunha, to all of whom he refers as "devotees of Aryanism," and from "those foreign literary men and sociologists of little standing" who claim "that the Brazilian is a product of three melancholy, inferior, and indolent races: that is, that the Brazilian is racially inferior," this author asserts that "the notable intellectual capacity of the Brazilian people and the existence among us of geniuses to an extent greater than in any other Ibero-American country, prove that it is not Aryan descent but race mixture which has given birth to the intelligence and the creative capacity of the Brazilian people." Not racial inferiority or degeneracy, but illiteracy, malnutrition, and disrespect for labor are responsible for what deficiencies Brazil may possess. This author concludes:

> I am certain that in Brazil miscegenation has brought and will continue to bring more benefits than evils. The greater portion of our people, as well as of our talented invididuals,[14] in politics, in the sciences, and in the arts, were, or are, mixed-bloods. For instance, I can at once cite such men as Gonçalves Dias, Tobias Barreto, Barão de Cotegipe, Floriano Peixoto, Rebouças, José do Patrocinio, Nilo Peçanha, Machado de Assis, Juliano Moreira, Olava Bilac, Lima Barreto, and many others: scientists, painters, sculptors, musicians, poets, military men; in all of whom the blood of Africa is represented to a considerable degree.

B
B B
563*
829
[114]

A perhaps less extreme and more scholarly but nonetheless vigorous attack upon the theory of Negro inferiority is to be found in the second of the three papers referred to above.[15] Regretting that "our . . . . physical, moral and so-

---

[14] This is probably an exaggerated statement of an actual truth.

[15] See Senhora Juliano Moreira, "Juliano Moreira e o problema do negro e do mestiço no Brasil," in *Novos estudos afro-brasileiros*, ed. Freyre *et al.*, pp. 146–50. In this article the widow of the late colored alienist gathers together some of his writings upon the subject.

B
BB
*
563
829

cial backwardness . . . . has been unjustly attributed to the single fact of miscegenation," the author of this paper, the able and widely known psychiatrist, Juliano Moreira, suggests that emphasis may more reasonably be laid upon the circumstances of colonization and slavery, the intemperate use of alcohol, and the debilitating effects of malnutrition.

> It is much easier to analyze the psychology of a nation than the psychology of a race. The results of psychological tests indicate that there do not exist in Brazil profound differences between individuals of diverse ethnic origin. What variations I have encountered were due more to the degree of instruction of each individual examined than to the ethnic group from which he came. This explains the fact that individuals from supposedly inferior ethnic groups, when born and reared in large cities, present a better psychological profile than those even of Nordic descent who have been reared in the backward environment of the interior.

In the third paper[36] referred to above, the author concludes that "what we have [in Brazil] is not an unalterable racial inferiority or superiority . . . . but an invariable inequality in economic development." Similarly, Gilberto Freyre, who considers Oliveira Vianna "the greatest Aryan mystic who has yet risen among us,"[37] attacks with vigor the theory of racial inferiority;[38] as also does Arthur Ramos, with special reference to the views of Vianna, in a paper[39] given a few years ago before the Centro de Estudos Oswaldo Spengler in Rio de Janeiro.[40] An interesting fact in

---

[36] Edison Carneiro, "Situação do negro no Brasil," in *Novos estudos afro-brasileiros*, ed. Freyre *et al.*, pp. 237–41.

[37] *Casa grande e senzala* (2d ed.; Rio, 1936), p. 218; see also *ibid.*, pp. 155 and 156.

[38] *Ibid.*, pp. 208–12.

[39] Arthur Ramos, "O negro na evolução social brasileira," read November 25, 1933.

[40] In reply, Vianna wrote: "I do not know whether the Negro is actually inferior or whether he is equal, or even superior, to the other races; but, judg-

B
B B
563 *
829

this connection, indicating the purely academic character of this question as conceived in Brazil, is that Vianna is himself a mixed-blood; while both Ramos and Freyre are whites.

That the position of Arthur Ramos, Gilberto Freyre, and the authors of the three papers referred to above represents in a general way the common attitude at Bahia is clearly indicated throughout a number of documents written by white Bahian students, each of whom, although aware of obvious mental and cultural differences between most of the Negroes, on the one hand, and most of the whites, on the other, consider this inequality to spring from the present inferior educational advantages of the Negro and consequently to be transitory in nature. One young lady wrote: "Although the blacks in Bahia are still on a rather inferior intellectual plane, and some people, especially outside Brazil, believe that they will never attain the level of the white man, I think that this class is continually preparing a foundation upon which one day it will rise illustrious." Another wrote: "Their former position as slaves gave to the Negroes a certain degree of inferiority which to some extent has continued down to the present time. However, this inequality is, day by day, disappearing. I believe that very early in the future the *pretos* in Bahia will have ability equal to anything in the white race."

We have already noted the pride in the "progressive whitening" of the population common to all classes in Brazil. A general tendency to absorb diverse ethnic groups has

---

ing by the testimony of the past and of the present, the only acceptable conclusion is that, up until now, civilization has been the dowry of races other than the black; and it has been necessary, if the Negro is to exercise any civilizing rôle whatsoever, that he be mixed with other races, especially with the Aryan and the Semitic: that is, he must lose his racial purity" (*Raça e assimilação* [2d ed.; São Paulo, 1934], p. 285).

B
BB
*563
829

been persistently characteristic of Brazilian society. Out of the traditional behavior which developed in response to the circumstances and conditions of colonial life emerged an informal racial policy, or racial ideology, which has served as a philosophy underlying and giving consistency to the mores, appearing only when they are challenged from without and individuals seek to rationalize and defend their customary conduct. A Bahian school girl of white parentage put this informal policy into words when she remarked: "Race mixture is an inevitable thing. We Brazilians are becoming one single people."

BB
*
563
829

Thus in Bahia the black and the white do not stand over against each other as irreducible ethnic groups, differing not only in appearance, which is obvious, but also in kind, and fated ever to remain separate and distinct. Such inferiority as at present exists is not thought of as racial and permanent but rather as cultural and temporary, and already well on the way to extinction. Every citizen is considered first of all a Brazilian, and every Brazilian takes pride in all other nationals, irrespective of racial origin. Distinctions are secondary. In this connection one ought perhaps to point out that the widespread web of personal relationships in Bahia tends to make a man or woman not so much a member of a category (e.g., a Negro or a mulatto) as an individual (João or Maria).

BB
[571]

BB
*563
192
578

Even for individuals beyond the range of intimate personal relationships racial terms are seldom used in Bahia. To call a colored man in his hearing a "Negro" or a "mulatto" is not "good form." These terms are used to a man's face only when one is enraged or otherwise desirous of giving offense. It is, as we have noted, like calling an Italian immigrant a "Wop" or a Mexican a "Greaser." These terms em-

phasize the alien character of the individual's origin. Thus, 563 *
if a Bahian wishes to be particularly insulting, he will aggravate 192
the sting of "Negro" by adding to it *de Africa* 578
("from Africa"). In this way he doubly accentuates his reference
to the foreign origin of a black.

Although it is true that dark color, as we have seen, is 563 *
ordinarily identified with lower status and white color with 565
upper-class position, rising in class tends to take a man out
of even the color category. For instance, a white Bahian remarked [578]
of an upper-class mulatto, "I would hesitate to call [192]
him a *pardo*, although he plainly is one; some of his friends
might overhear me." For use in such cases, *moreno* is the
term "mais elegante."

As early as the imperial period the title of *capitão-mor*, we 563 *
are told, "whitened even dark mulattoes."[41] Thus, in the 554
second decade of the nineteenth century, the Englishman, Henry Koster, on referring, in a conversation with a citizen of Pernambuco, to the fact that a mulatto was occupying the local office of *capitão-mor*, was told the man in question was not a mulatto. Insisting that he undoubtedly appeared to the eyes to be a mulatto, Koster received the rather unexpected reply, "He used to be a mulatto, but he is not now. For how can a *capitão-mor* be a mulatto?"[42]

Under such circumstances racial consciousness tends to be 563 *
reduced to a minimum. For if the individual can with rela- 829

---

[41] Gilberto Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos* (São Paulo, 1936), p. 318.

[42] "In conversing on one occasion with a man of color who was in my service, I asked if a certain Capitam-mor was not a mulatto man; he answered, 'he was, but is not now (era; porem já nam he).' I begged him to explain, when he added, 'Can a Capitam-mor be a mulatto man (pois Senhor Capitam-mor pode ser mulato)?'" (Henry Koster, *Travels in Brazil, 1809 to 1815* [Philadelphia, 1817], II, 175–76). Note reference to this incident in Vianna, *Evolução do povo brasileiro*, p. 153, and in Freyre, *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 318.

*563 829 tive case escape identification with a group into which he has been born, not only so far as race is concerned but even to some extent color as well, and if there is little attempt on the part of other persons to treat him differently merely because some of his ancestors were of different ethnic origin, "we-group" and "others-group" will delay in arising as objects in his experience; or, having arisen, will tend to be vague and inchoate entities, not vivid, clear cut, and sharply defined.

*563 815 Few colored intellectuals in Bahia are at all interested in studying and writing about the Negro; and, of those who are, such as the *preto* João da Silva Campos and the *pardos* Edison Carneiro and João Varella, their interest lies rather in the *Africano*, in his customs and traditions, and especially in those survivals of African culture still extant among descendants of imported slaves.

*563 192 829 There is no tendency to dignify the term "Negro" as there is among race-conscious Negroes in the United States. In fact, as we have already seen, "Negro" is a term rarely used either by blacks or by whites. When on occasion it is employed, no Bahian colored man, unless by chance he has been in the United States or in communication with American Negroes, is at all concerned about spelling it with a capital *N*. Nor does he resent the word *ama* ("mammy").

*563 829 This is not to say, however, that the blacks and the mixed-bloods are completely satisfied with their lot and that they utter no protest against the fate which has made the white man largely superordinate both economically and socially. On the contrary, the lower-class Negro often conceives of himself as mistreated and misunderstood.

There are, in this respect, two classes of blacks in Bahia: (1) those who are aware of, and articulate about, the race

563 *
829

problem abroad and (2) those who are not. The former, a literate minority, are sensitive, for instance, to the situation in the United States and point to Brazil in favorable contrast. As one black remarked, "Here in Bahia whites and blacks are never at one another's throats as they are in the United States. A Negro is treated here as if he were no different from other men. So, while North Americans suffer more and more from internal strife, Brazil will every year become more and more one people, united in blood and sentiment."

A *preto* physician, of relatively unmixed African descent who possessed some command of English wrote the following in that idiom:

> We have not such a thing here in Bahia as race segregation, as among our illustrious North American friends.
>
> There is here only one constitution for all people without race or caste distinction.
>
> There is not here either white or black; there are only Brazilian citizens and foreigners.
>
> The Brazilian Negroes were born just like the whites and die the same way.
>
> The blacks are brothers of the whites and they love each other in our country.
>
> We are one nation and one people and not a conglomeration of peoples.
>
> I think it would be well for North Americans to get acquainted with the great love which unites the whites and the blacks for the grandeur of our country and take with them the example to their country; which being at its elevation still lynches its Negro citizens, as if all men were not equal in the eyes of God and the law.
>
> Is there one sun for the whites and another for the blacks, my good friends?
>
> In Brazil we recognize *one* God, *one* nation, and *one* people.

*
563
829 Directing attention to a report in a Bahian newspaper of a lynching in Georgia, this man on another occasion said:

> Look at that! We've never known anything like that in Brazil. Why do the whites in the United States do such a thing? [With a tone of unbelief] Is it just because he's black? I can't understand it. You just can't conceive of such a thing happening here. The black man is as much a Brazilian as any white.

*
563
829
565 On the other hand, there are Bahian blacks who, as we have noted, are dissatisfied with their lot. These individuals base their dissatisfaction, however, on an entirely different ground from that of Negroes in the United States; namely, upon class, rather than caste, differences. These blacks, who are all from the lower strata, feel very strongly that the classes occupying a superior social position are not giving the other classes what they deserve. The struggle for position in Brazil, therefore, takes on some of the character of a class struggle in the Marxian sense.

A reflection of this attitude is evident in one of the three last-named papers presented to the first Afro-Brazilian Congress. The author is a philanthropically minded young journalist. Under the influence of leftist ideology and earnestly impressed with the obviously low economic level of the Bahian lower classes, he writes, somewhat bitterly:

> The black has been, and continues to be, a being apart, almost an animal, permitted by the authorities merely to have access to the streets and to labor for the whites. Nothing more. For this reason the black can never hope to improve himself, to raise very high his intellectual or moral level, the failure to do which is responsible for his continuing animism, his criminality, etc.[43]

*
563
829 Attitudes of dissatisfaction and protest are also evident in the following suggestions presented by a Bahian *preto* to the second Afro-Brazilian Congress:

---

[43] Edison Carneiro, *op. cit.*, p. 239.

563 *
829

> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to point out how deplorable is the condition of the black man in Brazil.
>
> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to say to the black man that social lynching is worse than physical lynching.
>
> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to break the chains of oppression.
>
> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to say to the black man that he is dying of tuberculosis, of the heavy labor of carrying weighty burdens, of passing up necessities,[44] and of sorrow.
>
> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to remind the black man that he is selected for, and preferred in, the lower occupations.
>
> The Afro-Brazilian Congress ought to ask the black man how long he wants to be a slave?

563 *
829
[463]

"What the black does not have here," admitted a Bahian white, "is economic equality. He ordinarily gets only the meanest of jobs. He may be a manual laborer, a *carregador*, a mason or other artisan, but he seldom gets much above this level." "The Bahian black is poor and oppressed," said a mulatto. "The best positions are usually difficult for him to attain, especially if he has no education. He has little chance of becoming an important intellectual, commercial, or political figure; the best jobs are ordinarily beyond his reach."

563 *
829

The feeling of being abused and unfairly treated by fate is quite evident in the following document written by a *preto* stevedor:

> In the past the black man was the laborer, the slave, vilely treated by the owners of great wealth whose descendants today often fail to recognize in him the principal factor in the building of Brazil and continue to deny him what he rightly deserves as a reward and a recompense for his untiring services (and even sacrifices), and for his humility in making himself always acceptable to his masters.
>
> Today the descendants of these slaveowners are the great indus-

---

[44] I.e., of going without midday meal while at work, without sufficient sleep, medical attention, etc.

*
563

829 trialists and capitalists. Although they are unable to do as their predecessors did, nevertheless they make use, in a disguised manner, of that same abuse of power. They give evidence of a feeling of superiority, which confirms the presence in them of remnants of the former sentiments; they deprive the black man of equality, if not in ability, at least in the opportunity to make use of it.[48]

If the black man were properly educated, he axiomatically would be equal to those who judge themselves superior. Only from men who have leisure to spend in study will there come descendants with lofty aspirations; not from men handicapped by excessive labor and deficient nourishment. This does not prove less intelligence but only less good fortune. For if the forebears of the blacks had been masters of the plantations, the slave huts, and the mines, their descendants would naturally have been capable of educating their children with the same diligence and care as do the whites.

[463] Today, the blacks are employed only as simple laborers, such as masons, carpenters, tailors, mechanics, shoemakers, ironworkers, stevedores, *carregadores*, etc. The reason the blacks do not use their abilities as business agents, bookkeepers, custom-house clerks, exporters, importers, etc., is that they do not possess the requisite skill and training, a deficiency which is principally due to the whites themselves, who always hinder the entering of this element of the population into the above-indicated classes where they might exercise authority over the other element and then they call them "inferiors," "the poor," "low-class."

(871] The black child may attend elementary school and learn a few indispensable things. But since his parents cannot send him to secondary and superior schools, directly thereafter he goes to work; which causes, or at least contributes to, his inability to enter pursuits other than those in which stevedores, *carregadores*, etc., work.

This is the reason why the black man cannot attain a position of economic security in the Bahian community.

*
563 In assessing the significance of this document, one must
565 draw a distinction between the lower-class *pretos* and those
829 other blacks who have climbed somewhat in the economic

---

[48] I.e., in opportunities to develop these abilities through education.

563 *
565
829

and social order and have attained a measure of security. If one takes account of class identification, the dissatisfaction and protest here illustrated may be interpreted—and in connection with the whole cultural situation in Brazil properly should be interpreted—as incidents of a class rather than of a racial struggle; of a competitive process which naturally takes on the seeming appearance of a racial struggle due to the coincidence, in general, of class and color identifications.

That this interpretation is tenable is borne out by the fact that from Negroes who have improved their social position one does not hear this note of dissatisfaction and protest. *Pretos* or dark *pardos* who have attained some standing in the community and some measure of recognition commonly defend the white man and laud the merits of Brazil, as did the Negro physician quoted above. Said he, on another occasion, somewhat exaggeratedly: "In Brazil there is no fear of color, no prejudice of race. A black man may enter any profession and draw his clients from any group. See, I was a member of the class of 1928 [proudly displaying a framed panel of photographs of graduates in that year of the Faculty of Medicine]. The greater part of my clients are white. And at the clinic, look at this! [showing a photograph of a large number of children, many of whom were white]. These came to me for professional advice."

A black of some social standing remarked with a show of pride, "Here we are all equal, black, white, and mixed-blood. No position is closed to the black man, and no profession. He can reach any level for which he shows himself fit."

If the presence of a limited degree of race consciousness in Bahia does not imply that the lower-class *preto* is completely satisfied with his lot, neither does it mean that the

*
563
829
[565]

whites, as we have already seen, do not ordinarily look upon the mass of the blacks as, at least temporarily, socially and culturally inferior. This attitude is, however, more like that of an indulgent parent toward an immature but gradually developing child than like the attitude of one who feels himself superior because he belongs to a race which he believes to be endowed by nature with capacities superior to those of any other. As a white remarked, "At the present time the *pretos* are very backward in comparison with the whites. But I think that with social evolution they are becoming more and more intelligent and that eventually they will contribute equally with the whites to the forward march of Brazil."

If many of the lower-class blacks and darker mixed-bloods tend to feel themselves somewhat abused and misunderstood, the lighter, and to some extent the medium-dark, mixed-bloods are ordinarily jealous of their social advance, speak well of the whites and of treatment at their hands, and conceive of themselves as being, if not white, at least nearly white. At all events, they want to be white, and they ordinarily are, by their friends at least, so considered.

Pedro Calmon, thoroughly familiar with Bahian tradition, has stated:

> The *pardos* very early in our history came to consider themselves equal to the whites. Usually they were free; and the free man always had contempt for the slave. This scorn, described by Ewbank, Kidder and Fletcher, Agassiz, and all the writers who left their testimony concerning the society of the nineteenth century, is quite characteristic of the time; even dark *pardos* were in their own estimation equal to the whites. The lighter ones did not permit their European character to be at all questioned.[46]

---

[46] In correspondence with the author.

563*
829

While the mixed-bloods are consistently proud of their white lineage, they (at least the ambitious ones among them) tend, as we have noted, to be ashamed of black relatives and to hide, in so far as possible, the too obvious evidence of relation to them. This ordinarily occurs when the mixed-blood has achieved some economic competence or otherwise improved his standing in the social order.

Such an attitude is not greatly dissimilar to that of an upper-class resident of New York, for example, toward his relatives among the mountaineers of Tennessee. As with all individuals who within the span of a few years have climbed from one class to another, the self-confidence and sense of superiority of the Brazilian mixed-blood are to some extent intermittently, or even constantly, threatened by feelings of insecurity. João Varella has written of some of these individuals: [539]

> Of his white father, whom he never saw,
> He has a picture in the parlor;
> But of the Negro woman who gave him birth
> He has no picture, nor does he even speak of her.[47]

Similarly, Gilberto Freyre has pointed out that many times in the past

> there resulted from . . . . the fact that the mother or the grandmother of the house was a mulatto situations often dramatic which are reflected in certain Brazilian romances and other accounts. Fair individuals often sought to keep visitors from seeing the fat mulatto grandmother, or even mother, with her huge negroid buttocks; or kept out of sight the dark brother, or dark sister, the tira-teima"[48]

---

[47] From an unpublished manuscript entitled "O africano na Bahia."

[48] Elucidating this phrase, a Bahian said, "The *tira teima* is an individual who in himself constitutes a living negation of the family's claim to whiteness. Being darker, or otherwise revealing the presence of Negro blood, this individual destroys the illusion (*tira a teima*) of *fidalguia* [superior standing] which the family wishes to give out." [558]

*
563
829

of the family, he or she whose color or features would inevitably reveal less noble or less Aryan origin.[49]

The black quite naturally resents this feeling of superiority on the part of the mixed-blood. His characteristic attitude is reflected in the common saying, "He who can't be a white man is a black." A Negro cook burst out one day, "Listen, wise one, you're just a dirty mulatto! You don't even belong to a pure race! I'd rather be black than yellow any day!" Another black, angry at a mixed-blood, blurted out, "All right! That's what you get from a mulatto. Mixing up the races always brings something like this."

"These mulattoes!" bitterly complained another *preto*, angered at the pretentious behavior of one of his mixed-blood relatives. "Dirty scum! Deny their grandparents, their uncles, and their aunts, even their own parents! They don't want to be blacks; they want to be whites!" "Mulattoes, when they get money," complained a black woman, "don't want to admit any longer that they are mulattoes." And, she added, somewhat bitterly, "the whites will accept them, too, if they have money."

---

[49] *Sobrados e mucambos*, p. 355. That, outside the ranks of the relatively small number of colored Bahians identified with the African culture, a desire to approximate as nearly as possible the whites in physical appearance is widespread is attested by numerous advertisements in the newspapers like that in *A Tarde* for November 30, 1936:

HAIR!!!

Wooly hair turned into a permanent!
Kinky hair unkinked!
Pomades Indiana, Americana, etc. [Japoneza, Fiza] correct defects no matter what they are!

Sung by mulattoes is the verse:

Sae azar	Go away!
Por aqui a fora!	Leave me alone!
Cabellos espixados	Only hair that's straightened
Estão na moda agora!	Is now in style!

563*
829

Usually the whites acknowledge gratefully the blacks' contribution to the building of Brazil and prefer them to the *pardos* on the ground that they are less pretentious, more friendly, and more loyal and appreciative. "We like the blacks here," said a white Bahian. "And why not? Didn't they help build Brazil and aren't they still helping to create our country? We are not like the English and the North Americans. They are enemies of the Negro, but we are his brothers. We should all be kind to them, for it is not their fault that they are black."

A Bahian historian, in describing the colonial period, wrote:

> The black was an agent of social regeneration by reason of his affective qualities which aided the interpenetration of . . . . diverse elements in the Brazilian population. The slave woman reared in her arms the children of her master; she brought into the white home not only African delicacies but also courteous manners and won protection and lasting friendship from the white family by her tractableness, her devotion, her kindly spirit.[19]

Another white Bahian remarked:

> I like the blacks better than I do the mulattoes; in fact, much better! Do you know why? They're more honest, for one thing. They're more dependable. Why, I wouldn't hesitate to trust a fortune in the keeping of Francisco [his black servant]. They're more friendly, more considerate, more grateful. This is true not only of those who work for me [this man employs regularly sixteen laborers, has eighty-four Negro and dark mulatto hucksters whom he supplies with oranges from his *roça* for peddling in the streets], but it goes for black professional men as well. I know a black lawyer, for instance, a very fine man. I'd trust my legal affairs with him as soon as I would with any white lawyer I know.
>
> I used occasionally to meet North American Negroes in France. I didn't like them. They were proud and haughty and very touchy.

---

[19] Pedro Calmon, *Historia da Bahia* (2d ed.; Bahia, n.d.), p. 28.

*
563
829

> And I used to tell them that the Brazilian Negro was much superior to them. That made them mad, and they used to say, "That's what you think, because the Brazilian Negro takes everything from you whites and is willing to live on an inferior plane." But I said, "I don't know about that. I'm a member of an organization in Bahia which has a black president."

The white acknowledges the mixed-blood's intelligence, but he often resents the characteristic aggressiveness which the mulatto, in the course of his ambitious struggle to climb the social ladder, has developed, as well as other distinguishing personality traits which have appeared in the course of this competitive struggle. As one man put it: "I resent their forwardness, their enviousness, their jealousy, their 'lack of respect,' their pretentiousness, their inconstancy and unreliability, their arrogance and (upon gaining some measure of improved social position) their overweaning pride, their boastfulness, cocksureness, 'cheekiness,' and general manner of showing off." This attitude is also reflected in the common saying, "A mulatto *pernostico* is a redundant expression," a statement which a Bahian elucidated in the following words:

> The mulatto who characteristically desires to be white and who for this reason looks down on the pure black, tends to exaggerate the qualities which he observes in the whites and to emulate them to such an extent that a word, *pernostico*, has been coined to describe him. He is always trying to be what he isn't.

Even the word *mestiço* ("mixed-blood") has come to be, to some extent at least, a term of *desprezo*, connoting, as a local citizen expressed it, "someone who is desirous of supplanting his father, exceedingly ambitious to get ahead, and gain prestige." Another reflection of this aversion is the common saying, "He who sees a mulatto and does not run, has oozing joints."

Said, somewhat exaggeratedly perhaps, a prominent white: 563* 829

> I'm going to get out of Bahia and go to São Paulo. This town is too full of mulattoes and of mulatto traits. Bahia has become a *pau de sebo* ["greased pole"]. No one wants to get the prizes, but they all want to pull down everyone who tries to get them. This place is full of envy, of ill will and egotism, all mulatto characteristics. The mulatto is not like the black; he is a person without character. He has no honor. He's always envious, he's jealous, he's so busy "maintaining himself," pushing himself in where he isn't wanted, that he can't tend to his business or to his job; he can't do anything except make of himself a general nuisance.

"I always find black servants preferable to mulattoes," another white Bahian said. "They're more faithful, more respectful, even if less intelligent perhaps. The mulattoes are always trying to be 'whiter' than they are."

A student wrote:

> The *pardo* has one quality which the *preto* does not have. He is more *pernostico*, probably because he has the strong conviction that, even if one parent *is* black, the other is white. He ordinarily is not as accomplished as the whites, but he wants to appear in public better than he is. The *pretos*, no; they are more pleasant and have the natural gentleness of a race which has suffered much and has been made a martyr by the *senzalas*. I do not mean by this that there are no *pretos* who are ill-bred and stupid; but I do mean to say that such *pretos* are more rare than those *pardos* who, when they attain some position of importance in our public life, act as if they no longer tread upon the earth.

The attitudes engendered between the various ethnic groups at Bahia tend to be those ordinarily arising out of a struggle for position in any class order. The newly arrived, as well as those engaged in elbowing their way up, are everywhere resented. These attitudes focus upon color for the reason that, within limits, color is still identified with social po- 563* 565 829

* 563 565 829 sition. But the fact that these attitudes tend to disappear in cases where the colored man's claim to advanced standing rests on grounds of demonstrated competence and obvious personal worth is highly significant. It identifies the Bahian social order as a class society wherein competition takes the form of a struggle between classes (which by reason of historic accident happen to coincide to a considerable degree with color) rather than a struggle between races or colors as such.

* 563 829 Said a white Bahian: "We like a person to be modest. One who is aggressive and self-assertive we tend to shove back a little. That's one reason why the black, Raul Calogeras, is so well regarded. He never presumes, never pushes himself forward. Whites respect him for what he is, especially for his great intellectual ability."

Another white Bahian, acquainted with the United States, said:

> As I think of it, the feeling toward the Negro here is somewhat like the feeling toward the Jew in the United States. As long as he remains a Jew, it is not the thing to marry him, but occasionally it is done with more or less comment. Your dealings with the Jew depend a great deal on the kind of a Jew he is. If he's a low type, you leave him to himself. If he's overly ambitious, aggressive, and always pushing himself forward, you resent his behavior. If he's educated and capable, but still modest, and at the same time willing to give up his Jewish separatism, you are apt to share more or less your experiences with him. The less he is like a Jew, the more be tries to be like other Americans, the more you have to do with him. In a similar way, the more the Negro repudiates his African connections, the more he comes to be like Europeans, but in a modest, inoffensive way, the more we have to do with him.

A white Bahian wrote: "Naturally those persons who have ethnic characteristics more like those of the white race enjoy somewhat greater prestige. But this does not prevent

563*
829

a man who has real worth from attaining a superior position just because he is colored. Absolutely not."

"Especially in Bahia, where there is much prejudice regarding 'quality,' " wrote a black, "a *pardo* or a *preto* is, in the presence of whites, never well thought of except he be a person of intellectual capacity or of some means; for in Bahia these two characteristics are very important."

A white student wrote:

> Race for me changes nothing in an individual. I think the *preto*, the *pardo*, and the *branco* should all be treated alike. Distinctions open to the whites ought to be equally open to the blacks and to the mulattoes. It is not they who made themselves black; it is not they who are responsible for their dark color. I have seen or known of *pretos* and *pardos* who on every occasion could readily replace certain *brancos*. Such men as these, in my opinion, are at least equal to the whites. I repeat, not race but personality influences me; a man who has a good character and is intelligent and competent merits distinction, be he white, black, or *pardo*.

563*
554

Among "the ten most important Bahians" selected by a hundred and twenty-two students in the Escola Normal were three mulattoes and two *brancos da Bahia*. Sixty-seven students in the Law School chose six whites, two *brancos da Bahia*, a mulatto, and a *preto* among the ten most prominent local citizens. Sixteen girls in a mission school conducted by North American missionaries listed two *brancos da Bahia*, a mulatto, and two *pretos* among those who, in their judgment, were "the ten most important Bahians."

[P.234 is blank]

[P. 235]

000

V

THE AFRICAN HERITAGE

[P. 236 is blank]

CHAPTER IX

OS AFRICANOS

178
[563]*

THE connection between Africa and Bahia is perhaps more intimate and has been maintained over a longer period of time than any similar connection elsewhere in the New World. Although assimilation of the Africans and their descendants has been proceeding at a gradually accelerating rate and has now reached an advanced stage, identification with Africa and with African cultural forms still marks off rather noticeably a portion of the darker population. Differences in dress, in food and food habits, in forms of religious expression, in sacred specialists, in attempts to exercise control over personal destiny and over other human beings, in credulity in folklore, and, to a limited extent, in language describe different worlds which still coexist at Bahia: one largely African in derivation, the other European.

565
171
[177]

The mental world of the Bahian upper class, which, as we have seen, includes a considerable number of the lighter mixed-bloods, is not greatly dissimilar to that of the same stratum in predominantly Catholic areas of Europe, especially in Portugal, Spain, and France, the latter of which has for a long time been the "intellectual motherland" of Brazil.

565
212

But the superior, educated class is relatively small. Most of the people in the city, as well as in the state of Bahia, are illiterate and would be included in what is ordinarily conceived of as the folk. Of this group, the Africans and their descendants obviously constituted in the past, and still constitute today, a large element.

178
184 This division in cultural identification, however, is not always sharply defined. Adherence to African cultural forms, for instance, the *candomblé*, often varies not only from family to family but also from individual to individual in the same family group; and, occasionally, in the same individual with reference to different cultural elements, to different periods in his life, and even to varying moods in his experience. In other words, African cultural forms at Bahia are disintegrating at a comparatively rapid rate.

565
178
177 Nor should one assume that the body of customs and traditions which marks off to some extent this lower-class world is entirely of African origin. While it undoubtedly is composed in considerable part of elements originating in Africa, certain native Indian customs and traditions, together with ideas and practices common to the lower classes of Europe, as well as other customary behavior which has arisen in response to the circumstances of life in Brazil, contribute to it. The disentanglement of these diverse strands is, in some instances, a difficult and exceedingly laborious task.

It should be emphasized that these distinctions follow cultural and not necessarily racial lines. The lower class, as we have seen, includes a number of Europeans, and these have in numerous cases taken over sentiments and attitudes of African origin. Moreover, as the blacks and the mixed-bloods rise in class, they tend to slough off all identification with Africa and with African cultural forms.

439
175 Bahian Negroes long maintained direct contact with the West Coast. Even after the extinction of the slave traffic, vessels regularly plied between Bahia and Lagos, repatriating nostalgic emancipated Negroes and returning with West

Coast products much prized by Africans and their descend- 439
ants in Brazil.[1] An elderly Bahian Negro recently brought 175
out from among his treasured possessions a faded photo- [215]
graph of blacks aboard a ship on their way to Africa and [422]
pointed out an *alabaque*, or sacred drum, and a woman in [534]
saia grande.[2] He recalls having been many times with his
father at the docks in Bahia when vessels came in from
Africa and sailors brought news of Lagos.

Trade with the West Coast, however, gradually decreased 439
until, by 1905, it had almost entirely disappeared. Today, 178
only a few important articles employed in the fetish ritual,
such as cowries, *obis* and *orobôs* (sacred fruits), *pimenta* [796]
(pepper) *da costa*, *palha* (straw) *da costa*, *sabão* (soap) *da*
costa, and strips of *pano* (cloth) *da costa*, are occasionally
imported from Africa.

Numerous Africans, their interest in Brazil stirred by Bra- 167
zilian Negroes returning to the West Coast, are said to have
emigrated to Bahia as recently as thirty years ago. Consid- [423]
erable areas in and about the city—for example, Caminho do
São Gonçalo, Caminho do Cruz, and a portion of the Ter-
reiro—were once owned, it is said, by *Africanos*.

Today, native-born Africans as a population element are 563*

[1] Pedro Calmon, *Historia social do Brasil* (3 vols.; São Paulo, 1937-39), I, 182. It is also reported that on at least two occasions representatives of African chiefs arrived in Bahia from Ajudá, with which port Bahian officials were maintaining direct commercial relations. One arrived during the administration of the Vice-rei Conde de Athouguia; two others "and an interpreter," on May 26, 1795. See João Varella, *Da Bahia que eu vi* (Bahia, 1935), pp. 153-57; J. B. de Sá e Oliveira, "Dois embaixadores africanos mandados a Bahia pelo Rei do Dahomé," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, LVI, Part I (1895), 413. [291]

[2] The large skirt still worn *bouffant* by many Bahian black women. The date was approximately 1805. [178]

*

563 virtually extinct.[3] Only an occasional individual of African birth may be found, like, for instance, a certain elderly black once prominent in the fetish cults not only of Bahia but also of Rio de Janeiro who was born in Lagos, his father having purchased his mother out of slavery in Brazil shortly before his birth and taken her to Africa. He knows four *Africanos* still living in Rio. In 1936 he met in Brotas (a subdivision of Bahia) an elderly African woman with facial scarification and almost no command of Portuguese. She has since died.

648 829 Thus, actual contact with Africa is today little more than a memory in the minds of a few of the older blacks, who recall stories told by their parents or by other Africans of persons, places, and events in Africa; or who years ago visited in the home of African ancestors or were, perhaps, personally acquainted with blacks plying their small vessels between Bahia and the West Coast. However, certain individuals of the older generation still cherish sentimental attachment to Africa, as is indicated by the expression occasionally heard on the lips of an elderly Negro, as he reverently turns his eyes upward toward the sky, "Sou filho de dois Africanos, graças a Deus!"[4] "If I had the money," remarked another black, his eyes lighting up, "I'd go to Africa, to Abeokuta, build me a house, and live like a man ought to."

[159] An elderly Bahian Negro recalled:

> My mother was just a young girl when she was captured by a warrior in Africa. He wanted to sell her to a slave trader in Dahomey.

---

[191] [114]

[3] Since lower-class Negroes who have difficulty in speaking correct Portuguese occasionally attempt to cover up their chagrin by saying that they are *Africanos*, and others, participating in social circles where prestige attaches to the native-born African, may deliberately misstate their origin, the incautious observer may be led erroneously to think that there are a considerable number of Africans still living in Bahia.

[4] "My father and mother were both Africans, thank God!"

159
648.
829

On that day two younger children were with her, a baby she was carrying on her back and a child she was leading by the hand.

She told me of a terrible thing which she saw on that day. Two warriors were running to catch a young girl. Each grabbed one of her arms, and they began to quarrel, pulling at her and shouting, "She's mine! She's mine!" But neither could jerk her away from the other. Finally one swung his big knife, and slash! He cut the girl in half and told the other man that now he could have his share.

My mother's name was Manjengbasa, which means, "Don't leave me alone." She was born after her mother had lost both of her first two children. She carried a scar on her cheek which meant that she was a Yoruba; for all Yorubas, both men and women, have this mark. She married my father here in Brazil, and when I was born they called me Ògeládê.

When I was thirteen years and eleven months old, my father took me to *Af-ri-ca;* to Lagos, *West-Coast-of-Af-ri-ca*, Nigeria. Ige-sha is two days away. Oyó used to be the capital. And there is Akra on the coast; there is Ashanti, and Groweh, and Ifé, and Egba. My father was from Egba, and his father was from Abeokuta. And there is Efun and Dahomey.

My father was only on a visit. He soon came back to Bahia to take care of his business. He was at that time importing African things. But I stayed in Lagos eleven years and nine months. From 1875 until 1886 I was there. Later I went again to Africa and remained another year. And three years after that I again returned, to sell coral and fine and coarse wool. I bought *pano da costa* to sell here.

My grandfather was a great warrior. He had a large plot of ground, but he was more of a warrior than a farmer. One day while fighting he got an arrow in his arm. He jerked it out and the blood covered him. When, years later, my grandfather died, I was a child of six years.

My uncle also was a great warrior. He was younger than my father. When they brought my father to Brazil, my uncle was left there in Africa.

My grandfather had forty wives. He lived in an *atalaia*,[3] a house

---

[3] Composed of many dwellings placed side by side and having a common roof.

159
648
829 as long as from here to the entrance of the fort,[6] just for the family of my grandfather. He was buried in a room. A *quartinha* of water which is always kept full still stands there today.

When my father was born, my grandmother was already an old woman. But she was still very strong. When my grandfather died, she walked all by herself up to the place where they buried him. When I went to Africa, she was in Ibadum. She never saw my father again. When he took me to Africa, she did not get to see him because the Africans were fighting fiercely. No one could travel as far as from here to Rio Vermelho.[7] So my father did not get to see his mother. But when she found out that he had been in Lagos and had left a son there, she never left off speaking of me. She wished to have me stolen, but the men who came to carry me to my grandmother never found me alone. They brought me presents. My grandmother had made me an African food which lasts two or three months and does not spoil. It is made with *fubá* of maize, crushed. All is seasoned with fragrant and savory seasonings, with onions and shrimps, and put in a large pan. It is like a cake they call here *bom bocado.* In the African language it is called *adúm.* Rolled up in leaves they gave it to me. My tutor ate part of it too.[8] For fifteen days we ate *adúm.* When I came back to Bahia and told my father I had eaten *adúm*, he lost almost the whole day crying, because he had not seen his mother for almost fifty years, let alone eaten her cooking. He looked up at me, and said 'You, my son; *you* ate *adúm!*' "

648
177 Some contact with Africa is still maintained through family connections, although these are now rare; by means of African visitors, principally individuals from the crews of English ships recruited in Lagos; and by way of occasional newspapers published on the East or West Coast in Portuguese, English, or even African languages.

Thus, one will occasionally find in the possession of Bahian Negroes a copy of the *Nigerian Daily Times*, published in Lagos.[9] In this journal for December, 1932, a Bahian black recently pointed out photos of Cleonice de Assumpção Alakija, "the youngest daughter of Dr. Maxwell P. de Assumpção Alakija, a lawyer of Bahia, Brazil," who "recently graduated as a throat and ear specialist from the Faculty of Medicine at Bahia"; of Dally Assumpção Alakija, youngest son of Dr. Maxwell, "recently graduated in Bahia as a civil engineer"; and of Adeyemo Alakija, their cousin, in the royal robes of an African chief from Abeokuta. The caption of the accompanying article was "A Notable Egba, Adeyemo Alakija."

---

[6] About one hundred yards.

[7] About three miles.

[8] The boy had been placed in a mission school.

This African cousin of Bahian blacks had been "honored by His Highness, the *Alaké* of Abeokuta," at a festival celebrating the one hundredth anniversary of the settlement of the Egbas at Abeokuta following severe internecine warfare and had subsequently been installed as "The Barujun of Aké." According to the account, Adeyemo Alakija belongs to a "distinguished family." His father was Marculino Assumpção, "Chief Akigbotum, known also as Elemeji, one of the first men to own a cotton gin in Abeokuta"; and his mother, Maxmilliana Assumpção Alakija, was the daughter of the late Alfa Cyprian Akinosho Tairu, native of Oyó, "a chief of Abeokuta with the title of Morope of Aké," for whom Tairu Lane in Lagos is named. Both of Adeyemo Alakija's parents were born in Brazil, the eldest living member of the family being the Bahian lawyer, Dr. Maxwell Porphyrio Assumpção Alakija, "father-in-law of His Worship, Olumuyiwa Jibouwu, our Police Magistrate."

---

[9] One *Africano* also possesses copies of *Wasu* ("Preach"), a missionary pamphlet used in Nigeria; the English prayer-book and the Bible, both in Yoruba; the *Nigerian Catholic Almanac* for 1933; a life of Marcus Garvey; and a copy of the *Negro World* for April 19, 1930, the latter given him by a Negro fireman on an English ship which occasionally puts in at Bahia.

191. Although it is exceedingly doubtful if there is in Bahia
today anyone of African descent who does not speak Portuguese,
a few individuals can and on occasion do converse in
Nagô. One may also hear Gêge spoken, as well as those languages
[794] known locally as "Angola" and "Congo." However,
[796] the use of these tongues is very largely confined to the ritual
[576] of the *candomblé*, although at times one hears in the homes
of blacks the Nagô greeting, "Ô-kú á-sán!" and the parting
salutation, "Ôdì-ôlá-ô!" and even conversations in Nagô.
192 Many African words are to be found in the predominantly
Portuguese speech of the lower class, a limited number of
which have become common to all Bahia and, to some extent,
to all Brazil. Approximately three hundred of the latter
were noted.

201 Certain gestures are to be observed among the lower-class
565 blacks which are not common to the general population;
for example, the *legua de beiço*, or slight extension of the lower lip when indicating distance (the words accompanying may be "one league," but the sense is much farther); and the *muxôxô*, or pursing of the lips as the lower portion of the face is pushed forward and upward, signifying disdain. Approbation is indicated by touching the tips of the fingers to pursed lips and withdrawing them while making a kissing sound. Silence is compelled by grasping the upper lip with the tips of the fingers. The act of eating is indicated by closing and opening the right hand before the mouth, and the act of drinking by raising the right hand before the face, flexing the three middle digits, and, with thumb and little finger extended, raising and lowering the hand at the wrist. The height of a human being is demonstrated by extending the

201

palm flat in horizontal position in contrast to a vertical 565
placement for indicating the height of a lower animal.[19]

Although one is not likely to find any Bahian black who 551
has not been given at baptism a "Christian name," nicknames are very common, and many individuals are much better known by them than by their given names. Among such *apelidos* one will occasionally discover terms of probable African derivation; for instance, Okê, Bábá Cumdê, Cobê, Oum, Tau-édê, and Au-weh, all nicknames of members of a local labor union; or, among personages in the fetish world, such names as: Manoelzinho de Oxóssi, Lourenço Lemba, Maria de Tempo, Senhora de Yemanjá, João de Zázé, and Flaviano Cavungo, each of which recalls the African *orixá* to which the individual in question is dedicated.

Exercising considerable prestige among a portion of the 791
Bahian population is the *babalaô*, or *olhador*, whose primary 793
function, it seems, is to foretell the future; the *curandeiro*, 756
who by means of herbs, prayers, and other magical manipulations seeks both to treat and to prevent disease; and the [754]
feiticeiro, or "witch doctor," who, for a price, works black
magic. The office of the *babalaô* is occasionally exercised by [794]
the *pae de santo*, or priest of the fetish cult, although his function is more particularly that of supervising the rituals and public ceremonies of the cult and overseeing the sacred properties. To some extent he also exercises the function of a *curandeiro*.

---

[19] A form of greeting recalled by older blacks but rarely used today is as [576]
follows: If the individuals are social equals, each lifts his hands, palms outward, and grasps the hands of the other in such a way that the fingers of the [178]
one are interlaced with the fingers of the other, after which the "*ogan* grip" is exchanged; if not social equals, the individual of greater prestige places his right hand over the closed hands of the other.

291 [565] (177) [301] Paris fashions largely dictate the nature of female attire among the upper classes at Bahia, but many black women still wear the *vestimenta bahiana*. This costume is composed of a *saia*, or very full skirt, of varying combinations of colors, which ordinarily measures some twelve to fifteen feet in circumference at the hem and is worn *bouffant*, spread by a heavily starched underskirt; a *bátá*, or long, loose-flowing white blouse which is ordinarily of cotton cloth but occasionally of silk, trimmed, in most cases, with wide lace, sometimes worn very loose at the neck and allowed to slip off one shoulder; a *pano da costa*, or long, heavy, striped cotton cloth, at times worn slung over the shoulder and pinned under the opposite arm, at times wrapped once or twice in a wide fold about the waist and tied rather tightly; a *torso*, or turban, of cotton or silk, bound about the head; *chinelas*, or strapless leather sandals with low heels; numerous necklaces of coral, cowries, or glass beads, with an occasional metal chain, often of silver; earrings of turquoise, coral, silver, or gold; and numerous [301] bracelets of cowries or of iron, copper, or other metal. The *balangandan*, formerly an important ornament, has disappeared.[11]

As an alternate to the *bátá* a white blouse is sometimes worn tucked inside the *saia*, and in place of the *pano da costa* a woolen or silken shawl is occasionally substituted. For

---

[532] (789) [11] The *balangandan* (also known as *berenguenden*, *balançançan*, *cambaio*, or *penca*) consisted of a gold or silver frame on which were hung gold or silver images of animals, birds, fowls, fish, flowers, parts of the human body, houses, household utensils, amulets (including gold or silver balls inclosing soil from a cemetery), bells, medallions with religious significance, angels, suns, moons, etc. It was worn on festive occasions, tied at the waist (see F. Marques dos Santos, "As balangandans," *Espelho*, April, 1936). Many impoverished [422] families, attracted by recent high prices of gold and silver, have disposed of these relics of a former splendor. A limited number may still be seen among the heirlooms of wealthy Bahians.

For 291

festive occasions *sandalias*, or leather "mules," are regularly preferred to *chinelas*, and one often sees the common footwear of the lower class, the *tamancos*, simple sandals with wooden soles and leather toe straps; or, occasionally, cloth slippers. Some women go barefoot. [292]

The *torso*, commonly said to be of Arabic origin, was probably brought to Brazil by the Haussás and other Negro followers of Mohammed who were imported from the areas immediately south of the Sahara. In *Globus* for April 28, 1910,[12] there is a photograph taken in Togoland which shows Negroes wearing *torsos*, *panos da costa*, and *saias* similar to those seen today in Bahia, except that the heavily starched petticoat usually worn with the latter is lacking.[13] [177]

291
554

The typical wearer of this costume, or *vestimenta bahiana*, as it is called, is a tall, graceful black woman of remarkable physique, self-confident bearing, and intelligent, cheerful countenance. She is known as a *Bahiana*, the first of whom to emigrate from Bahia to Rio, during the disorders attendant on the struggle for independence, impressed the French visitor Debret as notably different from the black women of Rio, not only in dress, but also in general bearing.[14] "The *Bahiana* came to symbolize, by extension, a gracious (*graciosa*) and spirited creole woman."[15] [167]

> The *Bahianas* were worth seeing at our festivals, with their resplendent costumes; their arms half-covered with gold or silver bracelets; their diamond earrings; their gold necklaces from which hung . . . . crosses, *figas*, and medallions of the order of *Carmo*, all of gold. . . . . They completely dominated our religious festivals. . . . . They [301]

---

[12] XCVII, No. 16, 245.

[13] The *saia* is commonly worn in Bahia, on days other than those of festival, without starching the underskirt.

[14] J. B. Debret, *Voyage pittoresque et historique au Brésil, 1816-1831* (3 vols.; Paris, 1835), II, 105.

[15] Calmon, *op. cit.*, p. 188.

291
554 filled the churches at Mass, at prayers, and at sermons, accompanied by little black urchins carrying small stools of *jacarandá*[16] with carved feet. They were women who tended small stalls in the markets, or who sold in the streets, proprietors of small eating-places, elderly slaves, and young *mulatas* who came to turn the heads of the "old conquerors."[17]

[16] A very heavy wood of rich coloring much prized for furniture.

[533] [17] "Onde estão as *Bahianas?*" *A Tarde*, June 23, 1936. It was of these *Bahianas* that Carmen Miranda sang when she recently captivated Broadway with the staccato notes of the rollicking *samba* by Dorival Caymmi, "Que é que a Bahiana tem?"

O que é que a bahiana tem?	What is it that a *Bahiana* has?
O que é que a bahiana tem?	What is it that a *Bahiana* has?
Tem torço de seda, tem	She has a *torço* of silk, she has
Tem brinco de ouro, tem	She has ornaments of gold, she has
Corrente de ouro, tem	She has a golden necklace, she has
Tem pano da Costa, tem	She has a *pano da Costa*, she has
Tem bátá rendada, tem, ah!	She has a *bátá*, embroidered, she has—ah!
Pulseira de ouro, tem	Bracelets of gold, she has
Tem saia engomada, tem	She has a *saia*, starched, she has
Sandalia enfeitada, tem.	Decorated *sandalias*, she has.
Tem graça como ninguem	She has "oomph" like nobody else
Como ela requebra bem	How well she swings those hips!
Quando você se requebrar	When you swing those hips
Caia por cima de mim	Fall on top of me
Caia por cima de mim	Fall on top of me
Caia por cima de mim.	Fall on top of me.
O que é que a bahiana tem?	What is it that a *Bahiana* has?
O que é que a bahiana tem?	What is it that a *Bahiana* has?
Tem torço de seda, tem . . . . etc.	She has a *torço* of silk, she has . . . . etc.
Só vae no Bomfim quem tem	Only those go to Bomfim who have
Só vae no Bomfim quem tem	Only those go to Bomfim who have
Um rosario de ouro	A rosary of gold,
Uma bolota* assim	A little ball, thus,
Quem não tem balangandans	She who has no *balangandans*
Não vae no Bomfim	Can't go to Bomfim
Quem não tem balangandans	She who has no *balangandans*
Não vae no Bomfim	Can't go to Bomfim
Oi, não vae no Bomfim	Oi, can't go to Bomfim
Oi, não vae no Bomfim	Oi, can't go to Bomfim
Oi, não vae no Bomfim	Oi, can't go to Bomfim,
Oi, não vae no Bomfim.	Oi, can't go to Bomfim.

[778] * Instead of a cross the Malês, or Mohammedan Negroes in Bahia, used a ball on the rosary.

565

Although the Bahian upper classes, owing to their Negro 262
cooks, are not unacquainted with those dishes of African 177
origin so commonly eaten in the homes of lower-class blacks, 263
one does not ordinarily find on their tables African delicacies like *abará*, *aberêm*, *acassá*, *acaragé*, *arroz de Aussá*, *bóbó de inhame*, *carurú*, *efó*, *xin-xin*, etc., each of which is seasoned according to recipes handed down from African forebears who also extensively made use of African seasonings like *azeite de dendê*, *ataré*, *irú*, *pejerecum*, *iêrê*, and *egussi*.[18] The eating habits of the upper classes are, in general, 565
European in origin. But the poorer inhabitants extensively 264
utilize banana leaves for plates and for packaging [177]
foods and replace forks with fingers as eating accessories. [824]

The music and dances enjoyed by large numbers of the [415]
darker population further distinguish this portion of the
Bahian community. For instance, the *samba*, or *samba batida*, 565
a regional form of the old *batuque*, although it has now 535
been taken over by the upper classes and in a modified form 533
become not only one of the most characteristic musical forms but also one of the favorite dances of Brazil, is still enjoyed in its primitive simplicity by the Bahian lower classes. With them it is a dance in which first one and then another of the participants enters a circle, dances a shuffling step while singing, cantor-fashion, the first line of a stanza, the others
responding as a chorus. A song very popular at Mar Grande 533
on the island of Itaparica in the bay at Bahia recalls the

---

[18] *Azeite de dendê* is oil from the *dendê* palm; *ataré*, said to have been imported from Africa by Bahian Negroes, is a variety of pepper; *egussi* are gourd or melon pips; *iêrê* are seeds similar to those of the coriander; *irú* and *pejerecum* (or *bejerecum*) are varieties of small beans. For recipes of a number of these dishes see Manoel Raymundo Querino, *A arte culinaria na Bahia* (Bahia, 1928).

533 labor of Negro slaves in the cane fields of the *engenhos* of the Reconcavo. The *cantador*, or leader, sings:

> Olha a cana madura . . . .
> Ela é verde, é madura . . . .
> Para fazer "raspadura" . . . .

to which the chorus responds:

> No cannaviá!"[29]

In a second chorus the solo is: "Lá vem o padre," and the response: "Pra casar vocês dois!"[30] In a third, the solo, "Por mim não, barbulêta," is followed by the chorus, "Você póde avuá!"[31]

535 The principal steps of this primitive *samba* are known as the *corta-a-jaca* (cutting the *jaca*), the *separa-o-visgo* (parting the pulp), and the *apanha-o-bago* (taking out the *bago*, or edible portion).

526 *Capoeira* is often *jogado* (played) in out-of-the-way places, and at times, particularly during Carnival or at such festivals as Segunda Feira do Bomfim and Conceição da Praia, it even invades more public places. It is a highly complex form of personal combat, originally developed by fugitive slaves to enable them to compete more effectively with armed *capitães do matto* and now enjoyed as a sport set to music. The agility of the contestants is remarkable, as they strive for points in a struggle without actual physical contact, where unexpected thrusts of the feet or elbows, rapid pivot-

---

[29] "See the ripe cane,
It is green, it is ripe,
Ready to make *raspadura* [coarse brown sugar]
Chorus:
In the *cannavid* [roadway through the cane field]!"

[30] "Here comes the priest,
To marry you both! . . . "

[31] "As for me, no, butterfly,
You can fly away!"

526

ing, and sudden "cartwheels" alternate with other attempts to confuse and "cripple" an opponent.[29]

534

The musical instruments commonly employed among this portion of the population are the *atabaques*, the *agôgô*, the *caxixi*, the *canzá*, the *agê*, the *chocalho*, the *xaque-xaque*, the *cuica*, and the *berimbau*. All but the last three instruments are rarely seen outside the *candomblé*.

The *atabaques* (or *tambaques*) are wooden drums, each approximately twenty inches in diameter but varying in height, invariably used in sets of three. The largest, called *ilû*, or *rum*, is seldom less than two and one-half feet tall and occasionally attains seven feet, while the medium-sized drum, known as *rumpi*, ranges from two to four feet in height, and the smallest, or *lé*, from one and one-half to two and one-half feet. To produce a soft, muted sound, the drums are beaten with the hands. For the heavier tones, *baquetas*, or short wooden sticks, are employed. The huge *bátá-côtó*, or war drum, which played a prominent role in the slave insurrections, has long since disappeared.

[824]

The *agôgô* is a bi-tonal instrument, consisting of two hollow iron cones joined together. It is beaten with an iron pin. The *agê*, or *piano de cuiá*, is a large calabash containing pebbles and covered with a small cotton net in whose meshes *buzios*, or cowries imported from Africa, are firmly secured. If the latter are not available, dry seeds known as *contas da Nossa Senhora* are employed instead, and pebbles are occasionally inserted in the calabash itself to augment the sound. The *caxixi* is a tiny reed or straw basket containing cowries or small pebbles. The *xaque-xaque* is a hollow metal instrument shaped like a dumbbell, each of whose enlarged extremities contains small pebbles. When shaken, it produces

---

[29] See Edison Carneiro, *Negros bantus* (Rio, 1937), pp. 147–60.

534 the sound from which its name is derived. The *chocalho* is a similar instrument, but with only one extremity enlarged. The *adjá* is a small metal bell used to invite members of the cult to the ritual *dar comido ao santo*.[23] The *cansá*, or *ganzá*, now is seldom seen.[24]

[824] The *berimbau* is used primarily to accompany *capoeira*. It consists of a wire strung upon a stick to form a bow, with a dried gourd open at the top attached at the lower extremity. The instrument is beaten, to produce numerous complex rhythms, with a wooden stick held, together with a *caxixi*, in the right hand, while with the left a copper *vintem* (old Portuguese coin) is alternately pressed against the wire and released. The *cuica* is a drumlike instrument, open at one end. Sound is produced by drawing the hand along a resined stick appended to the center of the drumhead.

753 In the lower-class world health and morality are in many
784 cases closely identified. The cause of disease or bodily harm
[565] is often believed to lie in the direct intervention of a deity
who has become angered by the nonfulfilment of obliga-
tions prescribed in the sacred ritual or by the breaking of
754 taboos. Evil forces may be invoked, it is believed, through
the magical influence of the *feitiço* and bring illness, blind-
ness, insanity, or death.[25] The *mau olhado*, or "evil eye,"

---

[23] See chap. x.

[24] For illustrations of these instruments see Arthur Ramos, *O negro brasileiro* (Rio, 1934), Figs. 24 and 25 (p. 162).

[25] Rituals vary. A portion of the clothing of the one to be harmed, a shoe or other article, may be submitted to magical manipulation and thrown into the sea. In this way the individual is presumed to be subjected to the ebb and flow of the tide. Or a few hairs from the head of the one to be harmed may be mixed with crushed herbs of supposed magical power. Presumably he is then likely "to hate someone whom he now esteems, drink to excess, become crippled or insane, or lose his life." A pigeon, chicken, sheep, or he-

The mau olhado, or "evil eye," 754
a magical power presumed in many parts of the world, [171]
including Europe, to be possessed, often unwittingly, by
certain individuals, is thought at Bahia to bring death
to plants, birds, and even small children whom the person
has coveted or, perhaps, merely admired. More natural 753
forces are the *ar do vento*, or "air of the wind," a cold draught 821
said to result in indigestion, deformity, insanity, or death; [826]
the *espinhela caida*, or "fallen breastbone," which presumably
brings on an emaciated condition of the body; and
sangue nova, or "new blood," thought to be responsible for
the breaking-out of a rash. Dew must not be allowed to fall 753
on the head. Certain diseases, like syphilis and leprosy, are
considered defects common to all men.[26] However, the per- [744]
sistent efforts of agencies like the Rockefeller Foundation [177]
have widely disseminated the idea that malaria results from
the bite of a mosquito.

The treatment or prevention of disease is the logical coun- 789
terpart of a magical theory of causation. Thus, members of 782
this section of the Bahian population attempt to control personal
destiny through the use of charms or other magical
means or through the direct intervention of a deity, whose
favor is sought by the offering of gifts or the performance of
prescribed rituals. Thus, to counteract the influence of the 755
"evil eye," charms are worn, or pieces of the *Guiné*, *Arruda*, 824
or *Vassourinha Doce* plants are passed, to the accompaniment
of magical words, over and about the affected person's
head.

---

goat may be killed, or a doll made and its neck pierced by a bit of wood. [754]
Either object is then placed in the doorway of the individual to be harmed
or in any other place where he is likely to pass, the one depositing the *feitiço*
calling out, as he drops it, the name of the person for whom harm is intended.

[26] "Syphilis," a black explained, "began with the world. Everyone has it, even horses, although it may never show up."

789 head. The wearing of *patuás*, or written prayers, is presumed to "close the body" (*fechar o corpo*) against disease or accident. The nut known as *chapeu de Napoleão* ("Napoleon's hat"), if worn on a string about the neck, similarly is reputed to possess magical power.[27] A cord of deerskin passed over the affected area is presumed to cure erysipelas; a string of white beads worn about the neck of a mother is thought to increase the flow of her milk; a cord tied tightly about the waist of a pregnant woman will, it is believed, "keep the baby from going to the head"; and a stone in the hair is thought to retard delivery. Considered particularly efficacious in all cases of illness is the "*itá* of Xangô."[28]
782 "Prayers," or the use of magical words or phrases over an
755 affected part of the body, are also extensively employed. A common belief is that the *pae de santo* can in this way cure snakebite.

782 The direct intervention of a deity may be invoked as
[776] when presents are made to the *mães d'agua* (female deities who are presumed to inhabit bodies of water) to remove illness or misfortune or to assure future success. Thus, fisher-

---

[27] At the children's clinic a black mother brought in a child very ill. About his neck was a cord suspending a *chapeu de Napoleão*. To the physician's query, the mother replied, "They said it would make him well. Everyone told me to use it, and I didn't know."

755 [28] *Itás* (Tupi equivalent of "rocks" or "stones") of Xangô, or, as they are
778 also called, *pedras* of Santa Barbara, are thought to have fallen from heaven during thunderstorms. They are said to have penetrated into the earth seven *braças* (2.2 meters) and to have returned to the surface after seven
[554] years. The person so fortunate as to find one of these stones is considered a highly privileged individual. The *itá* is used by the *pae do santo* to crush the leaves of certain medicinal plants which are then put, together with the yolk of an egg, into a vessel and mixed, while an invocation in Nagô, known as *etutu*, is intoned. The stone is then covered with the crushed leaves and egg yolk and allowed to stand for a period of time. The liquid prepared in this way is considered to possess miraculous healing power.

men, anxious for a good year's catch, or individuals wishing 782
to be rid of some illness, to obtain employment, or to secure a satisfactory resolution of unrequited love, will purchase foods, wearing apparel, toilet articles, jewelry, and other gifts pleasing to a lady and place them with appropriate ceremonies in a body of water presumed to be inhabited by one
of the *mães d'agua*. Particularly sacred are the waters of [778]
Mar Grande, off the island of Itaparica, where, a few years
ago, a saddle horse, it is said, was presented to Yemanjá; [823]
Mont'serrat and Cabeceiras da Ponte, on opposite sides of Itapagipe; Baiutê,[29] near the village of Itapoan; and Mari-
quita, near Rio Vermelho.[30] Parents of twins make regular [845]
food and drink offerings to the twin-deities, the Beji, or [776]
Cosme and Damião. Omolú, the "*orixá* of smallpox," is be-
lieved to protect not only against the ravishes of this disease 776
75

---

[29] A foreigner was swimming in Baiutê when a passer-by, seeing him, shouted excitedly, "What are you doing in there? Don't you know that that water is charmed (*encantado*)? You might even turn into a fish. Haven't you seen the white swans? They say that they are two people who once swam here." For accounts of public offerings to the *mães d'agua* see *Estado da Bahia* for June 19 and September 23, 1936; *A Tarde* (Bahia), February 3, 1938.

[30] A letter headed, "Every Vow Fulfilled up to the End of the Year, 1936," [539]
and addressed to "Our Lady of Mont'serrat, the Mistress of the Sea, Janaina," was found in the bay near Mont'serrat. It read:

To my Godmother:

I promise you, my Lady of Mont'serrat, that if you arrange it so that I can marry Domingos Portella, I will give you a present worth fifty milreis. And on the second of February I will put in another present according to my means. If possible, I will give you thirty milreis, and if not I will give you at least twenty. As large a present as I have I will give you on February 2, from twenty milreis up. My Godmother, I promise thee that the day of my marriage to Domingos Portella will be a happy day for you also; while I shall be having a *festa* here on land, you also will be having a *festa* there in the holy sea. I will fix dishes of all that we have in the house for this day, and send them to you, with greetings from me.

Your goddaughter,

Yvonne D. L. Braga

(Letter presented here by courtesy of Friar Tomás.)

75 but also against all skin ailments, including leprosy. Particularly approachable is the deity to whom a person is dedicated. "This bad cut on my foot," remarked a *mãe de santo* dedicated to Xangô, "would not heal. So I talked it over with Xangô. He agreed to heal it, and told me what to use. It's now getting well; it's much better already."

755 789 793 794 An individual troubled by continued ill-health, business difficulties, or even bad dreams may request of the fetish-cult priest the ritual of *lavágem das contas*, or "washing the beads." Divination is first resorted to in order to identify the *orixá* "responsible" for the difficulty. Then the beads sacred to this deity are immersed in water, a newly purchased basin being used for the purpose, and a handful of leaves also sacred to him are crushed and added. After a time, the beads are removed and washed with *sabão da costa* ("soap from the Coast"). Thus purified, they are given to the person suffering the ill fortune, who must subsequently keep them in a clay vessel and from time to time wear them about his neck.

755 789 825 753 Considered one of the most effective methods of "removing" a disease or misfortune is the *troca da cabeça*, or "changing of heads," whose purpose is to transfer the disturbing influence from the afflicted person to another individual. The ritual varies. The afflicted one may have his head rubbed with a chicken or a pigeon, which, having thus acquired the evil influence, is then killed. Or an *ebó*, or *bozó*, as it is more commonly called, may be prepared,[31] and the affliction purposely transferred to another individual by leav-

---

[31] The *bozó* almost always includes a dead hen, popcorn, manioc meal with *azeite de dendê*, pieces of clothing from the one to be benefited, nickel or copper coins, certain African foods like *acassá*, *aberém*, and *acarajé*, and, if available, the African fruits, the *obí* and the *orobô*, of ritualistic significance.

755
789

ing the *bozó* in a place where the intended victim is likely to 825
step on it or otherwise touch it.[32] An animal may be "prepared 753
with the *ebó*" so that whoever subsequently touches the animal will catch the illness or inherit the misfortune. If, however, one wishes to avoid transferring the evil to another person, he may do so and still rid himself of his affliction by leaving the *ebó* in a cemetery.

If a *filha de santo* (ceremonial dancer of the fetish cult) 784
would avoid illness or other misfortune, it is considered 535
highly important that she observe all the taboos, especially 794
those attaching to food and drink. A pregnant woman must 843
avoid vegetables and all meats other than chicken; she must 784
not join a funeral procession, since the spirit of the deceased might enter her child; and she must avoid a rose touching her bare breast, for otherwise the child, it is believed, will be born with a birthmark.[33]

Charms may be of a specific nature like the *figa*[34] or the 789

---

[32] The affliction may, however, be transferred to someone toward whom no harm was originally intended if the individual placing the *ebó*, either ignorantly or with intention, fails to leave it in the designated place. The first person coming in physical contact with it will be affected. So widespread is this fear of the *ebó* that chauffeurs, even at the risk of an accident, will not run a wheel over one.

[33] Current folk medicines include: for syphilis, whale oil; for a toothache, [755]
pig or burro dung smoked in a clay pipe; for a cough, sweetened tea prepared [757]
by boiling a termite nest; for sore throat, tea made by boiling a live lizard whose body is then removed from the vessel and buried with its head toward the new moon. Native herbs are extensively employed, particularly by *curandeiros*, or they may be administered at the hands of anyone "instructed" by a "manifesting" deity, a common occurrence in those *candomblés* known as *de caboclo* (a portion of whose ritual is probably of native Indian origin) and in spiritualist centers like that in Alto do Bom Gosto, in Calcada, one of whose directors remarked, "So many *caboclos* 'manifest themselves' because they know so well how to heal with herbs."

[34] The *figa* is an image, usually made from wood, of a closed fist with the thumb inserted between the index and middle fingers.

[824] oxhorn, both of which are employed for protection against the *mau olhado*, or "evil eye." Or they may be of a more general nature like the letters *J M J* (Jesus, Maria, José), or the *signo de Salomão* ("sign of Solomon")[35] either or both of which may be painted or carved on the door of the house or even tattooed on an individual's arm, leg, or chest; or a small pouch worn around the neck and containing either a *patuá* (presumed to protect against evil, especially the machinations of an enemy or death in battle)[36] or a small piece of garlic, "Danda root," *mil homens*, or *arruda*, a clove, or merely some object sacred to the *orixá* to whom the individual is dedicated. Similarly employed are such magical practices as the sprinkling of sea water in the four corners of the house, the emptying through the front door of a basin of water left overnight in the center of the floor, or the burning regularly at six o'clock in the evening of incense to which, occasionally, sulphur and pieces of oxhorn are added until the house is filled with magically potent smoke.

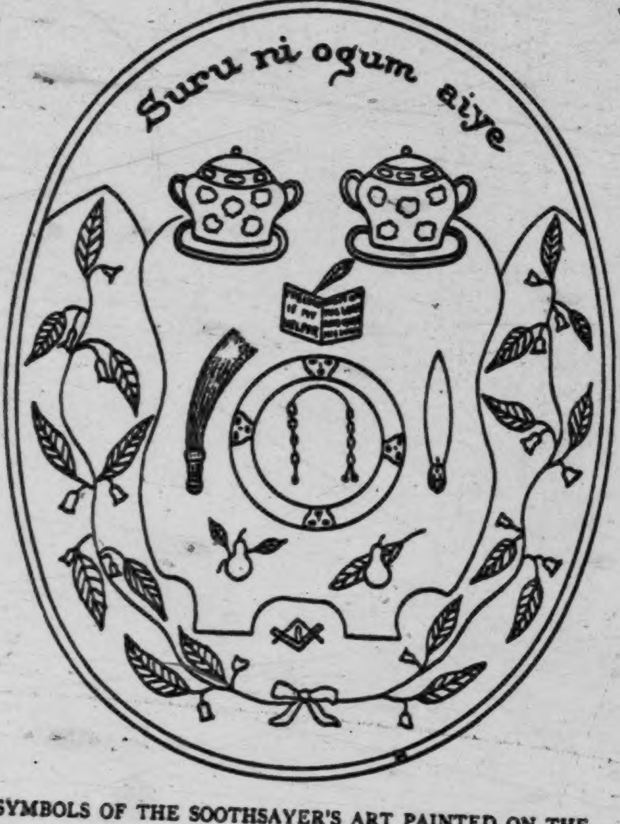
794
787 In the fetish cult, divination is commonly resorted to for such purposes as the identification of an unknown *orixá* who has "manifested himself" in human form, the determination of such matters as the eligibility of a prospective *ogan*, or male functionary of the cult, the cause of a troubling illness, or the proper course to pursue in some contemplated action. Divination is also employed to foretell future events, particularly the outcome of business or amorous ventures, jour-

---

[35] A six-pointed star at whose apex appears a cross.

[175]
[869] [36] During the insurrection of 1835, the Malês, as we have seen, wore *patuás* consisting either of prayers or of verses from the Koran, written or printed in Arabic characters. They were presumed to protect against death in any form. For photographs of some of these see Nina Rodrigues, *Os africanos no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1932), p. 98, Figs. 1, 2, 3, and 4.

[TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 260]


Suru ni ogum aiye

SYMBOLS OF THE SOOTHSAYER'S ART PAINTED ON THE WALL OF A NEGRO DWELLING IN MATATU

794

787 neys, etc.[37] Oracles are invoked by way of such magical in- [789] termediaries as the *obí* and the *orobô*, or the *opêlê-ifá* (a chain of thin disks), or they may be obtained directly from an *orixá* who speaks during the "possession" of a *filha* or a *pae de santo* by way of the mouth of the one "possessed."[38]

787 Contact between the living and the dead is believed not only to be possible but to occur regularly. Hence, the prac-

---

[37] The serious character of a transaction of this sort puts it in a different category from certain other magical acts, common to all classes, which have the character of a game, being similar, for example, to practices attaching to our festival of Halloween. Thus, one may take a glass, "bless" it three times, put in it the white of an egg, and, holding it over a fire, again thrice "bless" it; or partially fill a basin with water and permit the tallow from a lighted candle to drip into it; or stick a knife up to the hilt in a banana tree and leave it until morning. The patterns formed on the glass, the water, and the knife, respectively, are presumed to indicate the initials of one's future spouse. A similar image is presumed to appear in the dreams of one under whose pillow has been left a freshly husked ear of corn. [825]

[38] Other magical practices of this sort are: the placing of crushed char- [777] coal under a rock to expedite the recovery of a lost article, the burying of the third of a rosary to stop rain; also, it is commonly believed that a hum- [821] mingbird inside the house, or the singing of an *adivem-quevem*, announces the coming of guests; that the appearance of an owl, or of an *ouriço cacheiro*, foretells death; that a black butterfly is a sign of misfortune; that a katydid with dark eyes brings unpleasant news, while one with light eyes brings favorable news; that seeing the new moon for the first time between the branches of a tree or anywhere partially obscured is a sign of misfortune throughout the coming month; that the showing of money to the new moon when seen for the first time will assure no want of income for the next thirty days; that ill fortune will attend one who dwells in a house on the corner of a street, enters a house with the right foot, or opens an umbrella inside a house. Still other "signs" of misfortune are: the toad; the black cat (or the "ghost" of a cat); the *anum* perched in a tree near the house; the *jacumim;* the hummingbird, if black; the katydid, if it has a black mouth (if the katydid has a red mouth, happiness is in store for the observer). In the opinion [262] of numerous people, mutton must not be eaten, since it is "the *lamb of God* who taketh away the sins of the world." Sheep are animals which Christians must not eat.

tice, now not so common as formerly but still occurring, of forsaking a dwelling-place in which some member of the family has died. "Visions" are commonly reported. A *preto* related: 787

> Once as I was working, I suddenly noticed an old friend, together with another man, standing by me, both of them "out of the flesh." My friend spoke and asked me how I was. I told him I was "so-so." Then he said, "Did you know that Fernando was dead?" I didn't, but, sure enough, I found out the next day that he had died that very morning.

One finds in many individuals an absolute credulity in folk tale and folk myth. Thus to many a Bahian of the lower classes the *lobishomem*, the *caipora*, the *mula de padre*, and the *biatátá* are actual entities which he himself, or someone known to him, has supposedly seen or heard. [538]

The *lobishomem* (werewolf), credulity in which is also common to large areas of Europe, is said at Bahia to roam about on moonlight nights, preferably on Fridays, with dogs following him. He takes the form of a man, very pallid, with an enormous shock of hair and long fingernails. Coming up behind a traveler or sneaking into the house after a child, he grasps his victim and sucks his blood. A person "very yellow" from malaria is thought to be in danger of turning into a *lobishomem*. If a family has seven sons and no daughters, the first-born is believed liable to develop into one of these creatures unless he is made co-padre with his parents at the baptism of the seventh child. The hour of such transformation is midnight sharp. A house servant remarked: 776 754.

> When I was a small boy, I knew a man who turned into a *lobishomem*. There in my country, near Joazeiro [state of Bahia]. He had killed his father and his mother. He always went around with his head down, very sad and very pale. The children called him *chicobicho* and ran and hid from him. Every Friday night he turned into a

776
754
> beast and wandered about. We knew he did, for a man who was passing a dark spot on the road late one night saw him; but when he took out his knife and started after him, the beast fled. The *lobishomem* was covered all over with hair and looked horrible. Other people saw him too, running around on all fours. The dogs always barked on Friday nights something terrible. On Saturday morning this man appeared dusty and more pale than usual. He never caught any children because they were all careful to stay in the house during the hours when he was out. But he caught many dogs and cats. He merely sucked their blood; he did not eat them. People found the bodies later, with all the blood drained out.

776 *Mulas de padre* are reputedly the concubines of priests who, transformed into headless animals, run about at night, preferably on Fridays. Covered with noise-making instruments, such as bells, *chocalhos*, and kitchen utensils, they are said to make "an infernal racket" which can be heard as much as a mile away and "makes one's blood run cold."

[177] The *caipora* and the *biatatá* are probably survivals of Indian lore. The former is a creature thought to inhabit timbered areas, where he is peculiarly fond of leading people astray. When a person is lost, the *caipora* "may make him pass right by the path and never see it." The *caipora* calls out to the unfortunate person and leads him further and further astray. Of female sex, an animal some say, a half-body cut perpendicularly from crown to crotch according to others, the *caipora* may be driven away if one smokes tobacco, takes snuff, or chews garlic.

776
781 A young *pardo* shoemaker, having become by reason of his schooling somewhat skeptical of tales of the *lobishomem* and of the *mula de padre*, insisted, however, that

> the *caipora* is real. Just as a blow on your arm will leave a red mark, the *caipora* has left signs of himself. I know a Portuguese immigrant, a man upright and truthful, who was warned not to hunt on Fridays. He laughed at the warning, and went on into the timber in search of

jacús, found one, and shot at it. The *jacú* flew at him with its claws extended and severely scratched him. He shot at it again. It flew back and clawed at his eyes. Then he heard a voice, saying "You know you must not hunt on Fridays." It was the *caipora*. The man staggered home, and fell senseless in the door of his house. I knew this man well. 776 781

The *biatátá* is said to be a woman who inhabits the sea, appearing above water only at night, gradually increasing in size until she assumes an enormous shape, and "casting a huge and frightening shadow." 776

Fear of the toad, probably also a survival of Indian belief, is common.[39] If a toad happens to hop into the door of a house, the occupant will immediately grab a broom and sweep it out, repeating over and over, "Creio em Deus Padre."[40] If a malicious person paints a toad on the wall of a dwelling, its occupants will at once desert the place. 825 [177]

The following account reveals in an intimate way the mental world of a considerable portion of the Bahian lower class. It was related by a young Negro woman in the form of a series of personal experiences and is presented here in as nearly as possible the exact phrasing in which it was originally given. 158 159 755 [565]

I was three years old. I was sitting with my mother when something hit me, and I fell over unconscious. She picked me up and took me to a doctor. He gave me medicine and said that it was congestion. Some thought it was the *ar do vento*.

I knew nothing of what was going on; it was as if I were dead. To

---

[39] "Montoya says ('Manuscripto guarani da Bibliotheca Nacional do Rio de Janeiro sobre a primitiva catechese dos Indios das Missões,' *Annaes da Bibliotheca National*, Vol. VI) that among Indians observed by him, the entrance of a toad into a gathering of people was a sign of the approaching death of one of those present" (Gilberto Freyre, *Casa grande e senzala* [2d ed.; Rio, 1936], p. 99). [171]

[40] "I believe in God, the Father."

158
159
755

help me get better, they took me up off the ground.[41] Then my mother called in Mamêdê [the local *pae de santo*], to see what was the matter
158 with me. He came, *abriu a mesa*[42] and said that this had been with me
159 from my birth. My mother then asked him if he could cure it. He said
755 he could. He made her buy plates, *moringues*,[43] beads, cups, coconuts,
793 etc. Then he prepared all that.[44] They washed my head with water from the sacred leaves. My mother asked if he could take that thing away so that it would not come back again. He said he would not dare to do that, or I would die. He said it always came back.

When it returned, they washed my head again. I did not know what was going on. It was as if I had slept. When I awakened, I was all "prepared": dressed *de creola* with a *saia grande* and a *torso* on my head. Everything red. *Sandalias* too. Everything the same color.

When this happened I was still small. The *pae de santo* said that I was under a spell [*era encanto*]. He "did the work" once more, and I was all right again. But when I was seven years old, it took hold of me once more. My mother was afraid and begged the *pae de santo* to do something about it. She pleaded so earnestly that finally he said he would speak with the enchantment [*encanto*] so that it would not come down any more.

It didn't come back until I was fifteen years old. Then they arranged another dress *de creola*, and also handkerchiefs, strings of beads, bracelets, and *sandalias*. They ordered plates, small glasses, and *quartinhas* bought. When all this was ready, the *pae de santo* washed my head in sacred water. He said it was the "owner of my head" [*dono da minha cabeça*] who had done that to me. There in Cachoeira, across the river from São Felix,[45] is the *casa de Gêge*.[46] The *pae de santo* is the grandson of an African.

---

[513] [41] That is, she was removed from the reed mat which, placed directly upon the floor of a hut, is extensively used among the poorer families for sleeping purposes. [285]

[42] That is, he set up certain means of divination.

[415] [43] Water pots made of red clay.

[44] That is, he submitted it to the proper ritual.

[361] [45] Cachoeira and São Felix are twin cities, separated by the Paraguassú River, located across the Bay to the north of the city of Bahia.

[794] [46] The *candomblé* of the Gêge cult in which she had now been inducted.

158

When I was sixteen years old I went across the river to live in São
Felix. There was a man there who was crazy. We asked what was the 159
matter with him, and they said that he had seven Exú's[47] in his body. 755
They had given him a cigar and when he began to smoke, he became 776
wild. He was nearly insane. He did not want to hear the word of God. When they talked of going to Mass, he wanted to run away. They took him and tied him up. He stayed this way two whole weeks. Once in a while his relatives came to see him. Finally, they decided to take him to a *candomblé*. They untied him and he went. For a long time he remained there and kept on acting the same way. Then the head of the *candomblé* took a hand in the matter. He ordered them to get black cloth, candles, *azeite de dendê*, incense, and several other things which he needed. After he had finished, he gave the man a bath to clean him up. When twelve o'clock came, he stretched him out in the middle of the floor. And there he lay all sprawled out. We saw a black Negro with red lips sitting on his knee. He was about this high [indicating approximately two and one-half feet], and as black as coal. His lips were as red as the lid of that can [indicating a *matte* container with bright red cover]. He had large ears that stuck out like this [indicating about a twelve-inch spread]. He was horrible. His horns were this long [indicating about six inches]. And his tail, about a meter. His eyes were big, like this [indicating an oval three inches in diameter]. They were the size of "three children."[48] His tongue looked like a snake's; it was really four separate tongues. And he was sitting there on the man's knee. We were all afraid. We wanted to run; but we dared not. He didn't stay long. Only about ten minutes. He left the man's knee and disappeared into the body of the man who had bought and brought the "things." The *pae de santo* filled up a
basin, and Exú took himself away. We did not see him disappear. 158
Ten minutes later the man got up, feeling better. He had been sitting 159
there crying hard. They shaved off his hair, washed his head and
painted it with a pencil, white, blue, pink, and lavender. Then they 755

---

[47] Exú (pronounced "Ā-shu") is an African deity who is often, although not always, thought of as possessing an evil nature. See chap. x.

[48] This expression was explained in the following manner: "A person looking into an ordinary eye sees the image of one child; in Exú's eyes the image was three times as big." [826]

158
159
755

put many beads of O Senhor do Bomfim on him, and a *figa;* they covered him with ornaments.

[789] [754] The *figa* is to free one from the evil eye. For example: I have a dress. You think it is pretty, and you want it very much; something then happens to it. Or a *sabiá*[49] sings beautifully. You are visiting its owner; you want it, you want it very badly. You leave, and it dies or something else happens to it because you cannot have it. This is the evil eye. One needs to "pray it away" with *Guiné*, *Arruda*, or *Vassourinha Doce*. An oxhorn in the garden will keep it away from plants.

[794] [776] [793] Then the man went around with hands folded, "taking the blessing" from everyone there. Seven children went out with lighted candles. Then he got up entirely well. Today he has a *casa de candomblé*. He is now very old. His *orixá* is Ogum de Gêge. The *pao de santo* who treated him is of Ogum de Mina.

159 776 My guardian angel [*anjo de guarda*] is Xangô. Ogum is a soldier, Xangô is of the thunder and also of the lightning. He is Santa Barbara of the Irmandade. All the *orixás* are equal. But Oxalá directs everything. Nanan is his wife. In the Gêge language she is called Odé.

159 776 784 My sister, she died, burned up. She caught all on fire. He who killed her is Oxóssi; it was he who killed her. My sister is buried in the Quinta dos Lazaros.[50] She burned to death because she disobeyed him. He sent a message and she paid no attention to it. Her husband had a *saveiro*.[51] Every trip which he made she went along in the boat. She had no children. Everywhere he went, she went too. When, one time, the *orixá* "arrived" and told her that she should not travel on the water, she didn't take his words very seriously; she laughed the matter off, "gave it a *muxóxó*." But about a week afterward, she went with her husband in a *saveiro* across the Bay to Bahia. Between Itaparica and Salinas the *saveiro* caught afire. It had powder on it and the powder exploded. Parts of the *saveiro* were ripped off and hurled into the water. She was surrounded by fire. When they finally reached her, she was badly burned. They brought her to the Santa Isabel Hospital,

---

[825] [49] A Brazilian bird which can be trained to sing tunes.

[50] A Bahian cemetery.

[501] [51] A sturdy sailboat used on Todos os Santos Bay and its contributory rivers to transport light articles of commerce.

159 776 784

and the next day she died. But before she died, he "arrived" and said it was he who had set fire to the *saveiro*. It was Oxóssi. Her husband also died. When one doesn't carry out his obligations [*cumpre com os seus deveres*], the *orixá* takes his life.

159 776 784 794 787

Once I had a party at my house for some friends. But Xangô sent me a message that I should go to the *candomblé*. I said that I was not going because I was having a party. A little while later, while I was dancing with my friends, I suddenly got a stiffness in my legs. But I didn't pay much attention to it. Then I suddenly felt an "opening of the body" [*aperto no corpo*],[12] and I didn't know anything more. When I came to, I was dancing in the *candomblé*. When the *candomblé* was over, I went running clear to the top of Boeiros do Inferno ["Funnels of Hell"] without knowing anything about what I was doing. These are two hills called by that name because they are so high. I didn't feel anything. Afterward, Xangô beat me on the hands, and my hands swelled. When he "arrived" again, he said that I should pay more attention to him, or he would beat me some more. Once he struck me. On that day I was very tired, but I went to the *candomblé* and danced anyway.

159 787

I dance when there is a big ceremony; I dance for hours at a time without getting tired. The spell seizes me, and sometimes I dance more than three days without feeling the least bit tired. When the *orixá* "arrives in my head," I spend a week or more "sleeping."[13] I don't feel anything. I don't see anything. People talk to me, but I don't know anything about what is going on.

159 787 271

If one drinks water, the *orixá* doesn't "arrive." For instance, one feels cold. That cold is in the body. The *orixá* wants "to arrive." Then one drinks water. He who is of the *preceito* does not drink water. And whoever drinks, breaks the *preceito*. It is prayed ten times.[14]

---

[12] A "trembling of the body," signifying that the *orixá* wished to enter and to "manifest himself" in human form. See chap. x.

[13] That is, moving about, but unconscious of what is happening.

[14] That is, by taking a drink of water, one can presumably prevent the deity from entering the body. One must at the same time pray ten words and tap the ground ten times. In this way, the *preceito* (i.e., the control of the deity over one) is broken.

159

794
778 I stayed only seven days in the *casa*,[15] because my head was washed. Others spend three months there, lying down all the time. They lie
[515] awhile on one side, then on the other, and then face down. One takes a bath in water perfumed with sacred leaves. Every day. The bath is cold, very cold. You must change your clothes and the bed linen every day. It isn't in a real bed that one lies down. They put a mat on the floor, and you have only a pillow and a sheet. You can move, but only from one side to the other, never over on your back. During the time you are in the *camarinha*, you cannot see your relatives. You may see them only on the day you leave. But then you must go at four in the morning and return at four in the evening so that the dew will not fall on your head.

[513] There may be others in the *camarinha*. Sometimes many others. All of them stay in the same room. They sleep with their heads together. If there are ten, there will be space for all ten. While they are in the *camarinha*, they do not attend ceremonies.

[302] I did not go through all this because my head did not have to be
[776] shaved. I had my *orixá* from birth. When I came into this world,
[793] he already knew everything.[16] My *pae de santo* has "worked" with many people. Last week he was here in Fazenda Grande.

159 When my *orixá* took possession of me, I quit eating he-goat. Because of the taboo of the *orixá* one cannot eat certain things. Dur-
262 ing all my life I cannot eat he-goat, because of the taboo. Neither can
776 I eat turtle. For he who is of Xangô does not eat either he-goat or turtle. He who is of Ogum must not eat sheep's meat. Some *filhas* must not eat fruit; others must not eat fish *de couro*, only those fish
[271] which have scales. Crabs cannot be eaten by some, nor the leaf of Ogum. Water may be drunk, but only that which is drawn at 4:00 A.M., before the sun rises.

White maize must be eaten by some, depending on the *orixá*. For every *orixá* of every nation[17] has his own food. There is the food of Odé. There is that of Xangô, which is mutton.

---

[15] The period during which the candidate is initiated into her new function is spent within the sacred room, or *camarinha*, of the *candomblé* center.

[16] That is, he "knew" that she would be consecrated to him.

[17] That is, of each type of *candomblé:* Gêge-Nagô, Congo, Angolo, *de caboclo*.

My *pae de santo* made an *ebó* for me last week. It is a *limpesa do corpo* ["cleansing of the body"]. I had an unclean body and dragged myself around, listless. I went to the "master" of the *candomblé* and he "opened the table" and looked to see if my body was unclean. He then asked me to bring toasted maize, a black cloth, popcorn, honey, and a candle. He passed them all over me,[38] and when he had finished, he took them and left them in a crossroads. Friday is the day for this.

159
793
783

Now if a person puts a *bruxaria*[39] in your doorway, with a doll stuck through with pins, that is of the *feiticeiro* and it is different from a "cleansing of the body." My *pae de santo* does not make *feitiço*. He says that he does not care to do harm to people, because he has a soul for which he is responsible to God. But any *pae de santo* who wishes to bring harm upon someone can do so. For example, if I arrive in his *casa* and say that I want to do something to someone he asks me: "What do you want to do to her?" I say that when she comes to my door I want her to go blind. He will "make a business" and the next day she will come to my door and go blind. Or else I say that I want her to be wounded by a knife. He arranges it so that this happens.[40]

159
754
[793]

"Opening the table" is a thing done with *buzios*. The *pae de santo* puts an *orixá* on top of the table, together with his little towel.[41] He takes up the *buzios* and sees if "the way is open." My *pae de santo* "opens the table" with beads.[42] He takes the beads and puts them alongside *palha* from the *pindoba*.[43] These beads come from the Coast.[44] His set cost 1:000$000.[45]

159
787
793
778
[439]
[435]

---

[38] That is, in front, to side, behind, above the head, etc.

[39] Any instrument of black magic.

[40] That is, she will be attacked in a lonely place by robbers, or accidentally stabbed. The action is always mediate.

[41] The table-covering which is placed over the *orixá* in the *pegi*, or sanctuary.

[42] Other means employed: a glass of water, a set of playing cards.

[43] Fronds from a variety of the coconut palm.

[44] That is, from the West Coast of Africa.

[45] One thousand milreis, or one conto, equivalent at that time to approximately $60.

159
845

782
776
My sister is preparing *carurú*. She has twin boys. When God gives you twins, you are obliged to present *carurú* to Cosme and Damião. If you fail to do this, someone in the house will die that year.

184
177
~~178~~
565
If one were now to set down an account of the personal experiences of an upper-class Bahian, it would reveal an entirely different mental world. In general content it would reflect a culture distinctly European. Dress, music, food and food habits, forms of religious expression, sacred specialists, means of exercising control over personal destiny, and the ideas, attitudes, sentiments, points of view, and philosophy of life associated with them would, in general, not vary from those commonly characteristic of individuals of European origin wherever found. *

563
177
178
This variation at Bahia in cultural identification between the Europeans, on the one hand, and the *Africanos*, on the other—this difference in ideas, attitudes, and sentiments—obviously erects serious barriers to intercommunication and consequently retards the development of a body of common understandings upon which the moral solidarity of any society is built. Although most of the Bahian blacks have now to a considerable extent sloughed off their former cultural identity with Africa and have been more or less completely incorporated into the European world, a remnant of *Africanos* still live, in spite of contiguity in space with the Europeans, to a considerable extent culturally apart.

As will be evident in greater detail in the following chapter, the Europeans tend to look upon the beliefs and the practices of the *Africanos* as matters for ridicule, scorn, disparagement, and condemnation. They are thought of as queer, bizarre, unintelligible, inferior forms of behavior.

563* 177 178

They represent, to this element of the Bahian population, another world.

The general disposition, however, is to tolerate these African practices so long as they are not too obviously indulged in, particularly in public places, and they in no way interfere with the European habits of the major portion of the population. The Europeans act in this respect with somewhat the same leniency which an adult exercises toward the immature conduct of a child, in the confident expectation that "time and education" will do away with these evidences of what one upper-class individual referred to as "cultural backwardness and barbarism." Thus, the behavior of the numerically small group of *Africanos*, although under continuous disapproval and disparagement, is ordinarily treated more as a matter for levity than as a cultural threat; it meets with little deliberate effort at eradication, and even such attempts as are made in this direction are sporadic and halfhearted. Partially for these very reasons, African cultural forms are rapidly disappearing at Bahia.

563* 291 178 177

The *vestimenta bahiana*, for instance, although ordinarily regarded by representatives of the European culture as picturesque, rather romantic wearing apparel, tends today to be largely discarded, especially by the mixed-bloods, and to be withdrawn more and more into the relative privacy of the *candomblé*. Of 500 mulatto women noted on the streets, only 5 were wearing the full costume, and 14 others had on certain portions of it, while 481, or 96.2 per cent, appeared in modern European dress. Of 500 black women noted, 91, or 18.2 per cent, were wearing the full costume, 82 others, or 16.4 per cent, were wearing parts of the costume, while 327, or 65.4 per cent, had on modern European clothing.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

*
563
186

The *Africanos* ordinarily look upon the Europeans as presumptuous and quite naturally resent all evidences of a feeling of cultural superiority. Particularly do they resent what they consider to be unfair comparisons with the Europeans, on the one hand, and with the native Indians (who are ordinarily romanticized in Brazil), on the other. Said an *Africano:*

> These people think the Indian is worth so much! Look here! Brazil has been discovered for more than four hundred years, and there isn't a single book in Tupi like this [showing the English Prayer-book printed in Nagô], or a single magazine like this [pointing to a periodical published in English in Lagos and containing several articles by Africans]. These people here call us fetish worshipers and say, "Aw, that's African nonsense!" It just goes to show that they don't know anything about what we have in Africa.

This sentiment was echoed by another *Africano*, who complained:

[212]

> These people here in Bahia think Africans are all barbarous and uncivilized. They won't believe we write our language and that books are printed in it. They say, "Why, these *Africanos*, they're just pagan fetish worshipers, ignorant, and without culture." They don't know that in Lagos there are good schools, better than they've got in Bahia. Look at this [showing a photograph of a school in Lagos]! Is there anything in Bahia as fine as that?

*
563
178

It is perhaps obvious that these complaints reflect a sense of inferiority and an unconscious acceptance of European cultural standards. The case of the *Africanos* in Bahia confirms the hypothesis that the transformation of inner experience characteristic of all cases of assimilation is, to a large extent, an unwitting process which may at times go on even in direct opposition to the individual's intention and resolution. The ordinarily patient and tolerant attitude of the Ba-

563*
178

hian descendants of Europeans, whether or not they are aware of the fact, has been an eminently successful policy.

This change is not difficult to understand. The children and grandchildren of the *Africanos* are in more direct contact with the schools and other instrumentalities of European cultural diffusion. To a considerable extent they are being weaned away from the beliefs and practices of their ancestors. In most cases they have now come to take toward their parents and grandparents the same attitudes which the European community takes toward them. Gradually, the behavior of these children and grandchildren is developing in the *Africanos* themselves an increasingly acute sense of cultural inferiority.

563*
571
178

At the same time *Africanos* resent every evidence of another *Africano* breaking with the traditions of his ancestors and thus tending, even unwittingly, to undermine the solidarity of the group. Especially do they resent someone's currying favor with Europeans. As one man put it, "If I see an *Africano* talking to one of these whites, I won't look at the white man but I'll look the black fellow all over, this way [giving facial expression to indicate contempt, disdain], and after I'm down the street a ways I'll do this [sharply clearing his throat and spitting]." A white man was walking one day in Caminho da Cruz da Redenção in Brotas (a subdivision of Bahia) in company with two *Africanos*, an elderly *feiticeiro* ("witch doctor") and his son. A black suddenly shoved his head out of the window of a hut which they were passing and shouted, "Such Negroes! Worthless trash! Walking around with a white man!"

At first sight, one is likely to assume that these outbursts, reflecting as they obviously do antagonistic attitudes toward

*
563

571 178 the whites, are evidences of race prejudice. The fact, however, that outside the *Africano* group, among the more or less assimilated blacks, these antagonistic attitudes tend to disappear, indicates that what we see reflected here is a cultural, and not necessarily a racial, conflict. Antagonism is [186] directed not at the whites as such but at *Europeans;* it is directed at the bearers of a culture, a body of ideas, attitudes, and sentiments, in conflict with the ideas, attitudes, and sentiments of the *Africanos.*

CHAPTER X

THE *CANDOMBLE* 794

AMONG the last elements of African culture to disappear 178
at Bahia are the customs and traditions
associated with the expression of religious sentiment.
The *candomblé*, or Afro-Brazilian fetish cult, is still a [565]
vigorous institution and numbers among its adherents some
of the most widely known and respected members of the
Bahian lower classes. Its leaders, in several conspicuous instances, [793]
are able and intelligent individuals, whose prestige
extends even into the upper circles. Some *seitas*, or cult [346]
centers, have maintained the same temple of worship for
generations. Their rituals and ceremonies are serious, dignified,
and carried on according to definite, fixed, traditional
forms.

This highly complex organization of ritual and belief is 794
built around an order of *orixás*, or deities, each of whom apparently 776
personifies some natural phenomenon. Thus, of the
more important and more widely honored deities, Xangô is
worshiped as the *orixá* of lightning and thunder; Ogun, of
war and iron; Oxossi, of the hunt; Omolú, of pestilence;
Nanan, of rain; Yemanjá, of salt water; Oxun, of fresh
water; Yansan, of wind and storm; Oxun-manrê, of the
rainbow; and Beji, of twin births.

The older and more respected *seitas* are commonly considered 794
to be of Nagô (Yoruba) or Gêge (Ewe) origin or represent 178
a fusion in Brazil of these two apparently closely related
bodies of African ritual and belief.[1] In details of lan-

---

[1] Nina Rodrigues, *Os africanos no Brasil* (São Paulo, 1932), p. 320.

794 184 [778] [177] In details of language, ceremonial dress, dance, song and pantheon, these centers differ from the *candomblés* known as "Congo" or "Angola," in which Bantú dialects are spoken, Loanda and Benguela become sacred places, and Tempo and the Angolan chief Kissimbe are worshiped. They differ also from the apparently more recently organized *caboclo candomblés* whose ritual is, in varying degrees from *seita* to *seita*, a mixture of the rituals of the other cults, together with dances and a pantheon of Tupi origin, the latter of which includes Tupan, an important Tupi deity, and Tupinambá, apparently a personification of the cannibal tribe by that name which inhabited the Bahian coast at the coming of the Europeans. [191] The *caboclo candomblés* carry on their ceremonies principally in Portuguese, with the addition of certain phrases of African origin, usually much corrupted, which have been picked up [177] from Gêge-Nagô or Congo-Angola *seitas*, and a few words of Tupi derivation. Feathers, the bow and arrow, and other Indian cultural elements enter into their ritual.

794 184 178 This borrowing of ceremonial elements on the part of *caboclo* imitators, who in many, if not most, cases have not been reared in the African tradition, is bitterly resented by the more orthodox and scrupulous *Africanos*, particularly those of the Gêge-Nagô *seitas*. As a Negro once said, "Si seja mistura, é bobagem" ("If it's mixed, it's nonsense"). A leader of a Nagô cult once burst out:

> This fellow João da Pedra Preta! What a disgraceful whelp! His forebears, what did they know? Were they brought up in the *seita*, and did they "deixaram o cargo" [will the office of priest] to him? No! He came here from the *sertão* and started a *candomblé*. Picked up a little Gêge, a little Nagô, a little Congo, a little Indian stuff, and so on. A disgraceful mixture!

794 178 184 A Nagô *mãe de santo* boasted of the ritual in her seita: "It's all pure Nagô; there's nothing in my *candomblé* of this abominable mixture which these upstart places practice today. They call this *caboclo* nonsense *candomblé!* Why, they know absolutely nothing about the way it's done in Africa!"

However, the borrowing of ritual back and forth from *seita* to *seita* sometimes takes place even in the case of Gêge-Nagô and Congo-Angola centers. Moreover, these *seitas* have not entirely escaped some Indian influence. [177]

794 With reference, then, to cultural origin and identification, there are three principal types of *candomblés* at Bahia: the Gêge-Nagô, the Congo-Angola, and the *caboclo*.[2] The *seitas* of probably most pure Gêge-Nagô origin are those of Engenho Velho, reputed to be the oldest cult center in Bahia; Gantois, which split off from Engenho Velho approximately a century ago and was, during the time of the famed *mãe de santo* Pulcheria, the seat of the researches of Nina Rodrigues; and São Gonçalo, whose able and widely respected *mãe de santo* speaks a Yoruba dialect locally known as Queito. These three centers are probably largely Nagô in origin,[3] while that of Bogum is said to be with the possible exception

---

[2] The Malê, or Mohammedan cult, which at one time was vigorous and flourishing, seems to have been largely forsaken in favor of the fetish cults by the Negroes at Bahia. Although, in 1905, Nina Rodrigues estimated that one-third of the Africans still living in the city were Mohammedans, he at the same time pointed out that they were then making *few*, if any, converts among blacks born in Brazil and that Mohammedanism would in all probability die with them (*op. cit.*, pp. 93–94). Certain of the Malê ritual, however, has contributed to the general fusion so characteristic of present-day *candomblés*, and at least three Malê centers are still functioning. [178] [795]

[3] Also of Yoruba identification is Lingua da Vaca ("Cow's Tongue"), which was organized by Negroes of Ige-shá and Egbá origin.

794 of a *seita* in the city of Cachoeira across the bay, the most purely Gêge in the region. Of the Congo-Angola centers, the one reputed to be most influenced by Congo tradition is Bata Folha; that most influenced by Angola tradition, the *seita* of Maria Nenen. Of the *caboclo* centers, the more noted are perhaps those of the wealthy and widely feared *pae de santo* Jubiabá in Cruz do Cosme, of *mãe de santo* Sabina in Quintas da Barra, and of "Pae Joazinha," or João da Pedra Preta (John-of-the Black-Rock), in Gomea.

Out of the Afro-Brazilian Congress which met at Bahia in January, 1937, came a memorial addressed to the governor of the state asking for official recognition of the *candomblé* as a religious sect with rights and privileges equal, under the Brazilian constitution, to those of all other forms of religious expression. In order to act more effectively in demanding and securing these rights and in combating the sorcery and quackery which are perhaps the principal obstacles in the way of their attainment, an attempt was made, sponsored by the young mulatto journalist, Edison Carneiro, to organize all Bahian *seitas* into one body. The result was an organization known as the União das Seitas Afro-brasileiras da Bahia with a governing body, consisting of one representative from each *seita*, charged with the special responsibility of eliminating unorthodox practices.[4]

794
368
The *seitas* are located in sections of the city where the residents are almost exclusively blacks and dark mulattoes or in the outlying regions where dwellings are few. They number perhaps between a hundred and a hundred and fifty. Some say there are two to three hundred, but this estimate

---

[4] At the first session animosity between the more orthodox centers and the *caboclo seitas* was so great that any substantial agreement appeared to be quite difficult.

appears to be an overstatement. In the area surrounding the 794
sacred lake, or the Dique, and lying between the streetcar 368
lines known as Rio Vermelho de Cima and Rio Vermelho de Baixo are more than a score. A black who regularly attends the *seita* known as Engenho Velho is personally acquainted with eighteen *seitas*, can give the location of their sacred grounds, indicate their line of African descent, and repeat the names of their leaders. Of these eighteen *seitas*, he says that eleven are of Nagô origin, six of Angola, and one of Gêge. All are located in the outlying areas of the city in sections principally inhabited by the darker portion of the population or in the more or less open country. Of their leaders, [793]
nine are males and nine are females.[5]

Sacred places include the *terreiro*, or temple grounds; 794
the *franquia*, or sacred groves; sacred springs like that 778
called Milagre do São Bartholomeu ("Miracle of St. Bartholomew"), located in an isolated spot near Pirajá, bathing in whose waters on the part of a *filha de santo* dedicated to Oxun-manrê "immediately causes the *orixá* to arrive";[6] sacred lakes, like the Dique; and the sacred arms of the sea, such as Cabeceiras da Ponte, Mont'serrat, and Baiutê. In the *terreiro* are the *barracão*, or sacred dance pavilion; the *pegi*, or fetish sanctuary; the *camarinha*, or sacred room in which initiates are interned during the period of their preparation; special huts for those *orixás*, like Exú, who "prefer to dwell outside the *pegi*"; and the living-quarters for the priest and his retinue.

In one *seita* of Gêge-Nagô origin whose *pae de santo* is dedi- 794
796

---

[5] Of the eleven Nagô centers, four of the heads are males, seven are women; of the Angola centers, five are males, one a female. The leader of the Gêge *seita* is a woman.

[6] See below, p. 286.

794

796 cated to the *orixá* Ogun, the special ceremonial season begins
with the second week in September and concludes with the
794 first week in December. During this period ceremonies are
796 held every Sunday, each dedicated to one or more of the
776 *orixás*. The first ceremony is in honor of Oxalá; the second,
of Oxagian ("Oxalá the Younger"); and the following three,
of Ogun. Succeeding Sundays are dedicated, respectively, to
Xangô, Oxun, Oxóssi, Yemanjá, and Yansan. On the eleventh
Sunday and the subsequent Monday special honor is
paid to Omolú, and on the following Sunday and Monday, to
[782] all of the *mães d'agua*. On the final Sunday a *feijoada* (a
794 Brazilian food delicacy) is offered, with elaborate ritual, to
Ogun. In addition to this regular season, special ceremonies
[796] are held from time to time throughout the year, with the
exception of the Lenten period, when all *candomblé* activity
is suspended.

[776] The Gêge-Nagô and the Congo-Angola pantheons contain
about the same number of deities, or approximately a hundred
orixás each. The *caboclo* pantheon has perhaps a score
794 less. Each *orixá* possesses his proper fetish, insignia, sacred
778 day, sacred foods, sacred colors, sacred dress (including
[776] bracelets and beads peculiar to himself), and a distinguishing
cry. Today, only in rare instances are the fetishes carved
images; more often they are polished stones which have been
[782] worn smooth by the waters of a river or of the sea. They are
carefully cared for in the *pegi*, or sanctuary, by a special
functionary who at regular intervals washes them and replenishes
the food and drink offerings placed before them.

794 In some *seitas* Oxalá is considered the most important of
776 the deities; in others, Xangô; and, in still others, Omolú or,
as he is sometimes called, Xapanan. Olorun, "the father of
[178] the *orixás*," is almost forgotten today in Bahia, although

794

occasionally one meets an older *Africano* who thinks of 776
Olorun as "the creator of all the other *orixás*." Each is [178]
thought to have his home in Africa, and when one inquires of a black how the *orixás* can come so far to eat and drink the offerings set out for them, the answer is always easy, "They are summoned, and they come at once."

Each *orixá* is presumed on occasion to "manifest himself" 794
in human form and to speak his will. Such "manifestation" 776
is accomplished by "arriving in the head" of an individual 787
who has been dedicated to him. His "presence" is attested by an abnormal psychic state accompanied by violent, spasmodic muscular movements, particularly of the neck, shoulder, and back muscles. Seizure ordinarily takes place during ceremonial dances, but occasionally (quite rare today) it may occur spontaneously while the individual is alone and about his work. Subsequently, the one in whom the *orixá* has "arrived" and "manifested himself" is unaware of what has transpired.

The name, sex, personification, fetish, insignia, sacred 794
foods, sacred dress, sacred ornaments, sacred day, and iden- 776
tifying call of the principal Gêge-Nagô *orixás* at Bahia are as given in Table 15.

Each *seita* is presided over by a priest or priestess known 794
as the *pae de santo* or *mãe de santo* (literally, the "father" 793
or "mother" of the *orixás*). His (or her) most important functions are to identify a "manifesting" deity, supervise the initiation of the ceremonial dancers in whom an initial "manifestation" has occurred, perform the sacred ritual designed to "fix" the *orixá* in the fetish, supervise the sacrifices, and preside at public ceremonies. He may also exercise, to some extent at least, the office of an *olhador*, or diviner, who "throws the Ifá" to determine in advance the

[TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 284]

PRINCIPAL *Orixás* OF THE GÊGE-NAGÔ FETISH CULTS AT BAHIA

Name	Sex	Personification	Fetish	Insignia	Sacred Foods	Dress	Beads	Bracelet	Sacred Day	Call
Oxalá (Orixá-lá, Obatalá)*	M,F	(?)	Lead ring, cowries	Shepherd's staff with small bells	She-goat, pigeon	White	White	White beads, lead	Friday	Tremulous groan
Xangô	M	Lightning	Meteorite	Lance, hatchet	Cock, turtle, he-goat, *carurú*	Principal color: red	Red and white	Brass	Wednesday	*hay-ee-ee*
Ogun (Ogum)	M	War, iron	Iron: hoe, anvil, scythe, spade, shovel, sledge	Lance, sword	He-goat, cock, oxhead, guinea hen	All colors	All colors	Bronze	Tuesday	*guara-mim-fô*
Oxóssi (Oxo-osi, Ochossi)	M	The hunt	Bow and arrow, clay skillet, stone	Bow and arrow, hunting bag, powder horn, oxtail	Sheep, cock, maize	Green, yellow; trimmed with *palha da costa*	Green	Bronze	Thursday	Bark like that of a dog
Omolú (Humoulú, Omanlú, Xapanan)	M	Pestilence, especially smallpox	*Piassava* with *búzios*	Lance	He-goat, cock, *acassá*, popcorn, *orôbô*, maize with *azeite de dendê*	Red, black	Red and black, red and white	Cowries	Monday	*hû*
Exú	M	Evil (?), mischievousness	Clay, iron, wood	?	"Eats everything that is edible"	Red, black	Red, black	Bronze	Monday†	?
Yemanjá (Iemanjá)‡	F	Salt water	Seashell	*Fan, sword*	Pigeon, maize, cock, castrated he-goat	Red, dark blue, rose	*pingos de agua* (transparent)	Aluminum	Saturday	*hin-hee-ye-mim*

* Also known in Gêge as Oulissa; in Angola as Cassumbeca; in Tapa as Inacoude Jegum. (The *x* in Oxalá, etc., is pronounced like *sh* in English.)

† Also the first day of any extended ceremony.

‡ In the *candomblés de caboclo*, Yemanjá is called Rainha do Mar, Dona Janaina (or simply Janaina); Dona Maria, Sereia do Mar, Princesa do Mar.

4: Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll
794
776
778

TABLE 15—*Continued*

Name	Sex	Personification	Fetish	Insignia	Sacred Foods	Dress	Beads	Bracelet	Sacred Day	Call
Yansan (Iansan)	F	Wind, storm	Meteorite	Sword	Goat, hen, *amalá*,§ *acarajé*	Principal color: red ("avoids" violet)	Red, coral	Copper, brass	Wednesday	*hey-ee-ee* ("softer" than Xangô)
Oxun (Oxum, Osun)	F	Fresh water	Stone worn smooth by a river	*Abébé* (fan), looking-glass, small bell	Fish (*xinxim*), she-goat, hen, beans	?	Yellow, blue	Brass	Saturday	*hmm-hmm*
Anamburucú (Nanan, Nanamburucú)‖	F	Rain	Stone	Sword, small straw broom with cowries	Goat, hen, *ebó*	White, dark blue	White, red and blue	Aluminum	Wednesday	*hu-hu-hu-hu*
Oxun-maré (Ochu-maré)	F	Rainbow	Stone	?	Cock, he-goat	?	Orange	?	?	?
Lôkô (Rôkô, Irôkô)	?	?	*gamelleira* tree	?	Cock, tobacco, beer, white wine	All colors¶	All colors	?	Tuesday	Low whistle
Ifá	?	Future events	Fruit of the *dendê* palm	?	?	?	Green-yellow	?	?	?
Beji (Ibeji)	M	Twin births	Images of São Cosme and São Damião	?	*caruru*, *acassá*, *aberé*, *acarajé*, *farofa* with *azeite de dendê*	?	?	?	?	?

§ *Amalá* is *caruru* served with rice or with gruel made from the manioc root.

‖ Also known in Gêge as Tobossi. She is "the oldest" of the *mães d'agua* (Yemanjá, Oxun, Yansan, Anamburucú, Oxun-maré).

¶ Also a straw mat or a strip of white cloth, called *ojá*, which is wrapped about the trunk of a *gamelleira* tree.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

794
776
778

794
793 outcome of some projected action; and also the office of a
curandeiro, who diagnoses ailments and prescribes cures. He
may minister to a clientele even outside the members of the
seita, giving advice and counsel on matters of business, politics, love, etc.

794 Disputes between members of the *seita* are ordinarily sub-
mitted for adjudication to the *pae* or *mãe de santo*. Persua-
793 sion is at first employed. But if this proves unsuccessful, the
627 priest orders each of the disputants to wash his particular
fetish, upon which, with rare exceptions, acceptance of mediation is secured. The settling of the dispute is then cele-
brated by each party to the quarrel drinking from the water
[688] in which the other's fetish has been washed. Continuance of
the altercation will break the implied promise to the *orixá*
and render the offender liable to punishment, which is ordinarily death.

794 The *pae* or *mãe de santo* may also exercise the function of
793 a *feiticeiro* and deal in black magic. But this occupation is
754 disclaimed by several of the more prominent priests and
priestesses, who refuse to countenance deeds designed to do harm to their fellow-men. It appears to be exercised more often by heads of the recently organized and "less careful" *caboclo seitas*.[7]

794 Age, number of years a member of the cult, intimate
793 knowledge of the ritual, and, particularly, purity of African
554 descent are important considerations in determining the
prestige of a *pae* or *mãe de santo*.

For some reason male members of the *seita* rarely experi-

---

[556] [7] A *pae de santo* of a *caboclo candomblé* who is widely feared for his success in working black magic possesses a considerable bank account, numerous properties in the city, and rich cocoa land near Ilhéos, all acquired, it is said, from the exercise of this profession. However, it is quite probable that his political activity contributed a goodly portion.

For some reason male members of the seita rarely experi- 794
ence, as do the women members, the "manifestation" of an
orixá. Consequently, very few males ever pass through the 793
rigorous period of training which must always follow the 562
initial "appearance" of a deity in a given individual. More- [787]
over, the men, being more mobile than the women, are ordinarily brought into more extensive contact with the Europeans and their descendants and consequently tend to take over more readily the ideas and sentiments of the whites. The women, on the other hand, ordinarily remain more closely identified with the customs and traditions of their African ancestors. It is probably for this reason that several of the more prominent and influential *candomblés* in Bahia now have women leaders. For the head of a *seita*, upon his approaching death, ordinarily chooses the new priest (or priestess) from among those members of the cult who are most learned in the ritual and other tradition. When asked about the occasion for So-and-so's selection, cult members always say, "Ele [*or* ela] é muito sabido" ("He is very learned in the ritual").

Other sacred functionaries include the *ogans*, or male 794
members of the *seita*, who assist the *pae* or *mãe de santo* with the ritual, particularly in invoking the presence of the *orixás* during ceremonial dances, help initiate new *ogans*, act as intermediaries between the *seita* and the legal authorities, and contribute toward the expenses of the cult; the *achôgun*, or "second *pae*" as he is often called, who performs the sacrifices; the *jibonam*, or *pequena mãe* ("little mother"), next in authority to the *mãe de santo*, who assists the ceremonial dancers in carrying out their *preceitos*, or ritualistic obligations, and who makes the *despacho*, or food offering, to Exú at the opening of each important ceremony; the musicians, who assist at certain secret rituals and all public cere-

794 monies, together with their leader, the *alabê;* and the very important *filhas de santo* (literally "daughters of the *orixás*"), or ceremonial dancers, who serve as the so-called *cavalos* ("horses") for the deities who "manifest themselves" in their bodies and speak through them their will.

794 This "visitation" is known as the *estado de santo* ("state of 787 the *orixá*") and is ordinarily induced by prolonged fasting, the pungent odors of certain sacred herbs, the monotonous and long-continued beating of the *atabaques*, the heat from a large number of human bodies densely packed together on a warm night, the fatigue attendant on long-sustained dancing, the imperative expectations of the group, and, often as a precipitating incident, when tensions have been built up to the point where they can no longer be sustained, a sudden, loud, and unexpected noise. Seizure is said to be avoidable, as we have noted, by drinking cold water.

794 On the first "visitation" of an *orixá* in the body of an individual she must submit to either of two initiatory rites. She may elect the complete initiation of *fazer santo* ("to make the *orixá*"), or the partial initiation of *dar comida a cabeça*" ("to give food to the head"). If she elects the former, as most do, she makes an initial food offering to Exú, following which a fetish is secured and "prepared" by being washed by the *pae de santo* and immersed in *azeite de dendê*, honey, or *acaça*, depending on the *orixá*, the entire ritual being accompanied by special invocations. The initiate, or *yauô*, as she is now called, then surrenders all her garments, which, in symbol of the new life upon which she is about to enter, will never be worn again, and submits to a ritualistic bath, at dusk, in water scented with sacred herbs of a pun- [782] gent odor. The *yauô* is then received in the *pegi* by the dignitaries of the cult and seated in a chair never before used,

while the *orixás* "partake" of a special sacrifice offered 794
to them. Her hair is cut off, her head shaved,[8] and dots [782]
and circles are painted in white upon the crown, forehead,
and cheeks. The initiate then takes on *obí* in her hand, the [302]
atabaques begin to beat an invocation to her *orixá*, and she
dances the special dance sacred to him until he "arrives in [787]
her head" and she experiences once more the *estado de santo*.
The *yauô* is then escorted from the *pegi* to the *camarinha*,
where she remains for sixteen days before participating in
her first public ceremony, whence she returns to the *camarinha*
for a period of six months to a year, to be taught the
various rituals of the cult, the songs, and, to some extent at
least, an African language. Meanwhile, she is subject to certain [784]
food and other taboos. [262]

To verify her acceptance by the *orixá*, a *filha* may be required
to undergo without evidence of bodily harm an ordeal, 794
such as swallowing lighted candlewicks soaked in 785
azeite de dendê, thrusting her hands into boiling palm oil,
chewing the leaves of the *urtiga* (Brazilian thistle), or submitting,
on bended knee, to being beaten about the neck and
arms with a sprig of the thorny *cansanção*.

Throughout her life the new *filha de santo*, in addition to 794
submitting to the "manifestations" of her *orixá*, must perform 292
on occasion certain ritualistic acts, rigorously observe
certain food, drink, and sex taboos, and wear a special costume [262]
on ceremonial occasions and "days of obligation" [784]
(Fridays especially). On her death this costume, together
with the other objects of cult worship belonging to her, are [766]
taken and dropped into the sea, "to be carried by the waves
back to Africa."

Upon being "made," the *filha de santo* acquires a *guia* 794

---

[8] Formerly, all hairy parts of the body were shaved.

794 ("guide") and a protector who, if she obeys the prescribed rituals and taboos, may bring her, it is thought, much fortune and happiness. "Look at me!" exclaimed a newly "made" *filha*. "My *orixá* is the greatest of all the *orixás*. He's powerful. I'm a black woman and can't read or write. But I'm living with a man *formado* in the Faculdade de Medicina. See what Oxalá did for me!"

794 As has already been noted, the rituals and ceremonies of
796 the cult are serious and dignified and carried on in accord-
[562] ance with fixed traditional forms. Among the essential elements of the Gêge-Nagô ceremonies is the rigid separation of spectators according to sex. The males always occupy the
[273] seats to the left of the drums, the females those to the right. No drunkenness or obscenity is permitted. Said a member of a Nagô *seita*, "If they drink *cachaça* in a *candomblé*, you may know it is not well organized." Once at a ceremony at Gantois an intoxicated man forced his way through the crowd into the *barracão*. Immediately, the *mãe de santo* who was presiding signaled to two *ogans* who, calling out of the crowd a police official, promptly ejected the intruder.*

794 The *filhas de santo* before beginning a ceremonial dance
576 make obeisance to the *pae* or *mãe de santo* by dropping to their knees and bowing their heads to the ground before the leader of their cult. Similar obeisance is also made to visiting *paes* or *mães de santo* or other honored personages of the fetish world and, occasionally, to the *ogans*.

794 When, during the ceremonial dance an *orixá* "arrives in
796
787 the head" of a *filha*, she must, after the first violent seizure

---

[114] * Such romanticized accounts of fetish cult ceremonies as that given by Graça Aranha and uncritically quoted by Vera Kelsey (*Seven Keys to Brasil* [New York, 1940], pp. 27–28), if they have any basis in fact at all, owe it to the disintegration of formerly wholesome cultural forms now characteristic of certain *macumba* centers of Rio de Janeiro.

794
796
[787]

has passed, dance the dance sacred to her *orixá*, after which she is assisted from the *barracão* into the *pegi*, taking due care to withdraw with her face always toward the drums. In a special room she is then dressed in the ceremonial robes sacred to her *orixá* and, with his sacred insignia, returns to the *barracão* to dance for hours the dances sacred to him.

[782]

The sacrifices are performed according to the ritual peculiar to the occasion and include the offering of chickens, pigeons, sheep, and goats.

794
576

In the *candomblé* world certain gestures are obligatory. Thus, when saluting a high dignitary of the cult, a *filha*, if the *orixá* to whom she is dedicated is masculine, prostrates herself, face downward at the feet of the one so honored; if her *orixá* is feminine, she lies at full length first on one side, then on the other, and, on rising, touches her head to the ground. In taking leave of an *orixá* who has "visited" the ceremony, a member of the *seita* clasps tightly the left hand of the ceremonial dancer. *Ogans* have a special handshake used only between them. Following a discussion among members of a *seita*, agreement is signified by rising, beating the palms, and shaking hands.

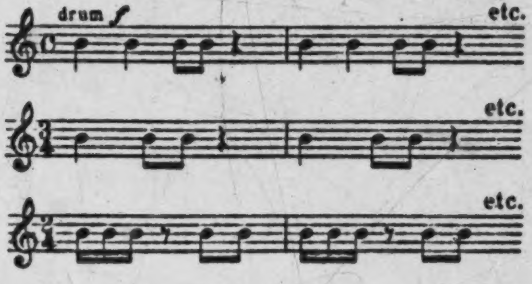
794
554

Status in the *candomblé* depends not only on one's position in the hierarchy of functionaries but more particularly upon priority in being "made" or confirmed. Those whose years of service are less are known as "the younger" and must address "the older" with greater respect and, as an *ogan* remarked, "prefer him above one's self."

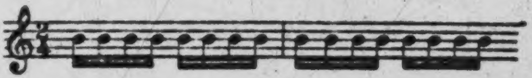
794
534

The musical instruments employed include the *alabaques*, or drums; the *agôgô*, with which the priest or priestess strikes the first notes of each invocation and later accompanies the drums; the *caxixi;* the *agê* (also known as the *cabaça*, or *piano de cuia*); the *adjá;* and, occasionally, the *xaque-xaque*.

794
533
[534] The *atabaques*, or drums, are indispensable to every ceremony. The heavy sound of the larger drum is intersected by the higher tones of the medium-sized and the small one. The rhythm is characterized by one-tone, interrupted syncopation and varies with each *orixá* invoked. Among the more frequent cadences noted by Arthur Ramos[19] are the following:



For the occasions on which an invoked *orixá* "delays" in manifesting himself, even after the tempo of his invocation is greatly increased, there is a special rhythm—vibrant, rapid, continuous, unsyncopated—known as *adarrum*, which the followers of the cult say no *orixá* can possibly "resist." It is the following monotonous rhythm:



Although the instrumental music of the *candomblé* is quite monotonous, as is also the hand-clapping which often accompanies it, the vocal accompaniment is polyphonic. The

---

[113]

[19] "Os instrumentos musicaes dos candomblés da Bahia," *Bahia Medica*, III (July, 1932), 194.

songs are ordinarily composed of simple sentences in the 794
minor key, and the scale, which on importation from Africa 533
is said to have consisted of only five intervals, now has seven.

Among the invocations sung to the various *orixás* is that given by a former *ogan* of the *candomblé* of Gantois:

Egbêji mori ô ri, okorin-kam [539]
Orolu mori ô ri, okorin-kam
(Powerful One, I know thee as the first man)

Ôkum-kum biri-biri
Ajá lê mori ô korin-kam
(Even in the dark I can see thou art powerful)

A orêrê aiê, orixá loman,
Iá, ochê Egbêji orêrê, aiê
(In the whole world, nothing is hidden from the
Great-One)[11]

At the burial of a cult member the songs and musical 794
instruments of the *candomblé* ceremonies are now seldom 764
used as, it is said, they formerly were. But the casket is car- [533]
ried by *ogans*, and the *filhas*, in *bahiana* costume, accompany [534]
the procession. Since it is still believed that the *orixá* of the [178]
departed may at this time seek a new *cavalo*, no pregnant [775]
woman attends. "Possession," however, may and does oc-
cur. Thus, at the burial of an elderly Negro woman, a *filha* 794
of Ogun from the *candomblé* of Engenho Velho, who had 764
been "made" for thirty-three years and was widely known 787
and respected for her knowledge of African ritual, two *filhas de santo* were "seized" as the procession wound its way up the steep ascent to Quinta dos Lazaros Cemetery, and another later as the crypt was being sealed. In each case "possession" began with light weeping which soon increased to loud sobbing, the individual meanwhile pressing her hands

---

[11] Manoel Querino, *Costumes africanos no Brasil* (Rio, 1938), p. 108.

794 764 787 forcefully to her head, one in front and one in back, as if in great pain. Knees then gave way and shoulders and back muscles began to vibrate violently. In one case, the spine stiffened and, with the exception of the shoulder muscles which continued a rapid quivering, the entire body became rigid, with arms and legs stretched out at full length. Meanwhile, the *filha* whimpered, cried, or shrieked aloud.

794 793 368 To reach the *seita* of a well-known *mãe de santo*, one takes a Calçada car out of the city, past orange groves and fields of tall forage grass, to the Matadouro, where he alights and begins to climb a steep winding road lined with the *nativo* plant (said to be native to Africa) and *uricuri* and coconut palms, until, after more than a mile of trudging, he comes out onto a high ridge overlooking a green valley, where he can see, far in the distance, the houses of the city. A cool breeze blows in from the sea and tempers the heat of the tropical sun. In a grove of scattered palm trees nestle several houses, some of which are neatly whitewashed and others tinted pink, yellow, or blue.

794 793 159 The *mãe de santo* is called Anninha. She is a tall regal-appearing black, whose slightest gesture is immediately obeyed by members of her *seita*. She owns considerable property and is said to be otherwise quite well to do. She boasts, proudly, "Sou filha de dois Africanos, graças a Deus" ("I am the daughter of two Africans, thank God"). Queito she learned to speak, she says, from her parents; Nagô she acquired "in the *seita*." She is illiterate, but of her learning in the ritual and belief of the African cult an *ogan* says, with pride, "She knows African things better than anyone I know in Bahia." Intelligent, quick-witted, agile in debate, she is one of the most widely respected and revered leaders of the Afro-Brazilian world.

794

revered leaders of the Afro-Brazilian world. When a priest argued with her that, since she had not been ordained by the pope, she had no "spiritual authority" to carry on religious rites, she quickly inquired if Moses, "that great prophet and leader of his people, was ordained by the pope?" The first man, she maintains, must not have been a white man but instead a colored man; "if not black, at least red. For do the scholars not say that man originated in Asia, and do white men ever come out of that continent?" Jesus also must have been an African, or at least a person quite dark. "For did not his parents once hide him in Egypt? And is not Egypt in Africa? If Jesus was not dark, how could they have hidden him among the people of Africa?"

793
159
829

This *mãe de santo* was "made" over fifty years ago in the *candomblé* of Engenho Velho. "My *seita* is pure Nagô, like Engenho Velho," she boasts. "But I have revived much of the African tradition which even Engenho Velho has forgotten. Do they have a ceremony for the twelve ministers of Xangô?[13] No! But I have." She is planning to rebuild her *barracão*, or sacred dance pavilion, to be paid for by tithes levied on the incomes of members of her *seita*. She owns a small store in the Terreiro where she sells the various articles used in the cult ritual and, since the members of the fetish world know that these articles must be, if she sells

[444]

---

[13] According to a well known Bahian *babalaô*, Xangô was a great African chief whose cruelties the people sought to do away with by setting fire one night to his dwelling. Everyone in it burned except Xangô, who walked unscathed through the flames. Astounded, the people prostrated themselves before him and begged his forgiveness. Xangô became a powerful king and subjected many neighboring tribes, twelve of whose chiefs subsequently became his royal advisers, or ministers. Even before his death, which occurred at an advanced age, Xangô was being worshiped. Cf. Martiniano do Bomfim, "Os ministros de Xangô," *Estado da Bahia*, May 5, 1937.

[539]

793
159
[444]

them, legitimate, the store does a thriving business. She says:

> 794
>
> The *Africano* doesn't worship things made with human hands. He worships nature. What is the *pedra* [the fetish stone]? Is it not a mineral? No human hands have made it.
>
> 793
> 159
> 771
>
> We are just as Christian as the Catholics. Only we follow the law of Moses. He commanded that sacrifices be made of sheep, goats, oxen, chickens, pigeons, and so forth. Is it not so? We merely obey his commandments.
>
> There are two parts to the Bible, are there not? The Old Testament and the New. We follow the Old as well as the New. In the days before Christ, the people worshiped God with singing and dancing. Is it not so? David played his harp and sang psalms and danced before the Lord. We have our songs, too, and each has a special meaning. Just as the Catholics have something to remind them of their saints, so we have something to remind us of our *orixás*. But we do not worship images made with human hands like they do. We worship nature.

794 One of the assistants of the *mãe de santo*, an elderly Negro woman who "takes care of" the *terreiro*, is said to be over ninety years of age, is known by an African name, Bádá, and speaks Nagô as well as, or better than, she speaks Portuguese. No one in the fetish world at Bahia is said "to give her the blessing," because she is the "oldest" (that is, the longest "made" or "confirmed") in the city. She laments "the old days" before the Africans in Bahia all died.

794
576
A Negro man of seventy-seven years of age, Martiniano, one of two *babalaôs* in Bahia, known and thoroughly respected throughout the fetish world for his piety and sincerity and his knowledge of African customs and traditions, is, upon entering the connecting-room to the *pegi*, saluted by a rapid beat of muffled drums. He bows to the drummers, acknowledging their greeting, steps into the *pegi*, bows low before the altar, touches the ground with the tips of his fingers, and repeats a prayer in Nagô. So learned is he "in

794

things African" that he is occasionally called to Pernambuco, four hundred miles up the Brazilian coast, to carry out special rituals which cult members in that city are unable to perform. Of the *candomblé*, he says, "The Nagô worships nature because he is realistic and wants to see what he worships. He can't see the Catholics' God." 794

794 346 352 353 The *barracão* here is about fifty feet by thirty, with roof and one end thatched with palm fronds, and floor freshly sanded. By nightfall it is gaily decorated with paper streamers, most of which are white; some, however, are red, blue, green, or yellow. A large and neat placard, which one of the *ogans* proudly says was painted by his daughter, a first-year student at the Escola Normal, bears the inscription: "Centro Cruz Santa do Aché de Okô Afonjá," a combination of Portuguese and Nagô which means "Sacred Cross Center of the Brothers and Sisters of the Temple of Xangô." Chairs to accommodate the priestess, the elderly Negro woman, and the old Negro man have been placed on a dais to the left of the musicians. The spectators are carefully excluded from the dancing space in front of the drums by railings patrolled by *ogans*. On the end wall hang three white pennants bearing respectively, the inscriptions, "Viva Oxalá," "Viva Oxun," and "Viva Aryra," and one red pennant with the words, "Viva Xangô."

794 [416] The *filhas*, all of whom are escorted into the *barracão* under a white sheet held by *ogans* who also light the procession with flaming torches, number seventeen, all of whom are blacks, with the exception of two dark mulattoes. Of the *ogans*, fourteen are blacks, eleven are mulattoes, six of whom are dark mixed-bloods, and one is a Portuguese immigrant who came to Brazil some thirty years ago and now owns a small retail establishment in the Lower City.

794 [302] [301] Three of the dancers are *yauôs*, in process of being "made." Their heads have been shaved clean, and white spots and blue lines have been painted upon them. On their cheeks are white spots and white lines. Around the neck, or over the right shoulder and under the left arm, are long chains of large cowries imported from the West Coast.

794 346 353 177 776 In a special building with a cement floor is "the throne room of Xangô." At one side is an altar to him, which is lavishly decorated with candles and flowers, both fresh and artificial. Indicating the fusion of Catholic and fetish elements, one notes on the lower step an image of Santo Antonio, on the second, one of Nossa Senhora das Candeias, on the third, an image of the twins, Cosme and Damião, and, on the top level, one of São Jeronimo. The *mãe de santo* says that Santo Antonio is "just another name" for Ogun; as similarly is Nossa Senhora das Candeias, for the water deity, Oxun; Cosme and Damião, for Beji; and São Jeronimo, for Xangô.

794 346 [352] On the other side of the room is "the throne of Xangô," a wooden chair, intricately carved, with a pillow for a headrest. Suspended on the walls are pictures of several Catholic saints.

[353] In the center of an adjoining room is "the spring of the *mãe d'agua*," a huge basin built of cement and containing ten to twelve inches of water. On the wall is the Nagô inscription, "Ilé Awon Afonjá" ("House of Xangô").

794 793 159 The leader of another *seita* is a male black, known as Pae Procopio, sixty-six years of age, of Gêge descent, whose father, grandfather, and great-grandfather, he proudly boasts, were all Africans and *paes de santo*. His mother's sister was also "an *Africano*," but his mother was a Brazilian-born black, a *mãe de santo* who "deixou o cargo" (i.e., left the

794

office of priest) to him. He is dedicated to the same *orixá*, 793
Ogun, as was she, and speaks, he claims, "a little of six dif- 159
ferent African languages: Nagô, Gêge, Ige-chá, Queito, [191]
Egba, and Musurumi." He owns "a roomful" of ceremonial
costumes, one of which is said to have cost six contos (ap- [292]
proximately $360). He considers his task to be that of "doing [435]
good" and refuses to deal in black magic, an attitude which
has cost him, it is said, "much money."[11] He is godfather to [608]
approximately a hundred and fifteen children and is soon to
be godfather to nine others who are on the point of receiving
the baptismal ceremony. He visits about the Reconcavo,
particularly in Cachoeira, exercising his office of *pae de santo*,
and is said to have paid similar visits to Rio de Janeiro,
Pernambuco, Maranhão, and Pará, in each of which he has
"made" several *filhas* and "confirmed" *ogans*.

The *achôgun*, or sacrificer, is an elderly black with a kindly 794
face and snow-white hair. The leader of the drummers, or the *alabê*, a jolly black whose mother (now deceased) was a *mãe de santo* in Cidade de Palha, is very expert with the drums, speaks Nagô, and sings in a high-pitched but rather pleasant voice the African *cantigas*, or ritualistic songs. An *ogan* says of him, proudly, "He knows almost as much about African things as a *pae de santo*."

An elderly Negro woman, who walks haltingly with a cane, attends every ceremony. Younger friends carefully help her to a seat where she can see everything that goes on. Leaning forward on her cane, her intelligent eyes wide open, her face continually breaking into beaming smiles, she joins

---

[11] An *ogan* of this *seita* says that a *pae de santo* in Itapoan named Gregorio [754]
(now deceased) once declined twelve contos (approximately $720) "to make a man mad." This *ogan* knows, however, a *mãe de santo* who, as he says, became angered at the remarks of a young skeptic and "made a *negocio*" (literally a "business"; i.e., black magic) which "drove him mad in two days."

794 heartily in the songs, occasionally taps her cane on the ground in time with the drums, and appears to enjoy thoroughly each part of the ritual. Every once in a while she leans toward the drummers and shouts at the *alabê* in Nagô. Sometimes, when the *pae de santo* is temporarily absent from the *barracão*, she initiates the ritualistic songs. Her name is Ismeira and she lives in an old house in a section of the city which was once entirely inhabited, it is said, by Nagôs.

794 As the ceremony begins, 22 *filhas*, 1 *filho* (or male cere-
796 monial dancer), and the *pae de santo* are in the circle which has formed around the central post of the *barracão*. Seated in the center of the circle is a visiting *pae de santo* named Vidal. Twenty-one *ogans*, including visitors from other *seitas*, are to the left of the drums. Into the other available spaces are packed 208 spectators, of whom 136 are blacks, 68 are mulattoes (all dark mixed-bloods, except 6), and 4 are *brancos da Bahia*. There are no whites. Approximately two hundred other individuals mill about outside.

794 In this *seita* there are in all 34 *filhas de santo*, nearly 60 per
463 cent of whom are over forty years of age. The eldest are seventy-two and seventy-one years, respectively, and 9 are fifty or over. Ten are from forty to fifty, 7 are from thirty to forty years of age; 6 are twenty to thirty, 1 is nineteen, and 1 is twelve. Two are married, 13 are *amaziada*, 2 are engaged to be married, 15 are single, and 2 are widowed. All are from the lower class. Thirteen are peddlers of African foods in the streets, 7 are seamstresses, 5 are laundresses, 5 are domestic servants, and 1 is a midwife. One, the next to the eldest, is employed in looking after the *casa de candomblé*, 1 is the
794 *zelador de santo*,[14] and 1 an adolescent child. Thirteen, or

---

[14] It is the task of the *zelador de santo* to care for the *pegi*, wash the fetishes at regular intervals, and renew the food and drink offerings.

more than a third, live in the immediate vicinity of the *terreiro*, 794 16 live from one to four miles away in seven different sections of Bahia, 3 are from the neighboring villages of Armação and Pitúba, and 2 others, residents of Rio de Janeiro, are visiting relatives and friends in Bahia.

One *filha de santo* has been "made" fifty-eight years; another, fifty-seven. Three more have been functionaries of the cult thirty years or longer; ten, from twelve to twenty-one years; nine, from six to seven years; six, including the twelve-year-old girl, from one to two years; and two have been "made" only approximately one month. Six are dedicated to the *orixá* of lightning and thunder, Xangô; five to the *orixá* of pestilence, Omolú; four to the deity of the hunt, Oxóssi, and four to the deity of war and iron, Ogun. Two others are dedicated to Oxalá "the Elder," and two to Oxalá "the Younger," or Oxagian. Nine are sacred to the *mães d'agua*, or the water deities: four to Oxun, two each to Yansan and Nanan, and one to Yemanjá, "the *orixá* of the sea."

The sixteen *ogans* range in age from twenty to sixty years, with the exception of a five-year-old boy. The "eldest" in point of service to the cult has been *confirmado* ("confirmed") thirty-two years. Most are persons of relatively assured income from the lower class, [565] there being among them hucksters, stevedores, day laborers, a *carroceiro*, a tinsmith, [463] a painter, a baker, a tailor, and a typesetter. Only three, or less than one-fifth, live in the immediate vicinity of the *terreiro*, the residences of the others being scattered throughout the city in nine different sections.[13]

---

[13] This dispersion is perhaps indicative of the *candomblé's* gradual disintegration. [178] An *ogan* remarked, "I would like to have all the *ogans* and the *filhas* living here near each other. It would be so much better. Years ago they used to live that way. But today everyone wants to live wherever he chooses anywhere in the city."

794 796 787 786 The dances continue unabated for hours, until the air of the *barracão* becomes very warm and permeated with the odor of perspiring bodies. Seriously, with rapt attention, the closely packed crowd looks on, eager to see and hear the numerous *orixás* as they "arrive." During a period of the most intense excitement, when tensions have been built up almost to the breaking-point, a rocket suddenly bursts with a loud report outside the *barracão*. A woman seated among the spectators who is not a *filha de santo* is immediately thrown into violent, convulsive muscular movements and bounces up and down with great force on the board seat, her head snapping back and forth in time to the now almost frenzied beat of the drums. The *pae de santo* rushes to support her in order to prevent imminent injury. Several visiting *filhas de santo* who do not want to dance in this strange place and are consequently "resisting" the imminent "arrival" of their *orixás*, call out with imploring voices, one after the other, "Dê-me agua, por amor de Deus" ("Give me water, for the love of God!"). The face of a servant girl named Joanna, a *filha* from a neighboring *seita*, is drawn, and she appears to be in pain. Afterward, she says that her *orixá*, Xangô, was beating and striking her to make her dance and that she felt more tired than if she had danced all night long. But other spectators remark, "How beautiful! I never saw Ogun dance like that before. And Oxóssi, and Yemanjá, they are wonderful, simply wonderful!"

794 346 353 [373] The ceiling of another *barracão* (at the *terreiro* called Gantois) is trimmed with paper streamers—red, white, blue, and yellow—each alternating with rows of white paper roses. The electric-light bulb suspended from the ceiling is shaded by red and white pieces of cellophane. On the walls are red and white paper shields, each bearing the words, "Louvores á

Xangou" ("Praises to Xangô") or "Louvores á Ogun" ("Praises to Ogun"). A small niche built in above the doorway which leads to the *pegi* is neatly decorated with red and white paper bows, and in it stands a crucifix about ten inches high, together with images of the Virgin Mary with the child Jesus in her arms, of Santo Antonio (St. Anthony), and of São Jorge (St. George). 794 346 353

In a circle in front of the drums are twenty-two women, the oldest of whom is about sixty years of age and the youngest eight. Fourteen are blacks, eight are mulattoes, none of whom is very light. All have serious expressions on their faces, especially the little girl, although none appear in the least bit self-conscious. Six are *yauôs*, or initiates, in the process of being "made," and range in age from fourteen to seventeen years. Two are dedicated to Omanlú (Omolú), and four to Oxun. The Omanlú initiates are dressed principally in shades of red. Strands of hemp died reddish-brown drop from the head to below the knee, completely obscuring the face. Above the head the strands rise vertically and are tied together in a cluster at the end. Below the hem of a dark-red skirt appear white pantalettes which fit tightly over the legs and extend to the ankle. Each girl wears four strands of cowries around each bare arm at the biceps and a long string of cowries over the right shoulder and under the left arm. 794 794 292 822 [301]

The Oxun initiates have their heads shaved, and three concentric circles have been painted in white around the crown. Smaller circles intercept the outer of these three. Large white spots have also been painted on the face, the neck, and the back of the head. Four feathers, one of which is red, one white, one black, and one brown, are held firmly upright at the forehead by a ribbon tied very tightly. Each 794 [302] [301] [822]

794 girl carries in her hand the insignia of Oxun, a *leque* (fan) of
brass decorated with a star.

794 All the other dancers, except one, are dressed in the
796 *bahiana* costume, with wide-flowing skirts of bright-colored
[291] cotton prints, blouses trimmed in handmade lace, and a *pano
da Costa* two feet in width tied tightly around the small of
the back and over the breasts. One woman about thirty-five
years of age is dressed in an ordinary street costume of
[301] tailored blouse and skirt. Many of the dancers wear bracelets
of copper, brass, bronze, lead, or glass beads, often on
both wrists and occasionally three to four to the arm. One
dancer has five strands of cowries about her neck.

794 The priestess of the *seita*, Mãe Mennininha, is a large
793 black woman, forty-one years of age, who has officiated in
this *seita* for twenty-four years. She proudly speaks of herself
as "uma neta d'um Africano" ("the granddaughter of an
African").

786 Every dance begins with the salutation of the *mãe de santo*,
535 which is accomplished by striking decisively the *agôgô*.
794 Immediately the drums take up the rhythm. The *filhas* begin
796 to dance, the circle turning like the rim of a wheel,
[576] counterclockwise. The women have their hands clasped behind
[533] their backs, their shoulders are hunching backward and
forward, their bodies bending at the waist from side to side.
One of the Oxun initiates moves with a halting, jerking
movement, then suddenly pivots a complete turn. All the
dancers are singing a refrain which sounds like, "Ô-mi-á, bá-
794 tû-lê." After some twenty minutes of continuous dancing,
796 one of the *filhas* suddenly becomes "possessed," her eyes
close, her expression becomes listless, while her neck and
787 shoulder muscles work convulsively back and forth "in
786 time to the music." Voluntary control is apparently gone,

786
794
796
[787]

and she is helped around the circle by the next in line. When the music temporarily ceases, she relaxes, staggers, and appears in imminent danger of falling. Several *filhas* rush to catch and support her.

[535]
[787]

Again the *mãe de santo* strikes the *agôgô*, the leader of the drummers takes up the rhythm and sings out a refrain in which all the dancers join, beating their palms in time with the music. The tempo increases. The dancers as they pass round the circle alternately bow their heads, flex their knees, and touch the right hand to the floor, then snap erect, all in perfect time with the music. An elderly black woman emerges from a connecting-room and, shaking vigorously a *caxixi*, joins in the dance. With loud reports, rockets go off outside the *barracão*. Popcorn is then brought in and thrown over the dancers. The eyes of the initiates, who have also made part of the circle of dancers, are closed and remain closed throughout the ceremony. The shoulders of one *yauô* jerk spasmodically, her head hangs limp and must be supported by other dancers.

[535]
[533]

Again the circle forms, and the *filhas*, singing at the top of their voices, shuffle forward in a half-stumbling movement, arms flexed at elbows and flapping up and down. An *ogan* says this dance is called *opanigé*. Sometime later, a *filha*, about forty-five years of age, suddenly sprawls stiff-legged on her hands and the tips of her toes, rapidly touches her forehead to the ground in front of the drums and shouts, "Hay-ee-ee," then leaps erect, jerks herself forward spasmodically, then repeats the performance. A girl joins the circle, wearing a pink and gold turban and carrying in her right hand a brass dagger eighteen inches long. Closing her eyes, she begins a wild dance, thrashing about with the dagger to right and to left. The tempo of the

794
786 drums is accelerating. Another *filha*, a large but agile
796 Negro woman, strikes out at the girl with her bare hands,
and the two dance about, fighting a mock fight, while the
[535] beat of the drums becomes even more rapid and tumultuous
[533] until, just as the dancers close in upon one another where, it seems, harm might result, other *filhas* swing quickly in, catch each woman around the waist, and draw them apart, while the music slackens its tempo.

[535] All the *filhas* begin to dance again, their arms swinging from side to side, the index finger of the right hand held closely pressing against the thumb of the left. The dancing is very animated. Suddenly, one of the *filhas*, her shoulders heaving violently back and forth, begins to sink upon her knees and, gradually lowering her heaving shoulders to the floor, turns over on her back, all the while keeping the index finger of her right hand firmly in contact with the thumb of her left. She then slowly rises, gets to her feet, and again joins the other *filhas*. An *ogan* says this dance is known as *ccú*.

[787] The dances continue, rockets burst outside, confetti and flower petals are thrown over the initiates, and, at the insistent invocations of the drums and the spirited singing of the *filhas*, many *orixás* "arrive" and "take possession" of their human intermediaries.

794
182 The primary social function which the *candomblé* appears to serve is that of reinforcing, by way of the collective experiences of ritual and ceremony, those attitudes and sentiments which distinguish the *Africanos* and their descendants from the European population and from the major portion of the mixed-bloods. By promoting a measure of solidarity and group consciousness, it tends to slow up the process of acculturation. At the same time cult experiences

794
182

help to satisfy the basic human needs for recognition and response. The resolution of all sorts of personal problems by way of the advice and counsel of the priest, priestess, or "manifesting" *orixá*, relieves personal strain and tension. And the reassuring affirmations regarding personal destiny which the body of belief affords, particularly at such times of crisis as the death of an intimate friend or relative, contribute to the apparently universal need of a sense of security.

Moreover, cult experiences serve as cogent means of maintaining group morale and enforcing group sanctions. The genuinely wholesome character of the Bahian *Africanos*, with the exception perhaps of certain individuals connected with recently organized *caboclo* centers, stands in sharp contrast to the personal disorganization which, according to report, characterizes the Rio de Janeiro Negro, whose *candomblé* (known locally as the *macumba*) is now in such a state of disintegration that many unwholesome and even vicious practices have crept into its ritual.

79
178

The Catholic church at Bahia, by exercising almost infinite patience and tact, has now incorporated into its organization all members of the Bahian fetish cults. Even the leaders of the *seitas* regularly attend Mass and, on occasion, participate, together with their entire *candomblé* personnel, in functions of the church. Thus, each year at an appointed time, *mãe de santo* Anninha takes her *filhas de santo*, dressed in their *bahiana* costumes, and her *ogans*, and attends Mass in Bomfim Church; as similarly does the *caboclo mãe de santo*, Sabina, in the *igreja* of Santo Antonio da Barra. Anninha, like certain other cult officials, is a member of a Catholic order. So far has the identification of many elements of the fetish tradition with Catholic ideology and practice now gone that to the simple minds of cult members

79

178 there is little distinction between them. The *pae de santo* of a prominent Congo *seita* recently remarked, "I do everything (i.e., I carry on all cult rituals and ceremonies) in the name of the church."[16]

On the fiftieth anniversary of the death of the father of a well-known and widely respected *babalaô*, a special commemorative Mass was arranged in one of the city's principal churches. During the ceremony, a circle of friars who were standing with lighted candles about the bier was joined by an outer circle of Negro men, each bearing a funeral torch. Although the friars were probably unaware of the fact, the blacks were all *ogans* from the *candomblé* of *mãe de santo* Anninha. In the audience were more than a hundred important personages from the fetish world, including *babalaôs*, *paes* and *mães de santo*, *ogans*, and *filhas*. Said the *babalaô* whose father was being thus honored, "Last night at the *terreiro* we danced all night the African funeral dances for my father."

794
177
776 In the minds of cult members several of the more important African *orixás*, as we have seen, have come to be identified with certain Catholic saints. Thus, Ogun, the *orixá* of war, is now identified with Santo Antonio; Oxóssi, the *orixá* of the hunt, with São Jorge; Oxalá, who to most members of the *candomblé* is "the greatest of the *orixás*," with O Senhor do Bomfim, who is, among the lower classes at least, the most important Catholic saint at Bahia;[17]

---

[16] This point of view obviously is not that of the Catholic church itself.

[346]

[17] In Bomfim Church, which, with two rows of royal palms dominating its approach, occupies majestically the crown of a hill in Itapagipe, is a special room whose walls and ceiling are completely covered with photographs or plaster casts of crippled or diseased limbs or other parts of the body which have been, it is thought, miraculously cured of disease or other infirmary by the direct intervention of the saint. So great is his reputation for healing that thousands of people from miles around visit this shrine every year.

Omolú, the *orixá* of pestilence, with São Roque, or, in some 794
cases, with São Bento; and Exú, with Satan. Of the *mães* 177
d'agua (water deities), Yemanjá is confused in some cases 776
with Nossa Senhora da Piedade (Our Lady of Compassion), and in others with Nossa Senhora do Rosario (Our Lady of the Rosary); Oxun, in some cases, with Nossa Senhora das Candeias and, in others, with Nossa Senhora da Conceição (Our Lady of the Immaculate Conception); Yansan, with Santa Barbara; and Nanan (Anamburucú, Nanamburucú), with Nossa Senhora de Sant'Ana. Beji, the twins, are identified with Cosme and Damião; Irôko (Rôko, Lôko), who is presumed to dwell in the *gameleira* tree, with Poverello (São Francisco) de Assis;[18] and Ifá, the *orixá* of divination, with Santissimo Sacramento (the Most Holy Sacrament). Even Xangô, the *orixá* of lightning and thunder, to whom Edison Carneiro refers as "indisputably the most African of all the *orixás* worshiped at Bahia,"[19] and who is still thought of by some blacks as being distinct from any Catholic saint, is worshiped in several of the most representative Gêge-Nagô *seitas* under the name of São Jeronimo and, occasionally, of Santa Barbara.

The conditions which favor fusion in this last-named case 776
are not difficult to understand. In Portuguese folklore Santa 177
Barbara is thought of as a protector against lightning, a conception which probably led very easily to the identification of Santa Barbara in the Negroes' minds with Xangô, who is, in the African tradition, "the *orixá* of the thunderbolts." Fusion in this case, as in others, would have been aided by the common conception that each African deity is both a protector and a destroyer; a kindly protector when offered

---

[18] Edison Carneiro, *Religiões negras* (Rio, 1936), p. 155.

[19] *Ibid.*, pp. 153-54.

776
177 the proper ritual, and a vengeful destroyer if rites and taboos are ignored.

Although this fusion is proceeding rapidly, it is still far from complete. A number of Gêge-Nagô and Congo-Angola *orixás*, and at least thirty *caboclo* deities, have not yet been in any way identified with Catholic equivalents.

794
177
797 Occasionally, the critical attitude of members of the fetish world toward unorthodox practices in other *seitas* extends also to the incorporation of Catholic ritual, ideas, and sentiments into fetish practice and belief. A *babalaô* and *feiticeiro*, born in Africa of repatriated Brazilian slaves, recently remarked, "These Bahian *candomblés* aren't African any more. Why, they all go to Mass, pray the rosary, and burn candles to the saints! It's all mixed up now."

539
177 The following story illustrates the fusion of European and African traditions. Related recently by a local black, it recounts some of the experiences of Obaluaiê (Abaláu-aiê) and Omolú, known also in Bahia as Xapanan (Xapanã), and is obviously confused with the biblical stories of the Prodigal Son and of Lazarus. It also refers to a European city.

XAPANÃ, FATHER AND SON

Xapanã was fifteen years old when his parents sent him out into the world to see what life was like. After he had walked a long way, he came to a city called Venice, where he went about looking for work. But no one offered him anything, and finally, becoming very hungry, he began to go up to houses and beg for something to eat. But everywhere he asked he was turned away.

Sad and disillusioned, Xapanã continued on his way. At last he came to a forest, where he remained for some time, living on fruits and insects.

When Xapanã was nineteen years of age, he began to think of returning to his father's house and at last made himself ready and set out on the way. Xapanã walked and walked, until one day just as

539
177

night was falling, he, all covered with sores and bruises, began to approach his father's house.

But his father, who saw the traveler coming a long way off, did not recognize him and consequently did not go out to meet him. Xapanã's mother, however, knew her son and in pity at his misfortune, begged and pleaded with her husband to have compassion for him and to receive him like the legitimate son he was.

But the old man turned to her and said:

"This fellow is not my son, because I never had a son who was full of sores."

But, at last, due to the continued pleadings of his wife, the ancient one inquired of the traveler what his name was. Xapanã replied:

"I am called Lazarus."

"Who is Lazarus?" asked the father.

Then Xapanã said: "I am he whom God permitted to use this name."

But the old man persisted in knowing the reason why, if he was Xapanã, he was using the name of Lazarus.

The son turned to his father and replied very quietly:

"I am Xapanã, the lord over pestilence throughout the whole world." And he sang in Queito:

"I say "Guedé,"
I am Obaluaiê,
I call out "Guedé,"
I am Obaluaiê,
Tôtô."

The old man Omolú then replied:

"Ojé badô
Dó lá."

And the young man sang:

"Ojé di apá."

In this way the two came to know each other, and Xapanã "the Elder" recognized Xapanã "the Younger."

A few whites, even from the upper classes, visit the *pae de santo* to obtain advice on business, politics, and other matters or aid in the cure and prevention of disease. Numerous

571
793
000

782

Numerous
565 families *da boa sociedade* ("of social standing") "dão comida"
184 (make the food offerings, especially of *carurú*) to Beji
794 (Cosme and Damião) and celebrate the day sacred to their honor. A number of white individuals on occasion make offerings to the *mãe d'agua*. Cases like that of the wife of a former state senator and political chieftain who kept an altar to an African *orixá* in her house are, however, not numerous.

125 Of 66 students in the Escola Normal classifying themselves
782 as *brancos* and responding to the query, "Do members of
184. your family give presents to the *mãe d'agua?"* 7, or 10.6 per
794 cent, answered in the affirmative. Of 36 *pardos*, the families of 9, or 25 per cent, similarly made offerings. Of 63 whites, 29, or 46 per cent, thought one ought to fear the *bozo* (black magic); as did 12, or 37 per cent of the *pardos*, and all 6 of the *pretos* who replied. Of 63 whites, only 1 thought the statement "A *pae de santo* is more useful in time of illness than a physician" was true, but 9, or 14 per cent, regarded it as "partially true"; of 32 *pardos*, 2 believed the statement true, and 7, or 22 per cent, thought it "partially true." Of 197 students in the Escola Normal and the Law School, the families of 25, or 13 per cent, "give *comida*" to Cosme and Damião.

184 Ordinarily the attitudes which the inhabitants of Euro-
798 pean descent take toward the *candomblé* vary from good-
794 natured tolerance, which is the most characteristic, through
829 indifference, which is common, to active opposition, which is comparatively rare, although from time to time complaints like the one below find their way into the newspapers.

[539] In *A Tarde* for May 8, 1936, appeared an editorial under the title:

184
798
794
539
829

> ### DANGEROUS *CANDOMBLES*
>
> Education may perhaps be the most certain means of eradicating harmful customs. But when these customs are linked with the persistent beliefs of African fetichism and constitute outrageous attacks upon the moral and physical well-being of those who practice them, it becomes necessary to insist upon immediate and complete suppression. This can be done in no way except by police action, energetic and persistent.

And, in *A Tarde* for December 9, 1935, appeared the following complaint:

> ### THE CITY THAT GOD FORGOT
>
> Scenes which Degrade and Depress . . . . The Revived *Candomblés* . . . . *Despachos* Even in the Heart of the City . . . .
>
> The above looks like a movie title. But it is not. Our capital really is a city forgotten by . . . . God. . . . .
>
> Your reporter . . . . has set down in his notebook curious scenes which reflect discredit upon our civilization; things which . . . . continue on for the eyes not only of those who live here but also of those who visit us from foreign places.
>
> Bahia already has the reputation of being the city of *candomblés*, the paradise of the *macumbas*. However, these used to be localized in fixed zones where the devotees of Oxalá and Yemanjá beat their drums and "fell into the *santo*." Now they begin to encroach upon the most frequented streets, and the African cult is to be seen even in the best residential areas.
>
> Your reporter verified this fact last Sunday night in the *bairro* of Barra, an elegant and aristocratic suburb. Here is to be found Grenfeld Street, very close to the Avenida Oceanica. And on this very street is a *candomblé*.
>
> Happily there is no noise of drums. But palms are used instead, which beat without ceasing until day dawns. And whenever anyone makes an inquiry, the *pae de santo* insists that he has a license, and continues. . . . .
>
> One morning not long ago, your reporter was passing in front of the

[789]

184

798
539
794
789
829

> State Treasury building, a spot very much frequented. A *bozó* had been left there and still remained exposed to the curiosity of all who passed.
>
> A black hen, three copper coins, yellow *farofia*, a cloth doll, stuck full of pins, a piece of a man's shirt, and other *bugigangas* [trinkets].
>
> The thing was there until midday. This is no uncommon occurrence, but one which is frankly deplorable. That in the heart of our city, so close to the Rua Chile, *despachos* are made to Exú is, to say the least, disgusting.

[364] In the same newspaper sometime later (June 10, 1937), under the title, "A Specialist in Sport *Bozós*, *Pae de santo* Manoelzinho Is the Worst Enemy of the Limpeza Publica [Street Cleaning Department]," this complaint appeared:

> A short time ago the *macumbeiro* known as Manoelzinho took up his residence in a *roça* at No. 256 Cruz do Cosme, and since that time his *bozós* have led to continuous complaints from dwellers along that road and from those who chance to pass that way.
>
> At the side of the road just below the *roça* is a *loco* tree, that species so much preferred for fetishistic practices. Here *bozós* accumulate from day to day until they constitute a veritable mountain of refuse in which may be found an increasing number of dead fowls.
>
> We are informed that this Manoelzinho, who is a *pae de santo* with considerable prestige, is a specialist in sport *bozós*. For it is said that among those who consult him are certain members of the different soccer clubs. Recently a policeman, on the eve of a great game at Graça, noted in one of these *bozós* the initials "T. V." which are the same as those of a well-known athlete.
>
> Since the Street Cleaners never pass along Cruz do Cosme, the *bozós* keep polluting the atmosphere and obliging those who pass by to cover their noses with handkerchiefs.
>
> To whom shall we appeal? Who will do something about this?

798
794
829

However, more characteristically, the Bahian identified with European customs and traditions adopts toward the *candomblé* a tolerant attitude. While he looks upon it as "ignorant fetishism," he ordinarily accepts it as "an African institution," which, in the words of a student at the Faculty

of Law, "will gradually disappear with social evolution." 798
"Education will do away with it. Just give it time," remarked 794
a student at the Faculty of Medicine. There are a 829
few intellectuals, individuals who have broken with the Catholic church, who believe that the *candomblé* is entitled to the same rights and privileges as any other religion. One of these remarked, "We should see to it that the government gives the *candomblé* a square deal."

Indeed, of those Bahians identified with the European culture, 798
the whites tend to be more tolerant of the *candomblé* 794
than either the blacks or the mixed-bloods. These blacks 178
and mixed-bloods are seeking to establish themselves in 554
class and naturally make every effort to disassociate themselves 829
from what are commonly considered to be lower-class cultural elements. Of 66 white students in the Escola Normal who responded to the query "Do you think the *candomblé* ought to be suppressed?" 22, or one-third, said, "No"; while, of 22 *pardos*, all but one replied in the affirmative. Of 5 blacks, 4 said, "Yes."

In the face of constant, although ordinarily tolerant, disparagement 794
on the part of most prestige-bearing individuals
in the European portion of the community and of such institutions 178
as the church, the school, and the newspaper, most 829
of the younger Negroes now tend to forsake the *candomblé* and the body of ideas and sentiments identified with it and to look upon these customs and traditions as evidence of "ignorance," "backwardness," and "retarded mental growth." Older leaders of the cult often complain, as did Maria Bádá on one occasion, that "the *candomblé* isn't what it used to be. The young people today don't learn Nagô; they don't know how to carry on any of the ritual; and, what is worse, they don't want to learn." *Mãe de santo* Anninha once remarked, in much the same words as in recent years have

829

794 often been heard, on the lips of older members of, particu-
178 larly, Protestant churches in the United States, "These
young people today are not like we used to be. It's a shame
the way they stray away."

829 João is a young black about twenty years of age who has
794 just completed a business course subsequent to graduation
from the Ginasio da Bahia, the city's state-supported sec-
178 ondary school. One day, in the home of his uncle, who is a
159 prominent figure in the fetish world, João was copying a
[873] page in Nagô. Possessed of a deep affection for his uncle and
being characteristically obliging and courteous, he was at-
[658] tempting to learn a few words of this African language. But
the impression João made on a visitor was that his efforts
with Nagô arose rather from a desire to please his uncle than
from any genuine interest in the language itself. João remarked, apologetically, "You know I would like to learn it, but I just don't have time when I'm working every day."

A young mulatto girl who had completed two years at a
secondary school remarked, "I don't care much for the
candomblé, except to watch the dances and to see the [cere-
monial] costumes. I seldom go, and then only for some spe-
[546] cial reason. I like the movies better, especially the North
American and the English films." She further remarked:

> My uncle doesn't believe in this business of the *orixás*. One day his daughter—my cousin—said that she felt an *orixá* about to "arrive." She ran all the way to a *candomblé*, began to dance, and, sure enough, "she fell into the *estado de santo*." But my uncle wouldn't stand for it. He got a sprig of *urtiga* and whipped her and then went and whipped the *pae de santo* too. The next day, my cousin couldn't bear anyone's hand on her, she was so sore. But that was the end of the *orixá*. He never came back.

José is a young mixed-blood, twenty-two years of age, employed as a janitor in one of Bahia's public buildings. Although he knows of three *seitas* near his home—one each in Pau Miuda, Cidade da Palha, and Cruz do Cosme—he has no interest in them. However, he has a consuming interest in the cinema, keeps an elaborate scrapbook which now contains over a hundred and fifty individual photographs of actors and actresses, and can glibly name nearly all the films in which each has played during the last three or four years.[20]

829
794
178
159
[523]

The following account by a young mulatto student of secondary-school age who has developed a somewhat skeptical attitude toward the *candomblé* in spite of his father's being a prominent *ogan* in one of the *seitas* who occasionally, when the elderly *achôgun* is ill, officiates at the sacrificial ritual, illustrates the difficulty which *candomblé* leaders now experience in enforcing the sanctions of the cult:

794
178
159
578
829

> Pedro [a young *ogan*] didn't show proper respect for my father when he suggested that there ought to be some repairs made at the *terreiro*. Pedro said it had been that way when he was "confirmed" and that it was all right now. He used "você" in speaking to my father, although he is much "younger." And he said my father lied. When I heard about this, I hunted up Pedro and told him that he hadn't treated my father right, and when he talked nonsense I hit him. Pae Procopio then hunted me up. I told him that I didn't believe in anything he did, that I wasn't afraid of any sorcery he might make, that Pedro had ill-treated my father, and that I wanted nothing to do with him and with all his accursed *candomblé*.

---

[20] For instance, José named five films in which Patricia Ellis had played. His favorite actress is Shirley Temple, after which come, in order, Lilian Harvey, Joe E. Brown, Maurice Chevalier, and Laurel and Hardy. In addition, he likes Raul Roulien, Dolores del Rio, James Cagney, Lyle Talbot, Kay Francis, Dick Powell, Eddie Cantor, Clara Bow, Jeanette MacDonald, George O'Brien, Fred Astaire, John Boles, George Brent, Richard Talmage, José Mojico, Jan Kiepura, Adolphe Menjou, Pat O'Brien, Chester Morris, Buster Crabbe, Charlie Chaplin, Lee Tracy, Gary Cooper, Ramon Navarro, George Bancroft, Johnny Mack Brown, Alice Faye, Olivia de Havilland, and Ken Maynard. José does not care for Buck Jones, although many of his friends do. Neither does he like Lionel Barrymore, Douglas Fairbanks, Jr., Richard Arlen, Ronald Colman, or Gordon Westcott. Paul Muni, he says, is "only fair."

794 178 177 829 As a Bahian white said, "When a black man puts on a tie and shoes and learns to read and write, he loses interest in the *candomblé*. There are really two civilizations at Bahia, ours and the African. When a black begins seriously to take on our customs, he seldom spends any more time at *candomblés*." A prominent mulatto educator remarked, "I've never been to a fetish cult. I have no interest in them." A Negro laborer admitted that he used to go to such ceremonies, "but no more; I've given all that up now." The young nephew of a prominent *babalaô* said, "All this low stuff ought to be done away with. It's a sign of a very backward people. It has even disappeared in Africa. The English came into Lagos and brought modern civilization. Only in Bahia do these old customs hang on."

794 178 578 Indicative of the disintegrating state of the fetish world is the continuous and, at times, acute jealousy among the leaders and members of its more orthodox centers. In a given *seita* one hears much critical gossip regarding the practices of some other center. It is accused of forsaking the "true" African tradition and of inadequately interpreting mystical experiences. As the number of *Africanos* decreases, competition between the *seitas* for their allegiance is naturally increasing.

794 829 793 554 Among the Negroes who still identify themselves with the cult, the past tends to be romanticized, and the prestige of the "old Africans," like Bambuxê, Adeta, Iyalode Erelu, and others, to be constantly enhanced. Similarly, the prestige of the older cult figures who are still living—the *babalaô* Martiniano, *mãe de santo* Anninha,[11] and the aged Maria Bádá,

---

793 766 [11] Since this was written, *mãe de santo* Anninha has died. Of her funeral, the *Estado da Bahia* (January 5, 1938) said: "The crowd of people who accompanied the body to Quinta dos Lazaros Cemetery was one of the largest ever seen in Bahia and recalls the funeral for Pae Adão in Recife. More than

794

793

all of whom represent the African tradition in its "purest" form—is, throughout the fetish world, very great.[14] 829 554

---

two thousand persons were present, including members of the Irmandade of Rosario Church, dressed in their robes. The coffin, which was, in keeping with Anninha's request, quite modest, had over it the robe she had worn as a member of this Irmandade of which she was so proud, and was carried on the shoulders of the Brothers of Nossa Senhora do Rosario and of São Benedicto. The crowd of mourners blocked traffic in Rua Dr. Seabra for more than half an hour. Some *filhas de santo* wept unceasingly. Others related the virtues of the kind Anninha. 793 766

"When the coffin, carried by pious hands, entered the large gate of the cemetery, the *atabaques* broke out into African rhythms, while sad voices rose in the African songs of the *seita* to which the illustrious *mãe de santo* belonged.

"In the chapel of the cemetery, Canon Assis Curvello repeated the *encommendação*, and her body was laid away in a recently opened crypt.

"Then several orators spoke, among them Snr. Alvaro MacDowell de Oliveira in the name of the União das Seitas Afro-Brasileiras da Bahia, the journalist Edison Carneiro, and representatives of the Centro Cruz Santa do Achê de Okô Afonjá and of the Irmandade of Rosario Church. When the ceremony was over, two omnibuses carried a large number of the friends of Anninha to São Gonçalo do Retiro, where they took part in the preparatory ritual for the African funeral ceremony of Axêxê, to be held seven days after the death of the beloved leader of the *terreiro* of Achê de Okô Afonjá. This ceremony will consist of rites for the eternal peace of the dead *mãe de santo* and will be participated in by *ogans*, *filhas de santo*, *paes de santo*, and other friends of the deceased."

[14] This chapter is primarily based upon the author's personal experience as a visitor at numerous ceremonies in eighteen *seitas* at Bahia and as a participant over a period of several months as an *ogan* in the *candomblé* of Pae Procopio in Matatú. For further information see, in addition to the works of Nina Rodrigues, Arthur Ramos, Manoel Querino, and Edison Carneiro previously cited: Padre Étienne Ignace Brasil, "Le Fetichisme des negres du Brésil," *Anthropos*, III (1908), 881–904; Gonçalves Fernandes, *Xangôs do Nordeste* (Rio, 1937) and *O folklore magico do Nordeste* (Rio, 1938); João Varella, *Cosme e Damião* (Bahia, 1938); the novels *O feiticeiro* by Xavier Marques (Bahia, 1922) and *Jubiabá* by Jorge Amado (Rio, 1935); and newspaper accounts such as "Creado o conselho africano da Bahia," *Estado da Bahia*, August 4, 1937, and "No mundo cheio de mysterios dos espiritos e 'paes de santo,'" *ibid.*, May 14, 1936. 114 123 113

[P. 318 is blank]

[P. 319]

VI

THE BAHIAN RACIAL SITUATION

000

[P. 320 is blank]

1

CHAPTER XI

BLACK AND WHITE AT BAHIA

THE foregoing chapters have dealt with some of the consequences, in one part of the New World, of what has been the greatest population movement in all history, namely, the series of migrations associated with the expansion of western Europe. The Portuguese, with whom we are here particularly concerned, were in the forefront of this outward movement which now for over five centuries has been bringing European peoples and European cultures into intimate contact with native peoples and native cultures all over the habitable world. Park,[1] McKenzie,[2] and other writers have pointed out in some detail the chain of circumstances occasioned by this expansion which, in fact, has ushered in all that is peculiarly characteristic of the modern world.

The expansion of Europe is a distinct historical process. It constitutes an era of world-history which had a definite beginning and which, as Park has pointed out,[3] is now at or quite near an end. It has, therefore, a unitary character which makes it a thing that can be studied like any other natural object. Moreover, it is subject to comparison; simi-

---

[1] Robert E. Park, "Race Relations and Certain Frontiers," in *Race and Culture Contacts*, ed. E. B. Reuter (New York, 1934), pp. 57–85; and in Andrew W. Lind, *An Island Community: Ecological Succession in Hawaii* (Chicago, 1938), Introduction.

[2] R. D. McKenzie, "Industrial Expansion and the Interrelations of Peoples," in *Race and Culture Contacts*, ed. E. B. Reuter, pp. 19–33.

[3] Lind, *op. cit.*, pp. x–xi.

121 lar movements have occurred during recorded history: the Arab march across northern Africa and into the Iberian peninsula, for example, as well as the Mohammedan migrations through the passes of the Himalayas onto the plains of northern India, and the so-called "barbarian" invasions of the Roman Empire. The expansion of Europe is not a phenomenon so unique that it cannot profitably be compared with other similar incidents of human dispersion.

The foregoing chapters have been oriented with reference to this general point of view, but they dealt specifically with one locus of European settlement. They sought to explore a particular instance of racial and cultural contact and to describe it in such terms as will perhaps make it comparable with other cases of racial and cultural contact in other parts of the world.

121 *563 Peculiarly significant are the facts that, although probably more Africans were imported into Brazil as one of the consequences of Portuguese settlement than into any other region of the New World, and they at one time constituted, in such centers of concentration as Bahia, a majority of the population, the Negro as a racial unit, like the Brazilian Indian before him, is gradually, but to all appearances inevitably, disappearing. The general tendency throughout Brazilian history has been to absorb, gradually but eventually, all ethnic elements into the dominant European stock.

It is true that the mixed-bloods are increasing, but their increase appears to be at the expense of the African and not of the European. Nor is there growing up in Bahia a relatively permanent mixed racial stock, like the Macanese in China or the "Cape Coloured" in South Africa. Instead, the mixed-bloods appear to be gradually absorbing the

121

blacks, while they themselves are increasingly being incorporated into the predominantly European stock. 563*

In the development of this general tendency to amalgamate and to assimilate all ethnic minorities, the circumstances and conditions of settlement played a significant role. In Brazil, unlike in the case of the English settlement of the United States, few women, as we have seen, emigrated from Europe during the first century of colonization. Until stable conditions and a normal distribution of the sexes were achieved, cohabitation with native Indian women commonly occurred. In this way a population large enough to colonize successfully the new frontier was assured, in spite of the fact that Portugal, because of the drain upon her slender resources to enable her to conquer and hold the vast empire in the East, was unable to provide it. [175] When Thomé de Souza in 1549 set up the first permanent settlement at Bahia, he found already on the site a numerous body of mixed-blood descendants of Portuguese sailors and adventurers who for some years had been living with the Indians. As far as the limited number of females made it possible, Thomé de Souza's men took mates from among these mixed-bloods; others cohabited with pure Indian women. These interracial unions, as in Goa (India) and elsewhere throughout the Portuguese dominions in the East, were subsequently encouraged as a matter of policy by the Portuguese state. Moreover, the Catholic church "regularized them into Christian marriage," thereby lending its powerful sanction to interracial crossing and bringing parents and children within the control and discipline of the church. In other words, a tradition of intermarriage became firmly fixed in the colonial mores.

The considerable body of *mestiços* which grew up are said

4: Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

121
*563

to have been better adapted to a tropical climate than their Portuguese fathers and thus to have materially aided the survival of the European stock with which they, by reason of its prestige, came largely to identify themselves and into which they were gradually absorbed.

This case of interbreeding and intermarriage during the precarious days of settlement is not unique in the history of European expansion. In fact, in those instances in which the sex ratio was out of balance, it seems to have been universal. The settlement of the United States, at least in large part, was not one of these cases. But the settlement of South Africa by the Dutch, and of India by the English, as we have noted, were accomplished under similar circumstances. In each of these cases the mixed-bloods were at first accorded the treatment and the career usually falling to the progeny of fathers whose parental sentiments do not run counter to caste sentiments laid down in the local mores. On the frontier new societies are emerging, and the mores which grow up and crystallize into fixed customs and traditions are a result of the unwitting and unplanned responses of human beings to the needs of their time and circumstance.

The similarity, however, between these three cases of European settlement—in India, South Africa, and Brazil—gradually disappeared with the subsequent development of the respective colonies. In India circumstances altered the original situation until intermixture and intermarriage came seriously to be frowned upon and eventually to lose all moral sanction. The mixed-bloods came to be despised and finally to be outcast from both parental groups. In South Africa, when Cape Colony had become fairly established and the Dutch housewives coming in from Europe had succeeded to a considerable extent in getting rid of the na-

121
563*

tive concubines, the attitude of this community also changed, until "at the present time there is probably nowhere a more grim determination to preserve the integrity of their racial stock than there is among the descendants of those first Dutch settlers and of the French Huguenot and German immigrants who followed and fused with them to form the Boer people."[4]

But in Brazil the attitudes toward intermixture and intermarriage which grew up during the colonial period in response to the exigencies of the frontier seem not to have been subsequently seriously altered. Instead, the tendency to absorb all diverse ethnic elements appears to have been a persistent character of Brazilian society throughout the four centuries of its existence and is characteristic of it today.

121
114
563*

The reasons for this deviation in Brazil are not very clear, and it continues, therefore, to be a problem. One of the difficulties in the way of its solution is the comparatively meager amount of information available on the "social history" of Brazil. Until quite recently, when such intellectuals as Gilberto Freyre became interested in digging out of the voluminous record of the past some understanding of the human relations characteristic of the colonial and imperial periods, Brazilian historians had limited their attention largely to the political, and especially to the administrative, aspects of Brazilian history. There is extant, of course, a considerable literature from the pens of foreign visitors, among whom were several able scientists, artists, and scholars like, for example, J. B. von Spix, C. F. P. von Martius, J. B. Debret, Prince Maximilian Wied-Neuwied, Maurice Rugendas, Henry W. Bates, Louis Agassiz, Richard F. Burton, Prince Adalbert, and L. F. Tollenare, which often con-

---

[4] Park, "Race Relations and Certain Frontiers," *op. cit.*, pp. 67–68.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

121
114
*563

tains pertinent observation and comment. But, unfortunately, the work of these men is almost entirely limited to the nineteenth century. The accounts which deal with an earlier period—for instance, the *Cartas* of Vilhena and of Nobrega, and the works of such able historians as Robert Southey, Heinrich Handelmann, and Francisco A. de Varnhagen—do not furnish sufficient information to resolve our problem. Voluminous records in numerous public depositories still await the careful sifting of competent scholars.

121
*563

It may be that, by the time European women had arrived in any considerable number in Bahia, miscegenation, aided by the decimation occasioned by the rigors of slavery and the introduction of European diseases, had already proceeded to the point where the Indian, as a minority group, had disappeared, or had almost disappeared, so that the problem of serious competition with Indian concubines did not present itself to the incoming Portuguese housewives.

Large numbers of Africans were, however, by this time coming in, and they continued for generations to arrive. There were at least some females among them. No intermarriage with African women, as far as we know, at first took place. Miscegenation, however, was extensive. And the mixed-bloods, as we have seen, were treated with tolerance and consideration. Numerous unions, especially with mulatto women, were subsequently entered into and were socially accepted.

It may have been that one circumstance favorable to a deviant termination of race relations in Brazil was the contact which the Portuguese, unlike the English and the Dutch, had with the Moors. From the customs and traditions of their conquerors, the Portuguese, during the several centuries of Moorish domination of the Iberian peninsula, took over at least three cultural elements whose presence in the mores of colonial Brazil may be significant for our problem: the practice of concubinage, the subordinate position of woman in the household, and the comparative absence of color consciousness. 121 563*

It may be that the Portuguese, like the Moors and other Mohammedans, were, as several commentators have said, a "color-blind" people; that is, awareness of color and other racial differences was not so pronounced with them as with us. It is probably true that the *conceptions* laid down in the culture materially influence the *perceptions* which individuals have.

Perhaps one reason the Portuguese in the New Country and their descendants cohabited with individuals from other races and interbred so extensively was that such behavior had long been common in the Old Country, where their ancestors had taken over from the Moors oriental customs tolerant of plural marriage. Even when Orientals exclude the children of concubines from the legitimate family in an attempt to preserve its status, emphasis is upon preserving status rather than purity of race.

Concubinage, or *mancebia*, as it is known in Bahia, seems to have been quite common throughout the history of Brazil. It appears always to have been more or less socially sanctioned and accepted into the mores. Divorce is illegal, and many marriages are made for family convenience. It is not rare today in Bahia for a man with a legal wife and family to keep in separate establishments one or more *amantes*.[5] The 583 595 586 581 837

---

[5] In one reported instance there are five; in another, eight. Usually the man, owing to the expense involved, is well to do; the women are from the lower strata. For instance, a wealthy and prominent intellectual figure lives most of the time apart from his legal wife with a mulatto woman who is intelligent, "attractive," and has traveled (with him) in France, Belgium,

[851] [848] custom is to some extent recognized in law.[6] Usually the children take the mother's name, but occasionally the father "recognizes" and registers them, so that they legally bear his name. They are sometimes taken into the legitimate household, where they are usually accepted without serious question by the legal wife.[7]

848 [565] [554] Particularly among the lower classes, illegitimacy is not seriously prejudicial to the child. Personal qualities and individual ability largely determine his role and status; his parentage is rather naturally considered to be a matter be-
551 yond his control. A surname is not of great importance, the given name being infinitely more used, even among the upper classes. Prominent intellectual and political figures are
000 known throughout the city by their given names. A stranger

---

[837] and Portugal. Their eldest daughter is studying to be a pianist. There are three younger children. The man also supports another mulatto woman, said to be "very young and very pretty."

[837] [671] [6] A single extra-marital amorous experience makes a woman liable to prosecution for adultery, whereas for a man such conduct must not only be proved to be habitual but also to have involved an established relationship with a *single* individual. For a wife to have cause for legal action, she must previously have been ignorant of the extra-legal affair of her husband. Otherwise, her implied acquiescence constitutes participation in guilt.

[7] One wife said of her husband's "natural" child, "He's a fine boy. I like him as much as, or more than, my own children." In 1911 an American consul at Pará wrote: "In Amazonia the father assumes all the responsibility and legally adopts his illegitimate children who, in a majority of cases, become a part of his own family, taking an equal place in social privileges with those children within the bounds of the church regulations. . . . . There is no disposition in the higher social circles to discriminate against the number of these illegitimate aristocrats who, in the matter of education, refinement and address, are often the superior of some of those born in wedlock in the same families . . . . [and are], in many prominent cases, the acknowledged leaders of society" (J. Orton Kerbey, *An American Consul in Amazonia* [New York, 1911], p. 119).

A stranger is often surprised to discover individuals whom he had not previously thought of as related turning out to be brothers or other close relatives. 602

The gradually improving status of women is today working against *mancebia*, and many of the "more scrupulous" families discourage it. In these, the wife, if she knows of her husband's affairs, may reprove him, as also may other members of the family and its friends. But usually, as an upper-class woman said, "the ladies talk very little about it, and then only with their most intimate friends. The subject is not generally discussed." 562 837 [521]

Although in recent years at least two feminists have become quite prominent, and one of these has been elected to the state legislature, the common family pattern at Bahia is still patriarchal. Tempered, of course, by the natural claims which primary relations always tend to set up, the role of the husband and father has, throughout Bahian history, been a decidedly dominant role. For instance, it is said to have formerly been the custom—at Bahia today in some instances a custom still observed—for the husband to select and purchase the materials for his wife's clothing and even indicate the manner in which the goods should be made up. Formerly, women, other than prostitutes, servants, and other individuals of inferior status, were rarely seen upon the streets or in public places, the home being considered their proper sphere. Even in the home, women seem to have rarely appeared in the presence of strangers. Tollenare, visiting Pernambuco in the early nineteenth century, wrote, "At my arrival [in the house of a merchant], the women disappeared, and only the head of the house remained in the *salão* to talk to me." In another connection he remarked: "During eight months of residence in Pernambuco I never once saw the 59 562 [635]

59

562 high society of the city in spite of my letters of introduction and my efforts to enter several homes."[8]

121 564 567 Another important question to raise is, "Why did not the structure of Brazilian slave society, like that of the United States, pass over into caste?" The situation here is somewhat more clear. The function of caste appears to be that of preserving inviolate the racial integrity of a dominant group. Caste in India apparently arose in an attempt on the part of incoming Aryan peoples to preserve the status of their families against the consequences of intermixture with the conquered aboriginal tribes.[9] The prohibition of intermarriage excluded almost completely from the more intimate social contacts individuals from groups considered undesirable.

*121 563 567 In Brazil the characteristic tendency has always been just the reverse: namely, to incorporate eventually all ethnic minorities into the dominant group. The contact of the Portuguese settlers with the imported Africans was, of course, originally that of master and slave. But out of the slave system which grew up there gradually emerged a moral order in which most whites and blacks, as we have seen, came to share a common life on an intimate, personal basis.

> Men come together ordinarily because they are useful to one another. Under these circumstances they may regard each other for a long time as mere utilities. But human beings do not live for long, like plants, in relations that are merely symbiotic. For men, unlike plants, communicate. In this way they come to know one another's minds and to be responsive to one another's attitudes and sentiments. They find themselves, eventually, living as it were, each in the mind of all his neighbors. It is in this way that a moral order grows up in which,

---

[8] L. F. Tollenare, "Notas dominicais tomadas durante uma residencia no Brasil, 1816–1818" (portion relative to Pernambuco translated by Alfredo de Carvalho from the unpublished French manuscript), *Revista do Instituto Arqueologico e Geographico Pernambucano*, No. 61 (1905), pp. 129 and 230.

[113] [9] Sir Herbert H. Risley, *The People of India* (2d ed.; Calcutta, 1915), pp. 264–65.

> 121 563 * 567 under the happiest circumstances, the individual feels himself constrained only by those obligations which he freely accepts or imposes upon himself.
>
> It is characteristic of such a moral order that it is nonrational. That means that it is not devised to protect any special interest, to serve any policy, and has no ulterior purposes of any sort. On the contrary, it arises in response to the natural claims which one individual makes upon another, as soon as he recognizes that other individual as human like himself.[10]

121 567 Manumission, as we have seen, extensively occurred from the first. And final emancipation came about as the culmination of a widespread liberation movement which had for years dominated the public mind. The Brazilian Negro was thus released from a servile status gradually and under circumstances which favored the continuance of intimate personal ties. Final emancipation was not, as in the United States, brought about as an incident of civil strife, and the race relations which had normally grown up under slavery were never exacerbated by a program of reconstruction imposed from without by armed conquest. The rise of the black and of the mixed-blood in Brazil has always had in its favor those sentiments and personal attachments which primary relations tend to develop.

121 56 In Bahia there is probably little or no race prejudice in the sense in which that term is used in the United States. There are no castes based on race; there are only classes. This does not mean that there is nothing which might be properly called prejudice but that such prejudice as does exist is *class* rather than *caste* prejudice. It is the kind of prejudice which exists *inside* the ranks of the Negro in the United States, the amount and intensity of which is actually very great.

121 563* That race prejudice has not arisen in Brazil is perhaps due

---

[10] Park, Introduction to Bertram W. Doyle, *The Etiquette of Race Relations in the South* (Chicago, 1937), pp. xiv–xv.

*121
563

to the fact that the Brazilian white has never at any time felt that the black or the mixed-blood offered any serious threat to his status. The past and present experiences of the ethnic groups have not been such as would call out in the whites feelings of fear, distrust, apprehension, dread, resentment, or envy, all of which probably enter into the attitude of race prejudice. Besides, there has not been in Brazil that obscure sense of guilt which men sometimes feel toward those they have wronged or toward those by whom they themselves have been wronged. There have been few or no incidents which the Europeans resent and tend to construe as affronts or unwarranted aggressions and attacks; no events, like those attendant on our Civil War and its aftermath, which would stir the Europeans, arouse their feelings, and give to their conception of the Negro a new meaning and
000
content. There are in Brazil no memories over which the whites brood like those which have been so strikingly called to our attention in a recent novel:

> Looking about her in that cold spring of 1866, Scarlett realized what was facing her and the whole South. . . . . The Yankees had the South prostrate. . . . . The South had been tilted as by a giant malicious hand, and those who had once ruled were now more helpless than their former slaves had ever been.
>
> Georgia was heavily garrisoned with troops and Atlanta had more than its share. The commandants of the Yankee troops in the various cities had complete power, even the power of life and death over the civilian population. . . . . They could and did imprison citizens for any cause, or no cause, seize their property, hang them. They could and did harass and hamstring them with conflicting regulations about the operation of their business, the wages they must pay their servants, what they should say in public and private utterances and what they should write in newspapers. They regulated how, when and where they must dump their garbage and they decided what songs the daughters and wives of ex-Confederates could sing, so that the singing

of "Dixie" or "Bonnie Blue Flag" became an offense only a little less serious than treason. They ruled that no one could get a letter out of the post office without taking the Iron Clad oath and, in some instances, they even prohibited the issuance of marriage licenses unless the couples had taken the hated oath.

The newspapers were so muzzled that no public protest could be raised against the injustices or depredations of the military, and individual protests were silenced with jail sentences. . . . . Trial by jury and the law of habeas corpus were practically suspended. The civil courts still functioned after a fashion but they functioned at the pleasure of the military, who could and did interfere with their verdicts. . . . .

The Negroes had not yet been given the right to vote but the North was determined that they should vote and equally determined that their vote should be friendly to the North. With this in mind, nothing was too good for the Negroes. The Yankee soldiers backed them up in anything they chose to do, and the surest way for a white person to get himself into trouble was to bring a complaint of any kind against a Negro.

The former slaves were now the lords of creation and, with the aid of the Yankees, the lowest and most ignorant ones were on top. . . . . Thousands of house servants, the highest caste in the slave population, remained with their white folks, doing manual labor which had been beneath them in the old days. Many loyal field hands also refused to avail themselves of the new freedom, but the hordes of "trashy free issue niggers," who were causing most of the trouble, were drawn largely from the field-hand class.

In slave days, these lowly blacks had been despised by the house Negroes and yard Negroes as creatures of small worth. . . . . And now this class, the lowest in the black social order, was making life a misery for the South.

. . . . . The former field hands found themselves suddenly elevated to the seats of the mighty. . . . . Like . . . . small children turned loose among treasured objects whose value is beyond their comprehension, they ran wild. . . . .

To the credit of the Negroes, including the least intelligent of them, few were actuated by malice and those few had usually been "mean niggers" even in slave days. But they were, as a class, ... easily led and from long habit accustomed to taking orders. Formerly their white masters had given the orders. Now they had a new set of masters, the Bureau and the Carpetbaggers, and their orders were: "You're just as good as any white man, so act that way. Just as soon as you can vote the Republican ticket, you are going to have the white man's property. It's as good as yours now. Take it, if you can get it!"

Dazzled by these tales, freedom became a never-ending picnic, a barbecue every day of the week, a carnival of idleness and theft and insolence. Country Negroes flocked into the cities, leaving the rural districts without labor to make the crops. Atlanta was crowded with them and still they came by the hundreds, lazy and dangerous as a result of the new doctrines being taught them. . . . .

For the first time in their lives the Negroes were able to get all the whisky they might want. . . . . Outrages were inevitable. . . . . The white people, unprotected by law, were terrorized. Men were insulted on the streets by drunken blacks, houses and barns were burned at night, horses and cattle and chickens stolen in broad daylight, crimes of all varieties were committed and few of the perpetrators were brought to justice.

But these ignominies and dangers were as nothing compared with the peril of white women, many bereft by the war of male protection, who lived alone in the outlying districts and on lonely roads. It was the large number of outrages on women and the ever-present fear for the safety of their wives and daughters that drove Southern men to cold and trembling fury. . . . .

Here was the astonishing spectacle of half a nation attempting, at the point of bayonet, to force upon the other half the rule of Negroes, many of them scarcely one generation out of the African jungles. The vote must be given to them but it must be denied to most of their former owners. The South must be kept down and disfranchisement of the whites was one way to keep the South down. Most of those who had fought for the Confederacy, held office under it or given aid and comfort to it were not allowed to vote, had no choice in the selection of their public officials and were wholly under the power of an alien rule. . . . .

Through these anxious days and nights, Scarlett was torn with fear. The ever-present menace of lawless Negroes and Yankee soldiers preyed on her mind, the danger of confiscation was constantly with

her, even in her dreams, and she dreaded worse terrors to come. 000
Depressed by the helplessness of herself and her friends, of the whole South, it was not strange that she often remembered during these days the words which Tony Fontaine had spoken so passionately:

"By God, Scarlett, it isn't to be borne! And it won't be borne!"[11]

Brazilian society nowhere passed through a comparable 121
period of social upheaval in which a threatened reversal of 56
the status structure elicited such deep-seated fear and apprehension that generations later it is so vividly recalled by the descendants of those who lived through it. The rape of white women by colored men, either real or fancied, has been unknown in Brazil. There has not been anything remotely comparable to the conquest of our South by northern armies, the imposition, for years, of onerous political control from without, and the consequent development of feelings of resentment and bitterness which, lacking normal expression (by reason of the North's formidable power), in the form of effective aggression toward the actual offending object, became displaced upon the more or less helpless Negro when northern force was withdrawn. On the contrary, the relations between the races in Brazil have always been, to a considerable extent, intimate and cordial.
The moral order of the Bahian *engenhos*, which, as we have 121
seen, was organized largely on a familial and personal basis, 583*
has persisted relatively undisturbed down to the present
day, and the members of the different races have, by way of [249]
personal feelings and sentiments, long identified themselves with each other, entered into each other's personal experiences, and come to appreciate their common human character. Instead of conceiving the Negro as an abstract object, the Bahian white tends to think of him as João or Maria and as being wholly human like himself.

---

[11] Margaret Mitchell, *Gone with the Wind* (New York, 1936), pp. 652–57.

*121 563 578 It is true that the Europeans at Bahia, like all groups, are ethnocentric, and individual whites share a general feeling of the superiority of their group. Many of them are adverse to the (to them) strange and bizarre behavior represented by the *candomblé* ritual and other African cultural survivals. In some minds at least these acts have taken on a disgusting and even offensive character and may have evoked deeply rooted antipathies. However, these antagonisms are directed at *cultural* rather than at *racial* variations, and they tend to disappear when the Negro, as he is now rapidly doing, gives up his identification with African cultural forms and becomes assimilated into the European world. The antipathy does not extend, therefore, to the Negro as such but rather to the *Africano*, the foreigner, he who constitutes an alien cyst in the social organism. This attitude is not greatly different from that characteristic of descendants of the first English settlers in the United States toward recent immigrants from southern and eastern Europe who for a time continue to live much to themselves and to cling tenaciously to Old World customs and traditions.

*121 563 One might note that the Brazilian case of racial contact definitely supports Faris' challenge of a popular assumption which, confusing the customary with the natural, maintains that race prejudice is instinctive and hereditary.[12] If race prejudice were organic, it obviously would appear in all cases of racial contact. If, then, we discover cases in which it does not appear, the hypothesis that race prejudice is instinctive is no longer valid.

* 563 565 [113] What we find, then, in Bahia is a multiracial class society.

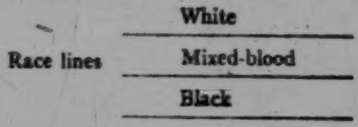
---

[12] Ellsworth Faris, "The Natural History of Race Prejudice," in *The Nature of Human Nature* (New York and London, 1937), chap. xxxii, pp. 357 ff.

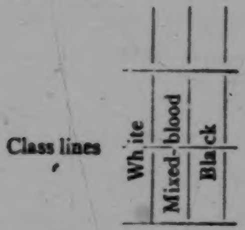
563*
565
[564]

There is no caste based upon race; there are only classes. These classes are still largely identified with color, it is true, but they are classes nonetheless and not castes. The most characteristic tendency of the Bahian social order is the gradual but persistent reduction of all distinguishing racial and cultural marks and the fusing, biologically and culturally, of the African and the European into one race and one common culture.

The actual situation in any case of race contact can perhaps be precisely defined by a diagram which distinguishes between caste and class relations.[13] In a caste system the racial lines may run thus:



In case the structure of society is organized on the basis of class, as in Brazil or Hawaii, the color lines run vertically, cutting across class lines:



7

Each race, including the mixed-bloods, is likely to be represented in all the occupational classes. The hierarchy of occupations will inevitably take the form of a pyramid, but the

---

[13] The author is indebted for this schematic arrangement to Dr. Robert E. Park.

*563

565 percentage of each racial stock in each occupational class will indicate the occupational status of the different racial elements. And since the group with superior status will have proportionately larger numbers in the upper brackets, and the groups with inferior status will have larger numbers in the lower brackets, one may describe a racial situation statistically. Thus, on the basis of a sample census recently taken, the relation to the class structure of the respective ethnic elements in the population at Bahia may be described as shown in Table 16.

[571]

TABLE 16

RACIAL DISTRIBUTION IN THE CLASSES AT BAHIA, 1936

Ethnic Groups	Intelligentsia		Marginal		Lower Class	
	No.	Per Cent	No.	Per Cent	No.	Per Cent
Blacks	5	0.4	23	5.1	1,245	75.2
Mixed-bloods	222	15.7	255	56.3	386	23.3
Whites	1,183	83.9	175	38.6	25	1.5
Total	1,410	100.0	453	100.0	1,656	100.0

*463
*563
565
One might indicate graphically the vocational distribution of the various ethnic elements at Bahia by a series of pyramids, as illustrated on the facing page.

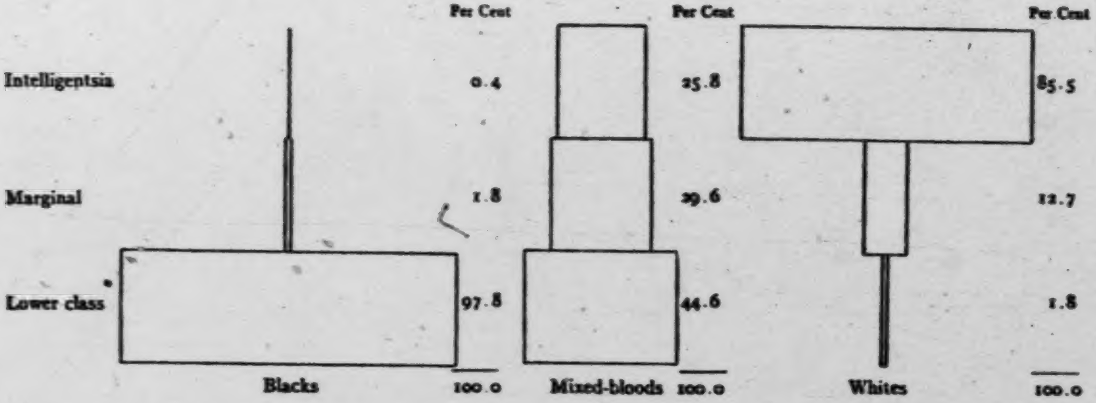
If now one were able to obtain statistics showing the extent of intermarriage between, on the one hand, members of the different racial stocks in the same occupational class and, on the other hand, between the different classes in the same racial stock, these facts should provide an accurate statistical description of what the racial situation actually is. If one finds that, as in the United States, marriages between

[TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 340]

4: Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Braziliana SOll

[P. 339]

CLASS DISTRIBUTION OF THE RACES, BAHIA, 1936



563*
565
571

*463
563
565

different occupational classes within each racial group are more frequent than intermarriage between members of the different racial groups in the same class, we should expect to find solidarity and co-operation for common ends organized along racial lines. The racial group would then assume more or less the character of a nationality or of a racial minority. On the other hand, if solidarity and co-operation were organized along class lines, then the struggle for status would take more or less the form of a class struggle.

[127] Statistical data to resolve this problem are unfortunately not available in any depository in Bahia. Such information as it was possible to secure in the course of this study indicated that marriages cross race lines more often than class lines and that solidarity and co-operation tend to be organized along class lines.

Since, then, the blacks, mixed-bloods, and whites in Bahia do not constitute endogamous occupational groupings, the social structure is not that of caste. Although the hierarchy of occupations still takes a decidedly pyramidal form, and the white race, occupying superior status, has predominantly larger numbers in the upper brackets, and the black race, representing inferior status, is overwhelmingly dominant in the lower brackets, each race and the mixed-bloods are represented in all the occupational classes.

To the extent that the blacks, mixed-bloods, and whites fall into endogamous but not necessarily occupational groupings, one might say that the structure here takes the form of a racial minority, or a nationality, in free association with, but not accepted on a basis of social equality by, a dominant racial majority. Such is the relation of the Jew in Europe and, increasingly now, of the Negro in the United States.

000 Of the latter, Park has said:

> Although caste still persists and serves in a way to regulate race relations, many things—education, the rise within the Negro community of a professional class (teachers, ministers, and physicians) and of an intelligentsia, seeking to organize and direct the Negro's rising race consciousness—have conspired not merely to undermine the traditional caste system but to render it obsolete. 000
>
> Meanwhile, the slow but steady advance of the Negro, as a result of a competition within and without the group, and the gradual rise of a Negro society within the limits of the white man's world have changed the whole structure of race relations in the United States, both in the North and in the South.
>
> The restrictions on intermarriage still persist and continue to make of the Negro an endogamous social group, in much the same sense that the Jews, the Mennonites, and any of the more primitive religious sects are endogamous. On the other hand, in view of the fact that he has developed a society in which all the professions and many, if not most, occupations are represented, the Negro has an opportunity now, which he did not have earlier, to rise within the limits of the Negro world. Under those circumstances the Negro group has gradually ceased to exhibit the characteristics of a caste and has assumed rather the character of a racial or national minority.[14]

With the Negro in Brazil endogamy is far from absolute, 563 *
breaking down particularly along the biological borders of 565
the race, probably increasingly, with the passage of time and the continued rise of individuals from the inferior status group. The scale of race distinctions, including the Negro at the bottom and the white at the top, seems to correspond in a general way to the scale of color distinctions *within the Negro minority* in the United States.

Although color and negroid features are still indicative of [142]
slave origin and still tend to be closely identified with low status and hence to constitute a considerable handicap to marriage into the upper classes, these characteristics lose their limiting and restrictive character in proportion as the

---

[14] Introduction to Doyle, *op. cit.*, pp. xxi–xxii.

4: Pierson Z-4,5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SL1
East Brazil SN1

* BB
563
565

[142] degree of European intermixture increases or their symbolic
* BB reference is called into question by evidence of status-en-
563 hancing qualities in a given individual. Similarly, personal
565 competence or individual achievement admit persons pos-
555 sessing considerable color into such status-symbolizing in-
stitutions as exclusive clubs. Race consciousness is at a min-
imum, "passing" has no point, and the circumstances are not
ordinarily conducive to the appearance of the "marginal
man." The organization of society tends to take the form of
a competitive order in which the individual finds his place
B on the basis of personal competence rather than of racial
BB descent.

* 563 The racial situation at Bahia probably is, in a general
B way, typical of all Brazil. At the same time a consid-
[167] erable immigration of Europeans during the past century
[177] into the southern Brazilian states, especially São Paulo,
Santa Catharina, and Rio Grande do Sul, and the gradual
development of an industrial society in São Paulo, may have
modified somewhat the attitudes formerly prevailing in
these areas. A Bahian mixed-blood recently returned from Rio
Grande do Sul with the statement that he had there been re-
ferred to as a "Negro" and had otherwise felt uncomfortable
EB distinctions to which in Bahia he had been unaccustomed.
563 That there is some prejudice in the cosmopolitan city of Rio
575 de Janeiro is attested by the organization in 1935 of O Movi-
[175] mento Brasileiro Contra o Preconceito Racial ("The Bra-
zilian Movement against Race Prejudice"), sponsored by
EB the prominent intellectuals, Arthur Ramos and Roquette
[175] Pinto. In São Paulo, the organization in 1924 of a Ne-
gro journal, *O Clarim d'Alvorada*, and later of others like *A
[204] Chibata*, *Cultura*, *O Clarim*, and *A Voz da Raça* ("The Voice
of the Race"); of several Negro clubs for recreational and

EB 563

literary purposes like the Club 15 de Novembro, Club 13 de 575
Maio, Gremio Dramatus e Recreativo Kosmos, and the Gre- [175]
mio União da Mocidade; of the Negro women's organization, [204]
Centro Civico Palmares; and, in 1931, of the Frente Negra
Brasileira[15] ("Brazilian Negro Front") with the aim of
"bringing together the Negroes of all Brazil," clearly indicates at least some race consciousness on the part of the
Negroes of São Paulo and consequently reflects feelings of
exclusion and discrimination; as also do the subsequently
organized Associação dos Brasileiros de Côr in Santos and
the Frente Negra Pelotense in Pelotas, Rio Grande do Sul.[16] BB

However, these indications of a measure of race con- 563 *
sciousness are probably exceptions to the general Brazilian 575
cultural pattern and not typical of it. Organizers for the EB
Frente Negra do Brasil, after several weeks of fruitless ef- [575]
fort, gave up an attempt to organize a chapter at Bahia. BB
The fact that noted intellectuals band together to resist atti- 571
tudes prejudicial to racial minorities is in itself an evidence 563*
of the racial ideology which we have noted. That these intellectuals are not atypical persons is attested by the general
tenor of the spontaneous utterances, as well as formal re- EB
marks, of numerous Brazilians. It may be that Bahia, by 563
reason of long being a passive cultural area in comparison BB
to the more active cultural areas of the South, is more char- 563*
acteristically representative of the original Brazilian mores
than São Paulo and certain other southern zones. But even EB
in São Paulo the journals referred to above have one by one [204]
suspended publication, a fact which would seem to indicate

---

[15] With the advent of the new regime in November, 1937, the political activities of the Frente Negra Brasileira were suppressed. Its social and educational program, however, was continued and the name changed to União Negra Brasileira.

[16] See Arthur Ramos, *The Negro in Brazil* (Washington, 1939), pp. 168-74.

EB 563

*BB 563 [204] EB 563 565

no great amount of race consciousness. The study of intermarriage made in São Paulo by Dr. Lowrie[17] would appear merely to confirm the fact that in Brazil still today the Negro in most cases lacks class. At least it is true that several individuals with some colored blood occupy important positions in the Paulista community or have married into white families.

B *563

The race problem in Brazil, in so far as there is a race problem, tends rather to be a consequence of the resistance which an ethnic group offers, or is thought to offer, to absorption. Recent opposition to Japanese immigration into São Paulo apparently has been largely motivated by apprehension that the Japanese would constitute a group difficult to assimilate.[18] In an attempt to refute this imputation, the Japanese embassy in Rio published a pamphlet entitled *Intermixture among the Japanese: The Myth That They Do Not Interbreed with Other Races*,[19] to which were appended several photographs of mixed Japanese-Brazilian families.

B *563 EB 563 B EB [113]

B *563

Of the Negroes, Brazilians ordinarily say there is no Negro problem, because the Negroes are in process of absorption and eventually will be completely incorporated. To individuals from all classes of the population this eventual amalgamation and assimilation of diverse ethnic units is a matter of pride and self-commendation.

B BB *563

In summary, one might set down in the form of hypothe-

---

[17] Samuel H. Lowrie, "Racial and National Intermarriage in a Brazilian City," *American Journal of Sociology*, XLIV, No. 5 (March, 1939), 684-707.

[18] See, e.g., "O cruzamento de japonezes com brasileiros," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio), September 17, 1935; "A infiltração japoneza," *ibid.*, October 16 and 22, 1935; "Oliveira Vianna e a immigração japoneza," *ibid.*, September 13, 1935; "Contra a imigração amarela," *ibid.*, August 11, 1935.

[19] *Cruzamento da ethnia japoneza: hypothese de que o japonez não se cruza com outra ethnia* (São Paulo, 1934).

B B B

563 *

ses for further testing what appear to be the more significant facts about the racial situation in Brazil, especially as it is related to the career of the African and his descendants.

1. Although probably more Africans were imported into Brazil than into the United States, or into any other region of the New World, the Brazilian Negro, as a racial unit, like the Brazilian Indian before him, is gradually but to all appearances inevitably disappearing, being biologically absorbed into the predominantly European population. Race mixture has gone on in an unobtrusive way over a long period of time. In few places in the world, perhaps, has the interpenetration of diverse races proceeded so continuously and on so extensive a scale.

2. There is not growing up a relatively permanent mixed racial stock, like the "Cape Coloured" of South Africa, the Macanese in China, or the Goanese in India. The Brazilian mixed-bloods are absorbing the blacks and are themselves in turn being absorbed by the predominantly European population.

3. In answer to the normal needs of a racial and cultural frontier a tradition of intermarriage arose and became firmly fixed in the colonial mores. This appears to be the natural response in all cases of racial contact where the sex ratio is out of balance.

4. Miscegenation, particularly when linked with intermarriage, resulted in bonds of sentiment between parents and offspring which hindered the arising of attitudes of prejudice and at the same time placed the mixed-bloods in a favorable position for social advancement.

B BB

[565]

5. With rise in class, intermarriage between mixed-bloods (especially those of the lighter shades) and whites became increasingly common. Thus, endogamy has for some time

B
*BB
563
565

been breaking down, particularly along the biological borders of the races, and, with the continued rise of individuals from the inferior status group, this tendency is evidently increasing. Although color and negroid features are still symbolic of slave origin, still tend to be closely identified with low status and hence to constitute an undeniable handicap to marriage into the upper classes, these physical marks lose their restraining character in proportion to the degree white intermixture increases or—what is even more important—in proportion to the degree their symbolic reference is called into question by evidence of other qualities of a status-enhancing character in a given individual.

B
BB
567
571

6. In general, slavery in Brazil, as also in the United States, was characterized by the continuous growth of intimate, personal relations between master and slave which tended gradually to humanize the institution and undermine its formal character. The Brazilian moral order became organized, to a considerable extent, on a familial and personal basis.

7. The custom of manumission became firmly intrenched in the Brazilian mores, constituting, under certain circumstances, universally expected behavior. Brazilian Negroes were thus released from a servile status gradually and under circumstances which favored the continuance of those intimate personal ties already built up.

B
BB
567

8. Emancipation sentiment in Brazil never suffered from a wave of fear like that which swept our South after the Negro uprising in Haiti and the disorders attendant on the subsequent annihilation of the Haitian whites.

9. Abolition sentiment and agitation was not limited to any one section of Brazil but, on the contrary, penetrated every community, even that of Bahia, where the institution

B
B B
567

of slavery was apparently very firmly intrenched. Thus, the "struggle for consistency" in the Brazilian mores went on *inside* each local community, where it had in its favor the intimate and personal relations of individuals who not only lived in close proximity to each other but were also bound together by ties of family, religion, and friendship.

10. Final emancipation came about as the culmination of a widespread liberation movement which for years had dominated the public mind. The release of the last slaves in bondage did not, as in the United States, occur as an incident of civil strife, nor were the race relations which have normally grown up under slavery ever exacerbated by a program of "reconstruction" imposed by armed conquest from without.

B
B B
563 *
567

11. The Brazilian white has never at any time felt that the black or the mixed-blood offered any serious threat to his own status. No feelings of fear, distrust, apprehension, dread, resentment, or envy have been stirred up, as in our South during and following the Civil War, no sense of unwarranted aggressions or attacks.

B
BB
563 *
463

12. Today, the blacks and the mixed-bloods are represented throughout the entire occupational scale, although, as is to be expected, considering the original slave status of the Negro, his relatively disadvantaged position upon receiving his liberty, and the comparatively brief time he has enjoyed a freely competitive status, the darker portion of the population is still concentrated in the low-pay, low-status employments. However, the blacks, ordinarily but not always paced by the mixed-bloods, are gradually rising in the occupational scale.

13. This rise in class of the blacks and the mixed-bloods is recognized not merely in a Negro world, as is largely true of

B
BB

563
463 similar advancement in the United States, but by all mem-
B bers of the Brazilian community.

B B 14. Since, then, the blacks, the mixed-bloods, and the
[564] whites do not constitute endogamous occupational group-
B ings, the social structure is not that of caste.

B B 15. Nor does the Negro in Brazil appear to be, as he is in
*563 the United States, developing into a self-conscious racial
B minority in free association with, but not accepted by, a
B B dominant racial majority.

[555] 16. Instead, the entire organization of society tends to take the form of a competitive order in which the individual finds his place on the basis of personal competence and individual achievement more than upon the basis of
B racial descent. This fact is perhaps best reflected in the common saying: "A rich Negro is a white man, and a poor white
B B man is a Negro."

[565] 17. The Brazilian racial situation is, then, sufficiently distinct from that in India, for example, where the social order is organized on the principle of caste, and from those in many parts of the world where a national or racial minority (or minorities) is in free association with, but not accepted by, a dominant national or racial majority, to constitute, along with the Hawaiian racial situation and certain others, a distinct type: *a multiracial class society.*

18. There is no deliberate segregation as one finds where races have been embittered for a long time; spatial distribution is largely the consequence of economic sifting. Such isolation as exists is largely due to varying educational levels or to identification with elements of African culture, particu-
B B larly the fetish cult.

*563 19. For the assimilation of the *Africanos* at Bahia, while now far advanced, is not yet complete. African survivals still

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11

BRAZIL SL1

B B
563*

persist, setting apart to some extent a (comparatively small) portion of the black population.

B
B B
563*

20. Lynching and the rape of white women by colored men are both unknown, "passing" has no point, and circumstances are not ordinarily conducive to the appearance of the "marginal man."

[578]
[684]

B
B B
[826]

21. One drop of African blood does not, as in the United States (if known), class a mixed-blood as a Negro. Instead, many individuals are listed in the official statistics as whites, and are similarly known in the community, who not only have African ancestors but actually give some evidence of this descent in their color and features.

B
B B
563*
565

22. Prejudice exists in Brazil; but it is *class* rather than *race* prejudice. It is the kind of prejudice which one finds inside the ranks of the Negro in the United States.

23. It is possible that the Brazilian blacks and mixed-bloods, lacking as they do in most cases the sense of inferiority long characteristic of the Negro in the United States, particularly of the mixed-blood, have been less activated by personal ambition. Feeling themselves less under the necessity of demonstrating to a hostile white world their individual talents and abilities, they have not had the same incentive for social advancement and, consequently, have not, perhaps, as a group, risen in class as rapidly as has the Negro in the United States.

B
B B
563*
183

24. Although Brazil seems never to have had a formal racial policy, the traditional behavior which originally grew up and took shape under the influence of the immediate and unreflecting responses to the circumstances and conditions of colonial life gave rise to an *informal* racial policy, or racial ideology, which underlies and gives consistency to the mores, appearing only when they are challenged from without and

B
B B
* 563

183
[186]

individuals seek to rationalize and to defend their customary conduct. This ideology is perhaps best summarized in the commonly heard phrase, "We Brazilians are becoming one people."

B
B B
* 563

25. Thus, the race problem in Brazil, in so far as there is a race problem, tends to be identified with the resistance which an ethnic group offers, or is thought to offer, to absorption and assimilation.

B
B B
[555]
[565]

This is not to say that there are no social distinctions in Brazil; for such are obviously common to all societies, one thing or another serving as a basis. Neither does it mean that there is no discrimination or that the blacks and mixed-bloods are completely satisfied with their lot. But it does mean (*a*) that a man of color may, by reason of individual merit or favorable circumstance, improve his status and even achieve position in the upper levels of society and (*b*) that this position will then be with reference not merely to the darker group whose color he shares but to the total community.

[P.351]

APPENDIXES

000

GLOSSARY
SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY
SUPPLEMENTARY BIBLIOGRAPHY
INDEX TO NAMES
SUBJECT INDEX

[P. 352 is blank]

APPENDIX A

AN AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF A COLORED CITIZEN

The following autobiographical sketch was written by a man who is one of Bahia's leading colored citizens, a very dark mulatto referred to in Bahia as a *preto* or, literally, a "black":

> I was born of modest parents. My father was a white man, an educated gentleman from a family of agriculturists, or "Senhores de Engenho," in the Reconcavo near Santo Amaro. My mother was a black woman, a person of notable beauty among her race. Domingas was her name.
>
> Until I was ten years of age, I lived in Santo Amaro and its vicinity, at that time the richest area of sugar-cane cultivation in the state of Bahia. In 1865, when I was ten years old—for I was born on January 7, 1855—my father took me to Rio de Janeiro, where I finished my elementary education and prepared myself for secondary schooling in the Collegio de São Salvador, which was at that time under the direction of Monsenhor José Joaquim da Fonseca Lima, an illustrious priest, later *reitor* of the Collegio Dom Pedro II, the foremost secondary school in Brazil.
>
> I owe what I know of the Humanities to my dear Masters at the Collegio de São Salvador, whom I later joined as teacher when, in 1871, at seventeen years of age, I entered the Escola Politecnica (then Escola Central) to take a course in Civil Engineering. I had among my teachers in the Escola Central the most eminent intellectual and scientific men of that time in Brazil, including Manoel da Cunha Galvão, Americo Monteiro de Barros, João Eugenia de Lossie e Seylbits, Carneiro, Saldanha da Gama, Villa Nova Machado, André Rebouças, Joaquim Murtinho, Visconde do Rio Branco, Borgia Castro, Sousa Pitanga, and Holanda Cavalcanti, all of whom were men of great

159 importance in the field of science and some of whom were prominent in national politics.

In 1876, at twenty-one years of age, I finished my studies at the Escola Politecnica. While a student I had collaborated at the Museu Nacional (directed by Ladislau Netto, an illustrious botanist) with Orville Derby, Lacerda e Almeida, Pizarro, Rodrigues Peixoto, and Schwacke, in the scientific discussions held there and constantly attended by Emperor Dom Pedro II.

I then dedicated myself to the task of teaching in the principal *collegios* of Rio de Janeiro where I had pupils who today in the highest offices of the Brazilian government honor me with their learning and ability.

In 1878 I began my career as an engineer by serving as a member of the Comissão Hidraulica, organized at the instance of the government of Conselheiro Sinimbu for the study of ports and inland navigation and directed by the famed American engineer, Mr. W. Milnor Roberts, especially engaged for this purpose. The Commission was a large body, composed of chosen men destined to direct the future work of this nature in our country. I was invited to join the group by Senator Veriato de Medeiros. I positively did not solicit the position. The invitation was entirely spontaneous, a fact which made me feel somewhat flattered.

159 *563 I will touch here upon an incident which occurred at that time because it makes plain one of the few cases of race prejudice which are now very rare in our country. The Commission on a certain day presented itself to the Minister to hear him explain the point of view of the government in creating the Commission. I was present, as were all of my colleagues. On the following day the *Diario Official* published a report in which all the engineers were presumably mentioned. However, my name, for some reason of which I was then ignorant, did not appear with the others. I was apparently omitted from a Commission which I had been invited to join. The omission was due, I later discovered, to the fact that I was the only *homen de côr* in that brilliant group and, to the mind of the official involved, this appeared very shocking (*chocante*); especially since I was to be working with American technicians who, it was said, did not appreciate the company of colored men. Hence I was excluded, and experienced for the first time the sting of prejudice. But to Senator Veriato de

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

159
563*

Medeiros, whom I sought out that night to thank for his spontaneous gesture of invitation, my elimination was not official, and he immediately took the necessary steps so that on the following day everything was straightened out. I owe to the fine courtesy of this illustrious Senator the manner in which the incident was handled, although I did not find this out until much later through a mutual friend.

Meanwhile, the charge of prejudice, which the official had sought to bring against the Americans, completely disappeared, and I had the honor of winning their friendship and esteem. This proved with the passing of the years to be very beneficial and served me well in the profession which I adopted. After two years spent studying the ports of Santos and Maceió, and investigating the navigability of the São Francisco River, we all returned to Rio de Janeiro. Mr. Roberts, our illustrious chief, on presenting his report to the Minister, thought it proper to name me among his assistants, all of whom were distinguished men, and to present, in a special chapter, a description of the work with which I had been especially charged, calling it to the attention of the Minister under the title, "The Report of Snr. Calogeras."[1] The fact was that, in addition to the routine work with which we were each charged on the Commission, I was detailed by Mr. Roberts to explore the territory between the São Francisco River and the Atlantic coast across the Chapada Diamantina, and to collect geographic and geological data, together with information on the productive capacity, population, and commerce of the region. These data were later brought together in a book and published under the title, *O Rio São Francisco e a Chapada Diamantina.* 159

From my American colleagues on the Commission I received such proof of consideration and esteem that it captivated me. Rudolf Wiezer, Roberts' assistant who had accompanied him from the United States, in writing to a friend about me, used these words of extreme flattery: ". . . . the best Brazilian engineer on Roberts' staff." Orville Derby, the eminent geologist, who in his time was considered the greatest authority in the science of geology, took me for his collaborator in the work with which we were later intrusted by the governor of the state of São Paulo.

---

[1] The name is, of course, fictitious.

In 1882, the Roberts' Commission having been disbanded, I helped extend the rail line from Bahia to the São Francisco River, it being my job to draw up plans and specifications for the steel bridges of the railway.

In 1883 I was invited by Antonio Placido Peixoto de Amarante to be his First Engineer on the Comissão de Desobstrução do Rio de São Francisco, a project which we had studied together under the direction of Roberts three years before and which it had now fallen to his lot to execute as Chief Engineer. We removed the obstruction due to the celebrated Sobradinho Falls, the greatest obstacle to navigation in the upper part of the river, and shipping was soon established between the city of Joazeiro and the Falls of Pirapora, where the navigable section of the river ends.

For a little more than three years, or until 1886, I continued with this work. Orville Derby, who had been named head of the Geographic and Geological Commission of São Paulo, then invited me to be his First Engineer, charged especially with the geodetic survey.

The province of São Paulo was at that time governed by Senator João Alfredo Correa de Oliveira, an eminent man, who had always borne in mind the problem of communication with the interior and had just turned his attention to inland navigation and especially to the possibilities of connecting São Paulo with the faraway province of Matto Grosso. With this object in mind, we began the exploration of the Paranapanema, from its source in the Serra do Mar, in Itapetininga, to its junction with the Paraná River above Sete Quedas (Seven Falls). Studying the river from the point of view of its navigability, a labor which we carried out during the dry season of 1886, we found that more than two-thirds of its course was impracticable for navigation. This river failed to afford the solution for which we were searching. The Paranapanema is a great reservoir of hydroelectric energy rather than a passage between the Paraná-Paraguay and the Atlantic coast of southern Brazil.

On returning from these studies, which had also included an investigation of the geological character of the valley by the notable geologist, Francisco de Paula Oliveira, as well as an examination of those natural conditions bearing upon the productivity of the soil, and, in addition, ethnographic and ethnological studies of the Indians still dominating the woods and the plains of the Lower Paranapanema, we

BB
159

went to Campo Largo, setting up our camp near the iron foundry of Ipanema, a location which we had chosen by reason of its natural advantages to be our first base from which to survey the province of São Paulo.

BB
159
643
B
643

We were proceeding with this measuring when a communication arrived from Colonel Mursa, director of the foundry, which surprised us greatly. His Majesty, the Emperor Dom Pedro II, the Colonel told us, had arrived there yesterday and had commanded the engineers of the Geographic and Geological Commission to present themselves before him without further delay and to bring with them their field notes and all data gathered during the exploration of the Paranapanema River, since His Majesty wished to see this information before its re-writing in the office. The order was urgent, and the Colonel advised us to go just as we were, in our field attire, since this was the wish of the Emperor.

All morning in Ipanema, Dom Pedro II examined our blueprints, measurements, notes, calculations, and drawings and inquired about the practical results of our work. He raised still other questions and objections on certain technical points, since he was a professional in this field. At luncheon he invited us all to join him at the same table, and I was given the honor of sitting in the chair at his right. During the luncheon we talked only of the studies carried out during our exploration, of the incidents of the trip, of the Indians, their customs and language. I state these details so that you may see how great was the interest of the Brazilian monarch in scientific studies, his vast erudition, his thirst for knowledge, his manifest desire for justice, and his utter lack of class or color prejudice. For Dom Pedro II was of all Brazilians most exempt from the prejudices of his time.

On taking leave of us, His Majesty desired that the studies of the Paranapanema River should be published as soon as possible.

BB
159

Our investigation of the valley of the Paranapanema, a region which in former times was under the dominion of the Tupís and Guaranís, afforded me an opportunity of studying more closely this indigenous element so important in the history of the Brazilian people and in the formation of their national character. I gathered valuable data to contribute to the body of information regarding this race and the *lingua geral* which for nearly three centuries was the language spoken in this part of Brazil.

159 While working with the Geographic and Geological Commission, with which I remained for about four years, associated with such able and renowned colleagues as Orville Derby, Gonsaga do Campos, Francisco de Paula Oliveira, Washington de Aguiar, Alberto Loefgren, and other capable assistants, I had the opportunity of surveying nearly a third of the province, from Ipanema and Campo Largo along the ridge of the Serra do Mar, or the Paranapiacaba, and the peaks of the Mantigueira and their foothills from Santos and São Paulo inland as far as the banks of the Mogy-guassu River, which flows from the highlands of Minas Geraes. Owing to the time-consuming nature of this topographic work, we were not able to map completely such a large area. However, by 1890, we had made and published several geographical charts, when I left the Commission and accepted the invitation of the illustrious Dr. Vicente de Carvalho, then *Secretario de Estado dos Negocios do Interior*, to act as Sanitary Engineer for the city of São Paulo, and to carry out a sanitation project for which I, years before, at the instance of the provincial government following the proclamation of the Republic in 1889, had drawn up plans. BB

159 B 668 567 [648] We were at that time in an era of social and political transformation, actually the greatest period of change through which the country has passed since independence. Following the war with Paraguay in 1870, Brazil had entered a notable epoch of reform and progress. This was especially evident during the ministry of Visconde do Rio Branco which brought us the law of civil marriage, the law of free birth, direct elections, as well as teaching reforms, and an extended development of the railway system of the country. Propaganda in favor of the emancipation of slaves was increasing. Those of sixty years and over were shortly freed by law, and, after a few more years of agitation, a most notable victory was achieved with the abolition of slavery without indemnification on the thirteenth of May, 1888. Eminent figures like Joaquim Nabuco, José do Patrocinio, and André Rebouças dominated the emancipation movement. The Emperor and the Princess Regent who signed the abolition decree, their ministers, João Alfredo Correa de Oliveira, and Antonio Ferreira Vianna, were the greatest figures in that glorious crusade which had gripped all Brazil. B

[643] The proclaiming of the Republic on November 15, 1889, a few months after the abolition of slavery, was facilitated by the illness of

BB

the emperor and by the fact that abolition had been decreed *without* 159
indemnification. The republican propaganda, which had been active B
since the convention of Itú, gained its victory without great effort 668
since, as it is only fair to remember, the tolerant spirit of the Emperor 567
and the simplicity of his living had contributed greatly to the develop-
ment of democratic ideas. 643

During this era of great transformation, in which the intellectuals BB
and the youth of Brazil threw themselves with enthusiasm, we were 159
all swept by the reform wave. I would not have made the Repub- 668
lic just as it was made; but I accepted it as a logical result of its his- B
torical antecedents and the democratic atmosphere then dominant in
America. 668

The province of São Paulo soon took the lead in the extensive re-
forms which the country was experiencing. Political administration,
agricultural development, immigration, all were stimulated by the
new regime. I collaborated in all this as a citizen and as a public
servant in proportion to my ability. In 1896 I was Chief Engineer BB
of Sanitation for the state of São Paulo, a service which I directed for
some years. With General Jardim and Salles de Oliveira I served on 159
the Commission which organized the Escola Politecnica of São Paulo during the governorship of Bernardino de Campos. With Antonio Pisa, Cezario Motta, Horacio de Carvalho, Conselheiro Manoel Antonio Duarte de Azevedo, and others, we founded the Instituto Historico e Geographico of São Paulo, and I directed the construction of the building which still houses it. During the celebration of the three hundredth anniversary of Padre José de Anchieta's birth, which, through the initiative of Eduardo Prado, one of our most illustrious journalists and authors, launched a literary movement, I collaborated in the famed "Conferencias Anchietanas," which were to mark an epoch in the literary life of Brazil. My liking for historical studies then led me into the examination of documents from the first years of Brazilian colonization and the publication of the results of such research as monographs or articles in magazines of a scientific character. In this way I made a modest contribution.

It was during this period that I gave my leisure time over to the study of our indigenous races. I wrote and published some observations concerning the language of the Cayuas of the Lower Paranapanema and some data on the Guayanas of São Paulo. I published

159

O tupi na geographia nacional, in which I indicated the extent to which this Indian language had influenced the place names of Brazil. I studied the Krahos of the Upper São Francisco and their linguistic connection with the Krans tribes of the valley of the Tocantins and the Araguaya.

Discontinuing, in 1903, my work with the Sanitation Service of São Paulo, I returned to Bahia the following year to make a study of the possibilities of, and to bid for, a sanitation system for the city of Bahia; and on May 19, 1905, I signed a contract to put in these improvements for the *municipio*. Four years later I had completed the portion relative to the water supply, but only a third part of the sewage system. The failure of funds then paralyzed the work, and it remained suspended for several years, until in 1929 the contract was renewed by common consent of the parties concerned. With the completion of this task, my professional activity ended. As a young man, while still a student in the *curso superior*, I had been a teacher, lecturing in Latin, English, Mathematics, History, and Philosophy; and as a civil engineer, I had now worked without interruption for forty-eight years. I was never unemployed, and I early attained the highest rank in my profession.

Among literary and scientific studies which I have published, I might note: [Here follows a list of nineteen books or articles published in Brazilian literary and scientific publications, followed by the statement: "Various articles and lectures published in the *Revistas* of the Instituto Historico e Geographico de São Paulo, the Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia, and the Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro de Rio de Janeiro."]

I had the honor of being chosen by my fellow-citizens of Bahia as their representative in the federal *camara* to replace Dr. Octavio Mangabeira, who had been named minister of foreign relations in the government of President Washington Luis. Not having been a militant politician, I was surprised at this choice which honored me so greatly. I continued in this office until the end of the session in 1929.

From the scientific and literary institutions of the country I have received the following spontaneous proofs of their appreciation: I am a member *effectivo de honra* of the Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro; an active member of the Instituto Historico of São Paulo; president of the Instituto Historico of Bahia; corresponding member of the Instituto Historico of Minas Geraes; corresponding member of the Instituto Archeologico e Geographico Pernambucano; corresponding member of the Instituto Historico of Rio Grande do Norte; corresponding member of the Instituto of Ceará; member of the Instituto Historico of Sergipe; member of the Clube de Engenharia of Rio de Janeiro; charter member of the Sociedade Capistrano de Abreu; active member of the Academia de Letras da Bahia; active member of the Instituto Politecnico da Bahia.

I here end these autobiographical notes which are, I realize, somewhat deficient, since at my age [eight-one years] memory cannot be very faithful, and I fear it has failed me many times. These lapses of memory, however, have led me rather to understate than to exaggerate the honors which have been paid my modest talents and achievements.

APPENDIX B

* 563

COMMON SAYINGS REGARDING THE NEGRO

The following common sayings regarding the Negro probably date from the early years of the slave epoch. They are employed today more as interesting anecdotes of a former time than as characterizations of living individuals. They thus possess more the character of cultural survivals which are gradually disappearing than of racial myths actively functioning to maintain current racial inequalities or a caste order. Ordinarily, they are not thought of when individuals from the different races meet face to face. They are always uttered with a smile which seems to give them a character similar, for instance, to jokes about the Ford car which were so current in the United States in the 1920's or to humorous comments on the Irish, Scotch, or Swedes. Some of them are:

*563 539 Negroes aren't born; they just appear.

Negroes don't marry; they just live together.

Negroes don't sleep; they just take naps.

Negroes don't eat; they bolt their food.

Negroes don't look at you; they only glance at you out of the corners of their eyes.

Negroes don't dance; they "samba."

Negroes don't take a bath; they just wet themselves.

Negroes don't dry themselves; they just shake the water off.

Negroes don't comb their hair; they curry it.

A Negro woman doesn't give birth to a child; she just "pops it out."

A Negro with gloves on is a sign of rain.

A Negro dressed in white is a fly in milk.[1]

---

[1] That is, "he looks out of place," a *pardo* explained.

A Negro dressed in black is a black vulture with a cape.

A Negro is a *pau de fumo.*[2]

The Negro if he doesn't soil things on entering, soils them before he leaves.

Negro, *onça's* food.

The following verses of a similar character also are recalled:

The Negro has hair
Which lard will not flatten;
The more he combs it,
The more it kinks.

A Nagô Negro when he dies
Is carried off in a banguê;[3]
His relatives say,
"The vultures have to eat."

An old Negro when he dies
Smells like a skunk;
Our Lady, don't let
That Negro into Heaven!

A Negro when he dies
Is laid out in a shirttail;
His relatives say,
"A poor man has no need of luxury."

The odor of a Negro woman
Comes from two places:
The armpit
And the heel.

If the priest is white, he says Mass;
But if he is a Negro, he only pretends to be saying it.[4]

---

[2] A piece of wood around which raw tobacco is wrapped for transport. It subsequently turns very black. [276]

[3] A crude litter used in colonial Brazil to carry the bodies of dead slaves, to transport building materials, etc. [493]

[4] An informant explained this line thus: "If he acted as if he was saying Mass, he was merely pretending, for he had not learned how to say it."

* 563
539

The Negro was born to be a dog
And to spend his life barking.

The Negro will not go to heaven,
Even though he prays,
Because his hair is kinky,
And it might stick Our Lord.

I have a pain in my chest
That goes to my heart
When I see a Negro with shoes on
And a mulatto barefoot.

Every white man comes from God,
Every mulatto is a *pimpão*,[1]
Every caboclo is a thief,
Every Negro a *feiticeiro*.

The white man is a son of God,
The mulatto is a foster-child,
The *cabra* has no relatives,
The Negro is a son of Satan.

The white man goes to heaven,
The mulatto stays on earth,
The *caboclo* goes to purgatory,
The Negro goes to hell.

The white man is a gold chain, the mulatto fine silver,
The *cabra* is a *relicario*, the Negro a leather cord.

It seems probable that the following sayings and verses arose as a form of protest from the Negro group itself:

The Negro was born just to be a lackey of the whites.
In the white's fishing, it's the Negro who pulls the net.
If the Negro doesn't want gruel, they give him gruel.
If the Negro doesn't want beans, they give him beans.

An insane white man is said to be only nervous; but an insane Negro is called a "drunk."

---

[1] A *pimpão* is one who is "sassy," provoking, "goes about with a chip on his shoulder."

The white man eats out of a plate, the mulatto where he likes, the *cabra* from a *cuia*,[6] the Negro out of an *aribe*.[7]

The white man sleeps in a bed,
The mulatto in the hall,
The *caboclo* in the parlor,
The Negro in the "privy."

Whites sleep in beds,
Mulattoes in the kitchen,
Caboclos on the *terreiro*,[8]
Negroes under the henroost.

The white man drinks champagne,
The mulatto Port wine,
The *caboclo* beer,
The Negro pig's urine.

The *chique-chique* is a thorny wood,
The *umburana* a bee's tree,
The oxen's necktie is a yoke,
The Negro's coat a beating.

The mulatto, the *cabrinha*,[9] and the Negro
Used to be able to drink;
But today only whites and mulattoes
Can swill it down all day.

You call me ugly;
I am ugly, but I am also affectionate.
The seasoning is ugly too,
But it makes a dish taste good.

[6] A *cuia* is a bowl made from half a gourd.

[7] An *aribe* is a crude clay dish.

[8] The space between the house and the servant quarters is called the *terreiro*. It may be paved with brick, or cement, but more often it is only of bare ground.

[9] Diminutive of *cabra*.

[351]

APPENDIX C

THE BOMFIM FESTIVAL

796 565 [439] Certain popular festivals, like the Sabado and Segunda Feira do Bomfim, are largely taken over and even dominated by the lower classes. Individuals from the upper circles, both white and colored, attend only in their automobiles, driving slowly back and forth along the principal streets and through the crowds, or watch the festivities from the windows and doorways of near-by houses. In the words of a local citizen, the festival of Bomfim "springs from the people themselves, who regard O Senhor do Bomfim as their patron saint. It belongs to them more than Carnival does; Carnival is more refined (*mais elevado*), more under the control of the educated, 'cultured' Bahians."

796 [368] [443] [265] [257] Preceded by exclusively religious ceremonies, the celebration begins on the third Saturday in January and continues through the following Sunday and Monday. A large part of the population attends. Formerly, it is said, all business houses closed for the festival, and a few still do, while others take only a half-holiday on Monday. The celebration opens at the Church of Bomfim, which crowns a gently sloping hill on the peninsula of Itapagipe which juts out into Todos os Santos Bay to the north of the port. Black women in *bahiana* costume sit around the edges of the crowd selling such wares as *cocada*,[1] cakes, and other confections, mangoes, peanuts, *umbús*, and *cajús*.[2] In the *adro*, or open space, in

---

[1] *Cocada* is a confection made of coconut and sugar.

[2] *Cajús* are the fruit of the cashew tree. *Umbús* are a green, smooth-skinned fruit, about the size of a small lime.

796

front of the Church of Bomfim, booths are erected, each of 443
which has been named for the patron saint of the proprietor 265
or bears an inscription like *Fé em Deus* ("Faith in God"),
Salve a Nova Aurora ("Hail to the Dawn"), or *A Bahianinha*
("Dear Little *Bahiana*"). At these booths one may pur- [262]
chase such famous Bahian dishes of African origin as *aberêm*,
carurú, *vatapá*, *efó*, and *acarajé*, as well as drinks and other
refreshments. *Kermesses*, or small booths given over to 796
games of chance similar to those of traveling "carnivals" in
the United States, bear such names as *Lua Cheia* ("Full [525]
Moon") or *Abrigo dos Filhos do Povo* ("Shelter for the Chil- [533]
dren of the People"). A brass band, composed of blacks from [368]
the fire department in uniform, plays intermittently from a
raised platform in the center of the square.

At night the entire front of the church is ablaze with electric lights. Fireworks almost constantly sputter and bang in the air. An immense crowd mills about the *adro*, while other people sit at tables, eating, drinking, talking, and watching the festivities. About two hours after midnight, the *terno* of
Os Ciganos ("the Gypsies") appears. It is a band of approxi- [534]
mately thirty people, marching two abreast, ten musicians
with brass instruments in the lead, followed by a dozen young men each of whom holds aloft a wooden staff branched at the top and lavishly decorated with paper flowers and Japanese lanterns, and an equal number of girls twelve to fourteen years old, dressed in gypsy costumes and shaking castanets and tambourines. After parading around the square, the *terno* halts in front of the church, greets the patron saint, then turns and ascends the platform vacated for this purpose by
the band. The girls dance, sing, and play their instruments [535]
while one of the men performs a frenzied dance, twirling round and round a standard bearing the name and insignia of the terno.

796 signia of the *terno*. Before sunrise, the *ternos of Batutu* from the outlying area of the city known as Alto dos Pombos, of *Gata Abafa a Banca* ("the Cat 'Steals the Show' ") from Plataforma, of *Bacalhau* ("Codfish") from Estrada da Rainha, and *Filho do Arigofe* ("Son of Arigofe") from São Miguel, also appear and perform in a similar manner. Most of the black women venders and many of the celebrants will not return to their homes during the entire three days and nights of the *festa*.

On Monday the locale of the celebration shifts to Ribeiro on the opposite side of Itapagipe. Here in a large open space along the beach people crowd in by the thousands to compose informal groups of dancers, singers, and musicians, or merely promenade. People enjoy themselves for hours at a time, groups of singers and dancers dissolving only to form into new groups composed of different individuals, amid great hilarity and constant *sambas*. *Capoeira* groups form and draw
* [563] their circles of onlookers. Almost all the actual participants are blacks or mixed-bloods; relatively few are of undiluted European blood.

GLOSSARY

(Terms identified when first introduced in the text and not used again have been omitted.)

abará: Food of African origin, consisting of bean paste, seasoned with pepper and oil of the *dend*[illegible]lm.

acaça (acassá): Afro-Brazilian drink, made by fermenting a mixture of cracked corn (or rice), sugar, and water.

acarajé: Food of African origin, consisting of a small croquette of bean paste and shrimp, seasoned with onions and pepper and fried in oil of the *dendê* palm.

achògún (axôgún): Sacred specialist who performs animal sacrifices at an Afro-Brazilian cult center; also called "second *pai-de-santo*" (first assistant to the leader of the cult).

adjá: Musical instrument, composed of a small metal bell with a long handle, which is shaken at the height of the heads of the ceremonial dancers by the leader of an Afro-Brazilian cult, to promote further the arrival of a deity during a ceremonial dance.

adro: Square or other open place in front of or to one or both sides of a church.

Africano (fem. *Africana*): 1. Person born in Africa. 2. *Candomblé* (q.v.).

agê: Musical instrument, consisting of a large gourd containing pebbles and covered with a small cotton net in whose meshes cowries have been fastened, to be shaken in the hand. Also called *piano-de-cuia*.

agôgô: Bi-tonal musical instrument, consisting of two hollow iron cones joined together, to be struck with an iron pin by the leader of an Afro-Brazilian cult ceremony, to sound the first note of each invocation to a deity and then to accompany the drums during that invocation.

alabê: Head drummer in an Afro-Brazilian cult.

ama: Nursemaid, usually (during the slave regime) a colored woman slave.

amancebado: Living in a "common-law" or other conjugal union outside official marriage. The more common term is *amasiado*.

amante: Paramour (as used here, although has other meanings).

amasiado (amaziado): Living in a "common law" or other conjugal union outside official marriage (see p. 120).

amiga: Feminine form of *amigo;* literally, "friend," but ordinarily meaning either "common-law" wife or "paramour."

anum (anu): Bird, of the Cuculidae family.

ar-do-vento: Literally, "air of the wind"; a folk "illness," presumed to be caused by a breeze or wind which produces temporary paralysis of part of the body or even coma. Also known as *estupor*.

arruda: Rue, an aromatic plant of bitter taste, with presumed magical (as well as medicinal) properties.

atabaque (tambaque): Sacred drum, employed in sets of three, of varying sizes but always of wood, in Afro-Brazilian cult ceremonies.

azeite-de-dendê: Oil of the *dendê* palm *(Elaeis guineensis)*, of African origin acclimated to Brazil.

babalaô: Foreteller of future events, in Afro-Brazilian cult world.

babalôrixá (babá): Leader (male) of the Afro-Brazilian cult; better known as *pai-de-santo* (see p. 208 n.).

bacharel (pl. *bachareis*): Principally, a graduate of a law school (or, more recently, of a Faculty of Philosophy, Science and Letters), but also one who has completed the course of a secondary school *(liceu, ginásio)*.

Bahiana: Literally, "a female inhabitant of Bahia." Term used more commonly to refer to colored women who wear a traditional costume (see pp. 247–48) and sell Afro-Brazilian food delicacies in the streets, as well as to refer to this costume itself.

balangandan (balangandã): Ornament formerly worn upon special occasions by the more well-to-do colored women at Bahia (see p. 246 n.).

barracão: Sacred dance pavilion where public ceremonies of an Afro-Brazilian cult are held (as used here, although has other meanings in Brazil).

bátá: Long, white, loose-flowing blouse, usually of cotton but sometimes of silk, ordinarily trimmed with wide lace.

batucada: At Bahia, a group, usually composed of fifteen or twenty young men, invariably blacks or dark mixed-bloods, who parade in single file at Carnival time while playing instruments of the Afro-Brazilian cult (see p. 201).

batuque: Dance of Afro-Brazilian origin, with musical accompaniment (see pp. 100–101).

bozó: Magical means for causing harm to a person or thing (see p. 252 n); also called *feitiço*, *bruxaria*, or *negócio*.

branco (fem. *branca*): Literally, "white." Reflects, however, circumstances not only of color but also of status, as well as the personal relationship, at the time, of the speaker to the person referred to.

branco-da-Bahia: See Introduction to this edition.

branqueado: Literally, "whitened"; that is nearly white.

búzios: Cowries, or small, ivory-colored, glossy shells of a mollusk found on the shores of the Indian ocean and used for money in parts of Africa and Asia. Worn by some women specialists of the Afro-Brazilian cult, and also used when foretelling future events.

caboclo: Amerindian (as used here, although has other racial or cultural meanings in Brazil).

cabra: Mixed-blood, one of whose parents is of African descent and the other an European-African half-breed (as used here, although has other meanings).

cachaça: Popular term for aguardente, or Brazilian rum; also known as *pinga*, and by at least some 126 other names, in different parts of Brazil.

cafuzo (cafuso): Amerindian-African mixed-blood.

câmara: Legislative body.

camarinha: Sacred room in which prospective sacred dancers of the Afro-Brazilian cult are interned during their period of training and initiation.

candomblé: Afro-Brazilian cult as known at Bahia (see Chap. X); called *xangô*, in Recife; *catimbó*, in certain other parts of northeast Brazil; and *macumba*, in Rio de Janeiro.

candomblé caboclo: Folk cult whose ritual, ceremony and belief are extensively, or even predominantly, of Amerindian origin.

canzá (canzuá, ganzuá): Afro-Brazilian cult center; term is a corruption, and generalization, of "Gantois," the name of one cult center at Bahia (see p. 300).

capitania: Huge land grant and administrative unit in colonial Brazil, which subsequently became a Province and, after the founding of the Republic, a State.

capitão (pl. *capitães*)*-do-mato* (formerly written, *matto*): "Bush-captain," hired to track down, capture and return fugitive slaves.

capitão-mor: Administrative head of a capitania (q.v.).

capoeira: A complex form of personal combat, originally developed by fugitives slaves, and now enjoyed, in simulated form, as a sport (see pp. 250–51).

carregador: Porter, baggageman, packer, loader.

carroceiro: Wagoner, cartman.

caruru: Food of African origin, consisting of okra, fish, shrimp, and other ingredients, seasoned with oil of the *dendê* palm and pepper. Considered to be a special delicacy of the Afro-Brazilian deities, the *Begi* (Cosme and Damião).

casa-de-candomblé: Afro-Brazilian cult center.

caxixi: Musical instrument, consisting of a small reed pouch containing pebbles or cowries, to be shaken in the hand.

cobrador: Collector of fares on streetcars, buses, etc., or one who makes change for the payment of such fares (as used here, although has also a more general meaning).

colégio (formerly written, *collégio*): A secondary school (as used here, although, in different connections and at different times in Brazil, has had other meanings).

comida: Literally "food"; used here in a more special sense, to refer to the food offering made to a deity of the Afro-Brazilian cult.

consórcio: Conjugal union, either legal or outside marriage.

cordão (pl. *cordões*): Group of persons of African descent who march, dance, clap their hands and sing songs of African derivation in the streets at Carnival time (see p. 201).

da costa: "From the West Coast of Africa"; used, for example, in the phrases: *pimenta* (pepper) *da costa, pano* (cloth) *da costa, sabão* (soap) *da costa, palha* (fiber) *da costa.*

cuica: Musical instrument, composed of a hollow wooden cylinder closed at one end and having a stick covered with resin appended in the center of the drumhead which is gripped by the hand of the "player," and the hand drawn back and forth to make a muffled, pulsating sound.

despacho: Sacrificial offering, made to a deity of the Afro-Brazilian cult: for example, to Exu, at the opening of each ceremony, to propitiate him and thus avoid any prank which he might occasion and which might disturb the subsequent ceremony. Ordinarily consists of *farofa* (q.v.), with oil of the *dendê* palm, a dead chicken, coins of copper or nickel, a piece of red cloth, a candle, perhaps a rag doll. Often left at crossroads or at the foot of a *gameleira* tree.

desprêzo: Scorn, contempt.

doutor (fem. *doutora*): 1. One who has graduated from a professional school, especially of medicine or law but also of other disciplines. 2. One who has shown himself erudite in any field. 3. One with high prestige.

encomendação: A special prayer for a deceased person.

engenho: Sugar plantation in colonial Brazil, together with its primitive (but effective) mill for processing sugar cane (as used here, although has several other meanings).

estado-de-santo: Literally, "state of the saint (deity)"; that is, "possession," as experienced during an Afro-Brazilian cult ceremony, when a ceremonial dancer "receives" the "visitation" of a deity.

farofa (farófia): Manioc meal, cooked to form a mush, with butter or other fat added.

fazenda: Large rural property, in cultivation or used to raise live stock, especially cattle (as employed here, although has other meanings in Brazil).

fazendeiro: Landed proprietor, who oversees (but does no manual labor on) his rural property (*fazenda*).

feiticeiro: Practitioner of "black" magic.

feitiço: "Black" magic.

festa: Any celebration of familial, religious or popular character; corresponds to the Spanish *fiesta*.

fidalgo: Of noble lineage (as used here).

figa: A charm, made of ebony, coral, gold, silver, jade, or other substance, in the form of a closed fist with the thumb inserted between the index and middle fingers, and worn to protect one from the "evil eye."

filha-de-santo: Ceremonial dancer of an Afro-Brazilian cult, who serves as the intermediary of the deity to whom she is dedicated and who is presumed to "enter her head" during a sacred dance.

fiscal (pl. *fiscais*): One who collects fees, taxes, or other public funds, or checks on their collection (including fares) by another.

formado: Graduated from a professional school.

fubá: Meal or flour made from maize or rice.

funcionário público: Federal, state or municipal employee.

gameleira (gamelleira): Wild fig tree. In Bahia, sometimes called *pé* (tree) *de Lôko*, after the Afro-Brazilian deity whose fetish it is presumed to be.

homem (pl. *homens*) *de côr*: Man (men) of color.

irmandade: Religious brotherhood.

jacamim (jacami, jacumim): Bird of the Psophiidae family, or South American trumpeters.

macumba: The Afro-Brazilian cult as known in the area of Rio de Janeiro; occasionally, by extension, this cult in other parts of Brazil.

macumbeiro: Practitioner of "black" magic; in Bahia, more commonly called *feiticeiro*.

mãe-de-santo: Head (female) of an Afro-Brazilian cult center, responsible for the religious, moral, and temporal welfare of its adherents, and especially for the religious education of the *filhas-de-santo*, or ceremonial dancers.

mãe-preta: Literally, "black mother." Colored woman slave to whom the care of the master's children was given.

mães-d'agua: Order of female deities of the Afro-Brazilian cult presumed to inhabit bodies of water (some, fresh water, and some, salt water).

Malê: Mohammedan of African origin.

mameluco: European-Amerindian mixed-blood.

manceba: Either a "common-law" wife or a paramour; term rarely used except in erudite speech, *amiga* or *amasia* being more common.

mancebia: Conjugal union outside marriage in which there is some degree of permanency.

mato (formerly written, *matto*): "The bush," an uninhabited, usually timbered area (as used here, although has other meanings in Brazil).

mestiço: Mixed-blood.

moreno (fem. *morena*): Person of dark complexion, with dark eyes and dark hair, ordinarily (but not always) a mixed-blood (see pp. 136–38). Friendship, or other source of favorable attitudes, may lead to the term being applied to a person otherwise considered a *prêto*. When pronounced with a certain emphasis, indicates much darker color, representing an ironical reference to the common tendency to "grade up" a black friend to the *moreno* category.

mulher (pl. *mulheres*) *de côr*: Woman (women) of color.

município: Administrative sub-division of a Brazilian State, somewhat (but not completely) comparable to a county in the United States.

muxôxo: Act of pursing the lips and uttering, with the aid of the tongue, a sudden "tsk"-like sound, while the chin is pushed sharply forward and upward, the whole signifying contempt or disdain.

negro (fem. *negra, nega*): Literally, "black"; however, has had three other meanings in Brazil, two of which carry low-status connotation: 1) a slave, and 2) one who works hard (at manual labor), and the third of which, paradoxically, reflecting certain intimate personal relations during slavery, makes it a term of endearment. Seldom heard in Bahia today in any of the three earlier meanings except in conflict situations.

negro-de-ganho: Semi-independent slave, who resided away from his master's residence and arranged his own employment, usually paying the master a stated sum weekly and retaining for himself any balance remaining (see pp. 38–39).

negros novos: Literally, "new negroes"; that is, recently imported Africans.

obi (*ŏrŏbŏ*): A secred fruit (*kola*), imported from Africa for use in connection with rituals of the Afro-Brazilian cult. Thought to possess magical properties, especially in connection with oracular functions and religious sacrifice.

ôgan (*ôgã*): Male functionary of the Afro-Brazilian cult, presumed to be "selected" by the deities. His primary obligation is to assist the head of the cult, especially with finances and public relations, particularly those involving governmental authorities.

onça: *Felis uncia*, a forest cat resembling the leopard; name also popularly given in Brazil to *puma concolor* and *panthera onça*.

ôrixá (*ôrishá*): Afro-Brazilian deity; for example, Ogun, Xangô, Yemanjá (see Chap. X).

pai-de-santo (formerly spelled *pae*): Head (male) of an Afro-Brazilian cult center, responsible for the religious, moral and temporal welfare of its adherents, and especially for the religious education of the *filhas-de-santo*, or ceremonial dancers. Also called *babalôrixá;* or simply, *babá*.

pardo (fem. *parda*): Literally, "brown"; ordinarily used, however, especially in official statistics, to refer to the entire range of intermediate "colors" between black and white.

pegi: Sanctuary in which sacred fetishes of the Afro-Brazilian cult are kept.

piaçaba (*piaçava, piassava*): Fibre of certain palms, sometimes used to make brooms.

praça: Public square.

preceito: Ritualistic obligation in connection with the Afro-Brazilian cult.

prêto (fem. *preta*): Literally, "black." Reflects, however, circumstances not only of color but also of status, as well as the personal relationship, at the time, of the speaker to the person referred to.

professor catedrático: Professor at a professional school or a division of a university, who has obtained permanent tenure of a teaching post of the highest rank by means of a public examination, based upon a thesis presented.

quartinha: Clay vessel used to keep water cool by way of evaporation; also called, *quarta, moringa, moringue*.

reitor: Principal, or director, of a school.

relicário: reliquary.

rendeiro: 1. One who rents his property, usually farmland and "on shares." 2. A renter.

roça: Literally, "land from which the native vegetation has been cut away, in preparation for planting"; hence, a planted field, plot or orchard.

saia grande: Literally, "large skirt"; used especially to refer to that which is worn bouffant by many colored women at Bahia (see p. 246).

salão: Large room where guests are received and balls, concerts, etc. given (as used here).

samba: Song, or dance, of African origin, with (in rural areas) vocal accompaniment. (The dance as observed in rural areas usually differs markedly from the more sophisticated urban one.)

sandália: A leather slipper, with a low heel and no quarter.

saudade: (A difficult word to translate.) Nostalgia, longing, "pleasurable sadness," with intense emotional content. One dictionary definition: "a sad, but sweet remembrance of a person or thing far away or extinct, accompanied by an ardent desire to see or to possess it once more."

seita: Literally, "sect"; in Bahia, also refers to an Afro-Brazilian cult center.

senhor (pl. *senhores*): 1. Mister. 2. Master (of slaves). 3. (Formerly) member of the rural aristocracy, particularly as used in the phrase, *senhor de engenho* (proprietor of a sugar plantation).

senzala: Slave quarters.

sertão: A predominantly virgin, unsettled area, interior from an important settlement (which ordinarily is located on, or near, the seacoast). Term sometimes translated as "backlands."

termo: A judicial unit, a subdivision of a *comarca* (section of a state judicial system), presided over by a *juiz-de-direito.*

terreiro: 1. Space, ordinarily kept swept bare, immediately around a rural house. 2. Grounds of an Afro-Brazilian cult center; and, by inclusion, 3. The cult center itself.

torço (*torso*): Turban, of silk or cotton, worn by the *Bahianas* (q.v.).

um pouco da raça: Literally, "a little of the race"; that is, "of some African descent."

urtiga: Any one of a number of species of nettles.

velha: Feminine form of *velho*: old.

104

vestimenta bahiana: Characteristic costume worn by many Bahian colored women, especially those closely identified with the Afro-Brazilian cult (see p. 246).

xaque-xaque: Musical instrument, composed of a hollow metal shell in the form of a dumbbell in each of whose extremities pebbles have been placed. Term is onomatopoetic, in imitation of the sound produced when the instrument is shaken.

yanô: An initiate of the Afro-Brazilian cult during the period she is being "prepared" to serve as a sacred dancer, or *filha-de-santo*.

SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY[1]

BAHIA

AMADO, JORGE. *Cacau*. Rio de Janeiro, 1933.

———. *Jubiabá*. Rio de Janeiro, 1935.

———. "Literatura dos negros e mulatos da Baía," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal* (São Paulo), XLVIII (June, 1938), 179–82.

———. *Suor*. 2d ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1936.

AMARAL, ALVARES DO. *Resumo chronologico da Bahia*. Bahia, n.d.

Annuario estatistico da Bahia. Published by the State of Bahia, 1934, 1936.

BOMFIM, MARTINIANO DO. "Os ministros de Xangô," *Estado da Bahia*, May 5, 1937.

BRASIL, PADRE ÉTIENNE IGNACE. "Le Fetichisme des nègres du Brésil," *Anthropos*, III (1908), 881–904.

———. "Os Malês," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, LXII, Part II (1909), 73–126.

BRITTO, EDUARDO A. DE CALDAS. "Levantes de pretos na Bahia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia*, Vol. XXIX (1903).

CALMON, PEDRO. *Historia da Bahia*. 2d ed. São Paulo, n.d.

———. *Os Malês, a insurreição das senzalas*. Rio de Janeiro, 1933.

CARNEIRO, EDISON. *Negros Bantus*. Rio de Janeiro, 1937.

———. *Religiões negras*. Rio de Janeiro, 1936.

CARVALHO, CARLOS ALBERTO DE. *Tradições e milagres do Bomfim*. Bahia, 1915.

"A cidade que Deus esqueceu," *A Tarde* (Bahia), December 9, 1935.

Compromisso da Irmandade do Senhor Bom Jesus das Necessidades e Redempção. Bahia, 1929.

COSTA, JOVENTINO SILVINO DA. *Relatorio da Sociedade Protectora dos Desvalidos, 1832–1932*. Bahia, 1934.

"Creado o Conselho Africano da Bahia," *Estado da Bahia*, August 4, 1937.

---

[1] The system of listing Brazilian names here employed is that adopted by the Bibliotheca Municipal of São Paulo.

Cunha, Euclydes da. *Os sertões.* 12th ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1933.

Cunninghame-Graham, R. B. *A Brasilian Mystic.* New York, 1925.

Darwin, Charles. *The Voyage of the Beagle.* "Harvard Classics," Vol. XXIX. New York, 1909.

"Era a mais popular 'Mãe de Santo' da Bahia," *Estado da Bahia,* January 5, 1938.

Ferreira, José Carlos. "As insurreições dos africanos na Bahia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia,* Vol. XXIX (1903).

Fonseca, Luiz Anselmo da. *A escravidão, o clero e o abolicionismo.* Bahia, 1887.

Marques, Coryphеu de Azevedo. "No mundo cheio de mysterios dos espiritos e 'paes de santos,' " *Estado da Bahia,* May 11 and 14, 1936.

Marques, Xavier. *O feiticeiro.* Bahia, 1922.

Oliveira, J. B. de Sá e. "Dois embaixadores africanos mandados a Bahia pelo Rei do Dahomé," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro,* LVI, Part I (1895), 413.

Pereira, A. Pacifico. *A tuberculose na Bahia.* Bahia, 1904.

Pinho, Wanderley de A. "O ultimo desembarque de escravos na Bahia," *Espelho,* September, 1936.

Querino, Manoel Raymundo. *A arte culinaria na Bahia.* Bahia, 1928. Republished in *Costumes africanos no Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro, 1938.

———. *A Bahia de outrora.* Bahia, 1922.

———. "A raça africana e os seus costumes na Bahia," *Annaes do Quinto Congresso Brasileiro da Geographia.* Rio de Janeiro, 1916. Republished in *Costumes africanos no Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro, 1938.

Reis, Antonio Alexandre Borges dos. *Chorographia e historia do Brasil, especialmente do Estado da Bahia.* Bahia, 1894.

Rodrigues, Nina. *Os africanos no Brasil.* São Paulo, 1932.

———. *L'Animisme fetichiste des nègres de Bahia.* Bahia, 1900. Reprinted from the original Portuguese text, with preface and notes by Arthur Ramos, under the title, *O animismo fetichista dos negros bahianos.* Rio de Janeiro, 1935.

Santos, F. Marques dos. "As balangandans," *Espelho,* April, 1936.

Silva, Ignacio Accioli de Cerqueira e. *Memorias historicas e politicas da Provincia da Bahia.* 4 vols. Bahia, 1919-33.

BRAZIL SLI

B B
113

Taunay, Affonso de E. *Na Bahia colonial, 1610–1774.* Rio de Janeiro, 1925.

———. *Na Bahia de Dom João VI.* Bahia, 1928.

Varella, João. *Na Bahia do Senhor do Bomfim.* Bahia, 1936.

———. *Da Bahia que eu vi.* Bahia, 1935.

———. *Cosme e Damião.* Bahia, 1938.

Vilhena, Luiz dos Santos. *Cartas.* Edited and annotated by Braz do Amaral. 2 vols. Bahia, 1922.

BRAZIL

B
113

Abreu, J. Capistrano de. *Capitulos de historia colonial.* 3d ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1934.

Adalbert, Prince. *Travels of Prince Adalbert of Prussia.* Translated from *Aus meinem Tagebuche, 1842–1843* (Berlin, 1847), by Robert H. Schomburgk and John Edward Taylor. 2 vols. London, 1849.

Agassiz, Professor and Mrs. Louis. *A Journey in Brazil.* Boston and New York, 1888.

Amaral, Braz do. "Os grandes mercados de escravos africanos. As tribus importadas. Sua distribuição regional," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro* (Rio de Janeiro). Tomo especial do Congresso Internacional de Historia da America, V (1927), 437–96.

Andrade, Mario de. "Os Congos," *Lanterna Verde,* No. 2 (February, 1935), pp. 36–53.

———. "O samba rural paulista," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal* (São Paulo), XLI, 37–114.

Andrews, C. C. *Brazil, Its Condition and Prospects.* 2d ed. New York, 1889.

Azevedo, Aluizio de. *O mulato.* 3d ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1889.

Barros, F. Borges de. *Novos documentos para a historia colonial* Bahia, 1931.

Bates, Henry W. *The Naturalist on the River Amazons.* Reprint. London, 1892.

Bennett, Frank. *Forty Years in Brazil.* London, 1914.

Bilden, Rüdiger. "Brazil, Laboratory of Civilization," *Nation,* CXXVIII (January 16, 1929), 73.

Blake, Augusto Victorino Alves Sacramento. *Dicionario bibliographico brasileiro.* Rio de Janeiro, 1893.

Bomfim, Manoel. *O Brasil.* São Paulo, 1935.

Bryce, James, *South America.* New York, 1912.

Burton, Sir Richard F. *Explorations of the Highlands of the Brazil.* 2 vols. London, 1869.

Calmon, Pedro. *Historia social do Brasil.* 3 vols. 2d ed. São Paulo, 1937-39.

Calogeras, João Pandiá. *Formação historica do Brasil.* 3d ed. São Paulo, 1938.

———. "A politica exterior do imperio—as origens," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro.* Tomo especial do Congresso Internacional de Historia da America (1927), pp. 1-471.

Centro Nipponico de Cultura. *Cruzamento da ethnia japoneza.* São Paulo, 1934.

Claudio, Affonso. "As tribus negras importadas." *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro.* Tomo Especial, Part II (1914), pp. 597-655.

Codman, John. *Ten Months in Brazil.* Boston, 1867.

Cooper, Clayton S. *The Brazilians and Their Country.* New York, 1917.

Corvo, J. de A. *Estudos sobre as provincias ultramarinas.* 4 vols. London, 1883-87.

Costa, Francisco Augusto Pereira da. "Rei do Congo," *Jornal do Brasil* (Rio de Janeiro), August 25, 1901.

Coutinho, José Joaquim da Cunha de Azevedo. *A analyse sobre a justiça do commercio do resgate dos escravos da costa d'Africa.* Lisboa, 1791.

Couty, Louis. *L'Esclavage au Brésil.* Paris, 1881.

"O cruzamento de japonezes com brasileiros," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), September 17, 1935.

Debret, J. B. *Voyage pittoresque et historique au Brésil, 1816-1831.* 3 vols. Paris, 1835.

Denis, Pierre. *Brazil.* Translated from the French by Bernard Miall. New York, 1911.

Dent, Hastings Charles. *A Year in Brazil.* London, 1886.

Dornas Filho, João. *A escravidão no Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro, 1939.

Edschmid, Kasimir. *South America.* New York, 1932.

Elliott, L. E. *Brazil, Today and Tomorrow.* New York, 1917.

Ewbank, Thomas. *Life in Brazil.* New York, 1856.

Fernandes, Gonçalves. *O folclore magico do Nordeste.* Rio de Janeiro, 1938.

———. *Xangôs do Nordeste.* Rio de Janeiro, 1937.

Figueiredo, Fidelino de. *Estudos de historia americana.* São Paulo, n.d.

Freitas, Octavio de. *Doenças africanas no Brasil.* São Paulo, 1935.

Freyre, Gilberto. *Casa grande e senzala.* 2d ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1936.

———. (ed.). *Novos estudos afro-brasileiros.* Rio de Janeiro, 1937.

———. *Sobrados e mucambos.* São Paulo, 1936.

———. "Social Life in Brazil in the Middle of the Nineteenth Century," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, Vol. V, No. 4 (November, 1922).

Frézier, M. *Relation d'un voyage à la mer du sud.* Paris, 1716.

Gallet, Luciano. *Estudos de folclore.* Rio de Janeiro, 1934.

Garcia, Rodolfo (ed.). *Dialogos das grandezas do Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro, 1930.

Gardiner, George. *Travels in the Interior of Brazil, 1836–1841.* London, 1849.

Graham, Maria. *Journal of a Voyage to Brazil, 1821–1823.* London, 1824.

Grant, Andrew. *History of Brazil.* London, 1809.

Handelmann, Gottfried Heinrich. *Historia do Brasil.* Translation of *Geschichte von Brasilien* (Berlin, 1860) by the Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro. 2 vols. Rio de Janeiro, 1931.

Hill, Lawrence F. "The Abolition of the African Slave Trade to Brazil," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, Vol. XI, No. 2 (1931).

"A infiltração japoneza," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), October 16 and 22, 1935.

Johnston, Sir Harry H. "Slavery under the Portuguese," in *The Negro in the New World*, chap. v, pp. 77–109. London, 1910.

Keller, Albert G. "The Portuguese in Brazil," in *Colonization*, chap. iv, pp. 131–67. Boston, 1908.

113

Kerbey, J. Orton. *An American Consul in Amasonia.* New York, 1911.

Kidder, Daniel P. *Sketches of Residence and Travels in Brazil.* 2 vols. London, 1845.

Kidder, Daniel P., and Fletcher, James C. *Brazil and the Brazilians.* Philadelphia, 1857.

Koster, Henry. *Travels in Brazil, 1809 to 1815.* 2 vols. Philadelphia, 1817.

Lacerda, Jean Baptiste de. "The *Metis*, or Half-Breeds, of Brazil," in *Papers on Inter-racial Problems*, edited by G. Spiller. London, 1911.

Lane-Poole, Stanley. *The Story of the Moors in Spain.* New York and London, 1886.

Laytano, Dante de. *Os africanismos do dialeto gaucho.* Porto Alegre, 1936.

Lima, Manoel de Oliveira. *The Evolution of Brazil Compared with that of Spanish and Anglo-Saxon America.* Edited by Percy A. Martin. Stanford University, Calif., 1914.

Lindley, Thomas. *Narrative of a Voyage to Brazil.* London, 1805.

Lowrie, Samuel H. "Racial and National Intermarriage in a Brazilian City," *American Journal of Sociology*, XLIV, No. 5 (March, 1939), 684–707.

Malheiro, Agóstinho Marques Perdigão. *A escravidão no Brasil.* 3 vols. Rio de Janeiro, 1867.

Manchester, Alan K. "The Rise of the Brazilian Aristocracy," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, XI, No. 2 (May, 1931), 145–68.

Marroquim, Mario. *A lingua do Nordeste.* São Paulo, 1934.

Martin, Percy A. "Brazil." *Argentina, Brazil and Chile since Independence*, Part III: Washington, 1935.

———. "Slavery and Abolition in Brazil," *Hispanic American Historical Review*, Vol. XIII, No. 2 (May, 1933).

Mathison, Gilbert Farquhar. *Narrative of a Visit to Brazil, Chile, Peru and the Sandwich Islands, 1821–1822.* London, 1825.

Mawe, John. *Travels in the Interior of Brazil.* Philadelphia, 1816.

Mendonça, Renato. *A influencia africana no português do Brasil.* 2d ed. São Paulo, 1935.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians
BRAZIL SLI

MORAES, EVARISTO DE. *A escravidão africana no Brasil.* São Paulo, 1933.

MORAES FILHO, ALEXANDRE JOSÉ DE MELLO. *Festas e tradições populares.* Rio de Janeiro, 1888.

NABUCO, JOAQUIM. *O abolicionismo.* London, 1883.

NOBREGA, MANOEL DE. *Cartas do Brasil, 1549–1560.* Rio de Janeiro, 1886.

NORTON, HENRY K. *The Coming of South America.* New York, 1932.

"Oliveira Vianna e a immigração japoneza," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), September 13, 1935.

D'ORBIGNY, ALCIDE. *Voyage dans les deux Amériques.* Paris, 1836.

PRADO, J. F. DE ALMEIDA. *Pernambuco e as capitanias do norte do Brasil, 1530–1630.* 2 vols. São Paulo, 1939–41.

QUERINO, MANOEL RAYMUNDO. "Os homens de côr preta na historia," *Revista do Instituto Geographico e Historico da Bahia,* XLVIII (1923), 353–63.

RAYMUNDO, JACQUES. *O elemento afro-negro na lingua portuguesa.* Rio de Janeiro, 1933.

RAMOS, ARTHUR. "Castigos de escravos," *Revista do Arquivo Municipal* (São Paulo), XLVII (May, 1938), 79–104.

——. "As culturas negras na America do Sul: Brasil," *As culturas negras no novo mundo.* Part V, pp. 281–371. Rio de Janeiro, 1937.

——. *O folk-lore negro do Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro, 1935.

——. *O negro brasileiro.* Rio de Janeiro, 1934.

——. "The Negro in Brazil." Manuscript especially prepared for publication in the United States and translated by RICHARD PATTEE. Washington, 1939.

REBOUÇAS, ANTONIO PEREIRA. *Recordações da vida parlamentar.* Rio de Janeiro, 1870.

Recenseamento do Brasil: 1920, Vol. IV: *População,* Book I. Rio de Janeiro, 1922.

REGO, JOSÉ LINS DO. *Banguê.* Rio de Janeiro, 1934.

——. *Doidinho.* Rio de Janeiro, n.d.

——. *Historias da velha Totonia.* Rio de Janeiro, 1936.

——. *Menino de engenho.* 2d ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1934.

——. *Pedra Bonita.* Rio de Janeiro, 1938.

——. *Pureza.* Rio de Janeiro, 1937.

——. *Usina.* Rio de Janeiro, 1936.

113

Ribeiro, João. *Historia do Brasil.* 9th ed. Rio de Janeiro, 1920.

———. *A lingua nacional.* São Paulo, 1921.

Rocha, Padre M. Ribeiro da. *Ethiope resgatado, empenhado, sustentado, corrigido, instruido e libertado.* Lisboa, 1758.

Romero, Sylvio. "O Brasil social," *Revista do Instituto Historico e Geographico Brasileiro*, LXIX (1906), 105–79.

Roosevelt, Theodore. "Brazil and the Negro," *Outlook*, CVI (February 21, 1914), 409 ff.

Roquette-Pinto, E. (ed.). *Estudos afro-brasileiros.* Papers presented to the First Afro-Brazilian Congress (Recife, 1934). Rio de Janeiro, 1935.

Rugendas, Maurice. *Voyage pittoresque dans le Brésil.* Translated from the German by de Colbery. 3 vols. Paris, 1835.

Scott, S. P. *History of the Moorish Empire in Europe.* Philadelphia, 1904.

Sette, Mario. *Maxambombas e maracatús.* São Paulo, n.d.

Silva, Artur Lobo da. "Anthropologia do exercito brasileiro," *Archivos do Museu Nacional*, Vol. XXX. Rio de Janeiro, 1928.

Simonsen, Roberto C. "As consequencias economicas da abolição," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), May 8, 1938.

Southey, Robert. *History of Brazil.* 3 vols. London, 1810.

Spix, J. B. von, and Martius, C. F. P. von. *Travels in Brazil, 1817–1820.* Translation of *Reise in Brasilien* (3 vols.; München, 1823–31) by H. E. Lloyd. 2 vols. London, 1824.

Stephens, H. Morse. *Portugal.* New York, 1903.

Stewart, C. S. *Brazil and La Plata.* New York, 1856.

Taunay, Affonso de E. "Notas sobre as ultimas décadas do trafico," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), July 24 and 31, August 7, 1938.

———. "Numeros do trafico," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), September 30, 1936.

Taunay, Visconde de. *Homens e cousas do imperio.* São Paulo, 1924.

Tollenare, L. F. "Notas dominicais tomadas durante uma residencia no Brasil, 1816–1818" (portion relative to Pernambuco; translated by Alfredo de Carvalho from the unpublished French manuscript), *Revista do Instituto Arqueologico e Geographico Pernambucano*, No. 61, 1905.

B
113

VALLE, FLAUSINO RODRIGUES. *Elementos de folk-lore musical brasileiro.* São Paulo, 1936.

VARIOS AUTORES. *O negro no Brasil.* Papers presented to the Second Afro-Brazilian Congress (Bahia, 1937). Rio de Janeiro, 1940.

VARNHAGEN, FRANCISCO A. DE, VISCONDE DE PORTO SEGURO. *Historia geral do Brasil.* 3d complete ed. 4 vols. São Paulo, n.d.

VASCONCELLOS, SALOMÃO DE. "A escravatura africana em Minas Geraes," *Jornal do Commercio* (Rio de Janeiro), November 20, 1938.

VIANNA, F. J. OLIVEIRA. *Evolução do povo brasileiro.* 2d ed. São Paulo, 1933.

———. *Populações meridionaes do Brasil.* 3d ed. São Paulo, 1933.

———. *Raça e assimilação.* 2d ed. São Paulo, 1934.

VIEIRA, PADRE ANTONIO. *Sermões.* 15 vols. Lisboa, 1679–1748.

WALSH, R. *Notices of Brazil in 1828 and 1829.* 2 vols. London, 1830.

WELLS, JAMES W. *Three Thousand Miles through Brazil.* 2 vols. London and Philadelphia, 1886.

WIED-NEUWIED, PRINCE MAXIMILIAN. *Viagens ao Brasil, 1815–1817.* Translation of *Reise nach Brasilien in den Jahren 1815 bis 1817* (2 vols.; Frankfurt, 1820), by EDGAR SUSSEKIND DE MENDONÇA and FLÁVIO POPPE DE FIGUEIREDO. São Paulo, 1940.

WILLIAMS, MARY W. "The Treatment of Brazilian Slaves in the Brazilian Empire," *Journal of Negro History,* Vol. XV (July, 1930).

WYNDHAM, H. A. "Brazil," *The Atlantic and Slavery,* Part II, Sec. II. London: Oxford University Press, 1935.

Supplementary Bibliography

BB
113

BAHIA

Amado, Jorge
1936 *Mar morto.* São Paulo.
1962 *Gabriela, Clove and Cinnamon.* Translated from the Portuguese, *Gabriela, cravo e canela,* by James L. Taylor and William L. Grossman. New York.

Araújo, César de
1939 "Sôbre a incidência da tuberculose no prêto da Bahia," *Revista de Tisiologia da Bahia,* julho–agôsto.

4; Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

Azevedo, Thales de

1945 "Um aspeto da mestiçagem na Bahia." *RAM* (*Revista do Arquivo Municipal* [São Paulo]), CI, 45–57.

1947 Uma interpretação da Bahia," *A Tarde* (Bahia), 4 de agôsto.

1951 "A população da Bahia." in *Civilização e mestiçagem*. Bahia. pp. 49–69.

1952 "Bahia, the Negro Metropolis," *Courier* (UNESCO), V, 8–9, 14–15.

1955a *As elites de côr: um estudo de ascensão social*. São Paulo. (French edition: *Les Elites de couleur dans une ville brésilienne*. Paris, 1953.)

1955b *Povoamento da cidade do Salvador*, 2nd rev. ed. São Paulo. Especially, "Mecanismos de integração bio-social," pp. 207–13; and "Democracia racial," pp. 227–47.

1956 "Classes sociais e grupos de prestígio na Bahia," *Arquivos da Universidade da Bahia*, V, 81–90.

1959 *Ensaios de Antropologia Social*. Bahia. Especially, "Índios, brancos e prêtos no Brasil colonial," pp. 83–102; "Imagens e estereótipas raciais e nacionais," pp. 121–39; and "Comportamento verbal e efetivo para com os prêtos," pp. 141–58.

Bastide, Roger

1961 *O candomblé da Bahia*. São Paulo. Translated from the French, *Le candomblé de Bahia* (Rite Nagô), Paris, 1958, by Maria Isaura Pereira de Queiroz.

Bastide, Roger, and Pierre Verger

1953 "Contribuição ao estudo da adivinhação no Salvador, Bahia." *Revista do Museu Paulista* (São Paulo), Nova Serie, VII, 357–80.

Campos, João da Silva

1930 "Tradições bahianas," *Revisto do Institute Geagráfico e Histórico da Bahia*, LVI, 353–557.

1949 "Costumes e crenças dos afro-bahianos," *Sociologia* (São Paulo), XI, 433–49.

Cardozo, Manoel da Silveira Soares

1947 "The Lay Brotherhoods of Colonial Bahia," *The Catholic Historical Review*, XXXIII, 12–30.

Carneiro, Edison

1940 "The Structure of African Cults in Bahia," *The Journal of American Folklore*, LIII, 271–78.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

1944 "Vocabulários negros da Bahia," *RAM*, XCIX, 45–62.
196[illegible] *[illegible]ndomblés da Bahia*, 3rd ed. Rio de Janeiro.

Cerqueira, Luís
1948 *Brancos, prêtos e pardos da Bahia*. Bahia.

Costa Pinto, L. A.
1958 *Recôncavo: laboratório de uma experiência humana*. Rio de Janeiro.

Couto Ferraz, Aydano de
1939 "Volta à África," *RAM*, LIV, 175–78.
1941 "Vestígios de um culto dahomeano no Brasil," *RAM*, LXXVI, 271–74.

Cunha, Euclydes da
1944 *Rebellion in the Backlands*. Translated from the Portuguese, *Os sertões*, by Samuel Putnam. Chicago.

Duarte, Nestor
1941 "A distribuição espacial de classes e raças no Bahia," *A Tarde*, 6 de junho. Reprinted, *RAM*, LXXVII, 170–72.

Frazier, E. Franklin
1942 "The Negro Family in Bahia, Brazil," *American Sociological Review*, VII, 465–78.

Freyre, Gilberto
1941 "Sobrados e mucambos na Bahia," *Correio da Manhã* (Rio de Janeiro), 25 de maio. Reprinted, *RAM*, LXXVII, 172–73.

Ginsberg, Aniela Meyer
1947 "Escolha de companheiro de carteira," *Psyke* (Rio de Janeiro), III.

Harris, Marvin
1956 *Town and Country in Brazil*. New York.
1963 "Race Relations in Minas Velhas, A Community in the Mountain Region of Central Brazil," in *Race and Class in Rural Brazil*, Charles Wagley, ed., pp. 47–81.

Harris, Marvin, and Conrad Kottak
1963 "The Structural Significance of Brazilian Categories," *Sociologia*, XXV, 203–8.

Herskovits, Melville J.
1942 "The Bahian Negro," *The Inter-American Monthly*, December, 34–35.
1943a "The Negro in Bahia, Brazil: A Problem in Method," *Ameri-*

can Sociological Review, VIII, 394–402. (Rejoinder by E. Franklin Frazier. 402–4.)

1943b "Pesquisas etnológicas na Bahia," *Publicações do Museu da Bahia*, III.

1943c "The Southernmost Outpost of New World Africanisms," *American Anthropologist*, XLV, 495–510. Portuguese translation: "Os pontos mais meridionais dos africanismos do Nôvo Mundo," *RAM*, IX (abril de 1944), 81–99.

1944 "Drums and Drummers in Afro-Brazilian Cult Life," *The Musical Quarterly*, XXX, 477–92. Portuguese translation: "Tambores e tamborileiros no culto afro-brasileiro," *Boletin Latino-Americano de Musica* (Rio de Janeiro), VI, Parte 1, 1946.

1954 "Estrutura social do candomblé afro-brasileiro," *Boletim do Instituto Joaquim Nabuco* (Recife), III.

Herskovits, Melville J. and Frances S. Herskovits

1943 "The Negroes of Brazil," *Yale Review*, XXXII, 263–79.

Herskovits, Melville J. and R. A. Waterman

1949 "Musica de culto afro-bahiano," *Revista de Estudios Musicales* (Mendoza), I, 2, 65–127.

Hutchinson, Harry W.

1952 "Shades of Color and of Meaning," *Courier*, V, 8–9, 11.

1957 *Village and Plantation Life in Northeastern Brazil*. Seattle.

1963 "Race Relations in a Rural Community of the Bahian Recôncavo," in *Race and Class in Rural Brazil*, Charles Wagley, ed., pp. 16–46.

Landes, Ruth

1940a "A Cult Matriarchate and Male Homosexuality," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, XXXV, 386–97.

1940b "Fetish Worship in Brazil," *The Journal of American Folklore*, LIII, 261–70.

1947 *The City of Women*. New York.

Lopes, Edmundo Correia

1943 "Exéquias no 'Bôgum' do Salvador," *O Mundo Português*, CIX, 559–67.

Ott, Carlos B.

1955, 1957 *Formação e evolução étnica da cidade do Salvador. O folklore bahiano*. 2 vols. Salvador.

BB
113

Peixoto, Afrânio
1916 *Minha terra e minha gente*. Rio de Janeiro.
1945 *Breviário da Bahia*. Rio de Janeiro.

Pierson, Donald
1939 "The Negro in Bahia, Brazil," *American Sociological Review*, IV, 524–33. Portuguese translation: "O negro na Bahia," *Sociologia*, III (1941), 282–94.
1945 *Brancos e prêtos na Bahia*: *Estudo de contacto racial*. (Brazilian edition of this present book.) São Paulo.

Querino, Manoel
1918 *O colono prêto como fator da civilização brasileira*. Bahia. Republished in *Costumes africanos no Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro, 1938.

Sampaio, Nelson de Souza
1944 "Democracia racial," *Forum*: *Revista do Instituto da Ordem dos Advogados da Bahia*, XIX, Fasc. 21.

Souza, A. Loureiro
1949 *Bahianos ilustres*, 1564–1925. Bahia.

Tavares, Odorico
1951 *Bahia*: *Imagens da terra e do povo*. Rio de Janeiro.

Tourinho, Eduardo
1953 *Alma e corpo da Bahia*, 2nd ed. Rio de Janeiro.

Valadares, José
1943 "Brancos da Bahia," *Estado da Bahia*, 2 de junho.

Vianna Filho, Luís
1946 *O negro na Bahia*. Rio de Janeiro.

Wetherell, James
1860 *Brazil*: *Stray Notes from Bahia*. Liverpool.

Zimmerman, Ben
1963 "Race Relations in the Arid Sertão," in *Race and Class in Rural Brazil*, Charles Wagley, ed., pp. 82–115.

BRAZIL

B
113

Abreu Filho, Julio
1938 "A influência negra na religião brasileira," *Problemas* (São Paulo), I, 5, 28–35.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians

BRAZIL SL1

Alvarenga, Oneyda

1946 "A influência negra na música brasileira," *Boletin Latino-Americano de Musica*, VI.

Amaral, Amadeu

1918 "A literatura da escravidão," *Revista do Brasil* (São Paulo), VIII, 29, 43–60.

Amaral, Luís

1940 "O colono italiano e a libertação do negro," *Anais do III° Congresso Sul-Riograndense de História e Geografia*, III, 1025–35.

Andrade, Mario de

1939 "Linha de côr," *Estado de São Paulo*, 29 de março.

Azevedo, Aluisio de

1926 *A Brazilian Tenement*. Translated from the Portuguese, *O cortiço*, by Harry W. Brown. New York.

Azevedo, Fernando de

1950 *Brazilian Culture: An Introduction to the Study of Culture in Brazil*. Translated from the Portuguese, *A cultura brasileira*, by Rex Crawford. New York.

Bandeira de Mello, Affonso Toledo

1927 "A escravidão—da supressão do tráfico à Lei Aurea," *Revista do Instituto Histórico e Geográfico Brasileiro*, tomo especial, III, 379–406.

1936 *O trabalho servil no Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro.

Bastide, Roger

1943a "Introdução ao estudo de alguns complexos afro-brasileiros," *RAM*, XC, 7–54.

1943b *A poesia afro-brasileiro*. São Paulo.

1945 *Imagens do nordeste místico em branco e prêto*. Rio de Janeiro.

1946 "Contribuição ao estudo do sincretismo católico-fetichista," *Boletim da FFCL* (Faculdade de Filosofia, Ciências e Letras da Universidade de São Paulo), LIX, 11–43.

1952 "São Paulo: The Octopus Town," *Courier*, V, 8–9, 9.

1953 "Estereótipos de negros através da literatura brasileira," *Estudos Afro-Brasileiros*, 3rd Serie, *Boletim da FFCL*, CLIV, 9–27.

1957a *Brésil, terre des contrastes*. Paris. Portuguese translation:

Brasil: Terra de contrastes, by Maria Isaura Pereira de Queiroz. São Paulo, 1959.

1957b "Estruturas sociais e religiões afro-brasileiras," *Anhembi* (São Paulo), XXVI, 77.

1960 *Les religions africaines au Brésil*. Paris.

n.d. "A imprensa negra do Estado de São Paulo," *Boletim da FFCL*, CXXI, 50–78.

n.d. "Os suicídios em São Paulo, segundo a côr," *Boletim da FFCL*, CXXI, 1–49.

Bastide, Roger, and Florestan Fernandes

1951 *O preconceito racial em São Paulo*. Instituto de Administração da Faculdade de Ciências Econômicas e Administrativas da Universidade de São Paulo. Reprinted in *Brancos e negros em São Paulo*, pp. 321–58.

1959 *Brancos e negros em São Paulo*. Republication of five articles previously appearing in *Anhembi* and, later, in *Relações raciais entre negros e brancos em São Paulo;* plus the authors' 1951 publication and the 1957 article by Bastide and van den Berghe. 2nd rev. ed. São Paulo.

Bastide, Roger, and Florestan Fernandes, eds.

1955 *Relações raciais entre negros e brancos em São Paulo*. Republication, from *Anhembi*, of several articles by five authors. São Paulo.

Bastide, Roger, and Pierre van den Berghe

1957 "Stereotypes, Norms and Interracial Behavior in São Paulo, Brazil," *American Sociological Review*, XXII, 689–94. Portuguese translation: "Estereótipos, normas e comportamento inter-racial em São Paulo," in *Brancos e negros em São Paulo*, Roger Bastide and Florestan Fernandes, eds., pp. 359–71.

Beals, Ralph L.

1953 Section on "Brazil," in "Social Stratification in Latin America," *American Journal of Sociology*, LVIII, 327–39.

Bezerra, Felte

1948 "Um xangô de Aracajú," *Sociologia*, X, 266–71.

1950 *Étnias sergipanas*. Aracajú.

1956 "Em torno do exame das relações raciais entre brancos e negros em São Paulo," *Anhembi*, XXI, 63, 505–15.

Bicudo, Virginia Leone

1945 "Estudo de atitudes raciais de prêtos e mulatos em São Paulo." Unpublished M.A. thesis, Escola de Sociologia e Política de São Paulo.

1947 "Atitudes raciais de prêtos e mulatos em São Paulo," *Sociologia*, IX, 195–219.

1955 "Atitudes dos alunos dos grupos escolares em relação com a côr dos seus colegas," in *Relações raciais entre negros e brancos em São Paulo*, Roger Bastide and Florestan Fernandes, eds., pp. 227–310.

Boxer, C. R.

1953 "The Portuguese in the East, 1500–1800," in *Portugal and Brazil*, H. V. Livermore, ed. (London), pp. 185–247.

1962 *The Golden Age of Brazil, 1695–1750: Growing Pains of a Colonial Society*. Berkeley and Los Angeles.

1963 *Race Relations in the Portuguese Colonial Empire, 1415–1825*. Oxford.

Braithwaite, Lloyd

1959 "Comments" on "Skin Color and Social Class," by Oracy Nogueira, in *Plantation Systems of the New World*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 182–83.

Buarque de Holanda, Sérgio

1956 *Raízes do Brasil*, 3rd rev. ed. Rio de Janeiro.

Buarque de Holanda, Sérgio, ed.

1960 *História geral da civilização brasileira*. 3 vols. São Paulo. Especially, Tomo I, "A época colonial."

Bueno de Andrada, Antonio Manuel

1918 "A abolição em São Paulo," *O Estado de São Paulo*, 13 de maio. Reprinted, *RAM*, LXXVII (junho–julho, 1941), 261–72.

Cabral, Oswaldo R.

1939 "Os grupos negros em Santa Catarina," in *Laguna, e outros ensaios*. Florianópolis, chap. IV.

Calmon, Pedro

1933 "O Brasil e a imigração negra," *Jornal do Comércio*, 31 de dezembro.

1935 *História da civilização brasileira*, 2nd ed. São Paulo.

Cardoso, Fernando Henrique

1958 "O negro no Brasil meridional," *O Estado de São Paulo*, 12 de julho.

1960 "Os brancos e a ascensão social dos negros em Pôrto Alegre," *Anhembi*, XXXIX, 117, 583–96.

1962 *Capitalismo e escravidão*. São Paulo.

Cardoso, Fernando Henrique, and Octávio Ianni

1960 *Côr e mobilidade social em Florianópolis*. São Paulo.

Carneiro, Edison

1947 *O quilombo dos Palmares*, 1630–1695. São Paulo.

1950 *Antologia do negro brasileiro*. Pôrto Alegre.

1964 *Ladinos e crioulos: Estudos sôbre o negro no Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro.

Carolina Maria de Jesus

1962 *Child of the Dark*. Translated from the Portuguese, *Quarto de despejo*, by David St. Clair. New York.

Cesarino Júnior, Antonio Ferreira

1938 "A intervenção da Inglaterra na supressão do tráfico de escravos africanos para o Brasil," *RAM*, XXXIV, 145–66.

Claudio, Affonso

1927 "As três raças na sociedade colonial," *Revista do Instituto Histórico e Geográfico Brasileiro*, Tomo especial, Congresso Internacional de História da America, III, 317–78.

Costa Pinto, L. A.

1952a "Introdução ao estudo do negro no Rio de Janeiro," *Cultura* (Rio de Janeiro), III, 5, 85–102.

1952b "Rio de Janeiro, Melting-Pot of Peoples," *Courier*, V, 8–9, 10.

1953 *O negro no Rio de Janeiro*. São Paulo.

Diégues Junior, Manuel

1949 *O banguê nas Alagôas*. Rio de Janeiro.

1952 *O engenho de açúcar no Nordeste*. Rio de Janeiro.

1954 *População e açúcar no Nordeste do Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro.

1956 *Etnias e culturas no Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro.

1959 "Land Tenure and Use in the Brazilian Plantation System," in *Plantation Systems of the New World*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 104–25.

Diffie, Bailey W.

1945 "Colonial Brazil," in *Latin-American Civilization, Colonial Period*. Harrisburg, Pa., pp. 631–753.

Diniz, Almachio

1939 *História racial do Brasil*. São Paulo.

Dornas Filho, João

1938 "A influência social do negro brasileiro," *RAM*, LI, 97–134.

Duarte, Abelardo

1952 "Sobrevivência do culto da serpente (Danh-gbi) nas Alagôas," and "Sôbre o panteão afro-brasileiro," *Revista do Instituto Histórico de Alagôas* (Maceió), XXVI.

1958 *Negros muçulmanos nas Alagôas: Os malês*. Maceió.

Dunn, Ballard

1866 *Brazil, the Home for Southerners: Or, a Practical Account of What the Author, and Others, Who Visited that Country, for the Same Objects, Saw and Did in that Empire*. New York.

Edmundo, Luís

1936 *Rio in the Time of the Viceroys*. Translated from the Portuguese, *O Rio de Janeiro no tempo dos vicerëis*, by Dorothea H. Momsen. Rio de Janeiro.

Eduardo, Octávio da Costa

1946 "Three-way Religious Acculturation in a North Brazilian City" (São Luís do Maranhão). *Afroamerica* (*México*), *enero*.

1948 *The Negro in Northern Brazil: A Study in Acculturation*. Monograph No. XV. American Ethnological Society. New York.

Ericksen, Nestor

1940 *O negro no Rio Grande do Sul* (Subsídios para a história da escravidão do Brasil). Pôrto Alegre.

Estudos afro-brasileiros: Trabalhos apresentados ao Congresso Afro-Brasileiro do Recife. Rio de Janeiro, 1935.

Ferguson, J. Halcro

1961 *Latin America: The Balance of Race Redressed*. London.

Fernandes, Florestan

1960 "Prefácio," to *Côr e mobilidade social em Florianópolis* by Fernando Henrique Cardoso and Octávio Ianni, pp. xi–xxiii.

1964 *A integração do negro à sociedade de classes*. São Paulo.

Fernandes, Gonçalves

1941 *O sincretismo religioso no Brasil*. Curitiba.

Ferreira de Camargo, Candido Procópio

1961 *Kardecismo e Umbanda*. São Paulo.

Frazier, E. Franklin

1944 "A Comparison of Negro-white Relations in Brazil and in the United States," *Transactions of The New York Academy of Sciences*, II, 6, 251–69.

1960 "Introduction" to *Caribbean Studies: A Symposium*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. v–viii.

Freyre, Gilberto

1935 "O escravo nos annúncios de jornal do tempo do Império," *Lanterna Verde*, II, 7–32.

1940 *O mundo que o português criou*. Rio de Janeiro.

1946 *The Masters and the Slaves: A Study in the Development of Brazilian Civilization*. Translated from the Portuguese, *Casa grande e senzala*, 4th ed. (Rio de Janeiro, 1943) by Samuel Putnam. New York.

1955 "Slavery, Monarchy, and Modern Brazil," *Foreign Affairs*, XXXIII, 624–33.

1956 "The Brazilian Melting Pot," *The Atlantic Monthly*, CXCVII, 104–8. (Special issue on Brazil.)

1959 *New World in the Tropics: The Culture of Modern Brasil*. New York. (Revised and enlarged edition of the author's *Brazil: An Interpretation*, New York, 1945, together with portions of several previously-published articles.)

1963 *The Mansions and the Shanties*. Translated from the Portuguese, *Sobrados e mucambos*, by Harriet de Onís. New York.

Furtado, Celso

1959 *Formação econômica do Brasil*. Rio de Janeiro. English translation, *The Economic Growth of Brazil*, by Ricardo W. de Aguiar and Eric Charles Drysdale. Berkeley, 1963.

Ginsberg, Aniela Meyer

1955 "Pesquisas sôbre as atitudes de um grupo de escolares de São Paulo em relação com as crianças de côr," in *Relações racias entre negros e brancos em São Paulo*, Roger Bastide and Florestan Fernandes, eds., pp. 311–61.

4; Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Braziliana

BRAZIL S41

Girão, Raimundo
1956 *A abolição no Ceará.* Fortaleza.
Goulart, Maurício
1950 *Escravidão africana no Brasil: Das origens à extinção do tráfico*, 2nd ed. São Paulo.
Guimarães, Bernardo
1941 *A escrava Isaura*, 11th ed. Rio de Janeiro.
Harris, Marvin
1964 *Patterns of Race in the Americas.* New York.
Hill, Lawrence F.
1947 *Brazil.* Berkeley and Los Angeles.
Hilton, Ronald
1953 "Brazilian Literature," in *Portugal and Brazil*, H. V. Livermore, ed. (London), pp. 334–48.
Hirschman, Albert O.
1963 "Brazil's Nordeste," in *Journeys Toward Progress: Studies of Economic Policy-making in Latin America.* New York, pp. 13–91.
Horowitz, Irving Louis
1964 *Revolution in Brazil: Politics and Society in a Developing Nation.* New York.
IBGE (Instituto Brasileiro de Geografia e Estatística)
1950 *Estudo sôbre a composição do população do Brazil segundo a côr.* Rio de Janeiro.
Ianni, Octávio
1958 "O estudo da situação racial brasileira," *Revista Brasiliense* (São Paulo), XIX.
1962 *As metamorfoses do escravo: apogeu e crise da escravatura no Brasil meridional.* São Paulo.
Ianni, Octávio, Fernando Henrique Cardoso, and Renato Jardim Moreira
1957 "O estudo sociológico das relações entre negroes e brancos no Brasil meridional," *Anais da II^a Reunião Brasileira de Antropologia.* Bahia.
James, Preston E.
1946 *Brazil.* New York
Jurema, Aderbal
1935 *Insurreições negras no Brasil.* Recife.

Koster, Henry

1966 *Travels in Brazil*, abr. ed. Carbondale, Ill.

Laytano, Dante de

1937 "O negro e o espírito guerreiro nas origens do Rio Grande do Sul," *Revista do Instituto Histórico e Geográfico do Rio Grande do Sul*, XVII, 95–117.

1940 "Como Saint Hilaire viu o negro no Rio Grande do Sul, *Anais do III° Congresso Sulriograndense de História e Geografia*, II, 15–35.

1942 "Alguns aspectos da história do negro no Rio Grande do Sul," in *Rio Grande do Sul: Imagem da terra gaúcha*, Morency do Couto e Silva, Arthur Porto Pires and Leo Jeronimo Schridrovitz, ed. Pôrto Alegre.

1957 "O negro no Rio Grande do Sul," *Primeiro Seminário de Estudos Gaúchos* (da Universidade Católica do Rio Grande do Sul). Pôrto Alegre.

Leacock, Seth

1964 "Ceremonial Drinking in an Afro-Brazilian Cult," *American Anthropologist*, LXVI, 344–54.

Leite, Aracy Ferreira

1940 "Inquérito sôbre a posição social do negro em três municípios paulistas," *Sociologia*, II, 69–82.

Leyburn, James G.

1959 "Comments" on "Skin Color and Social Class," by Oracy Nogueira, in *Plantation Systems of the New World*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 179–82.

Lima, Jorge de

1934 *Rassenbildung und rassenpolitik in Brasilien*. Leipzig.

Lima, Vicente

1938 *Xangô*. Recife.

Lins do Rego, José

1935 *O moleque Ricardo*. Rio de Janeiro.

Lisboa, P. A. de

1847 *Notes sur la race noire et la race mulatre au Brésil*. Nouvelles Annales de Voyages, II.

Lobo, Haddock, and Irene Aloisi

1941 *O negro na vida social brasileira*. São Paulo.

Lopes, Edmundo Correia

1939 "Vestígios de África no Brasil," *O Mundo Português*, LXIII, 109–29.

Lowrie, Samuel Harman

1938a "O elemento negro na população de São Paulo," *RAM*, XLVIII, 5–56.

1938b "Origem da população da cidade de São Paulo e diferenciação das classes sociais," *RAM*, XLIII, 195–212.

Machado Filho, Aires da Mata

1939–1940 "O negro e o garimpo em Minas Gerais," *RAM*, LX (1939), 97–122; LXI (1939), 259–84; LXII (1939), 309–56; LXIII (1940), 271–98. Reprinted as a book, under the same title. Rio de Janeiro, 1964.

Marchant, Alexander

1942 *From Barter to Slavery: The Economic Relations of Portuguese and Indians in the Settlement of Brazil, 1500–1580* Baltimore.

1953 "Colonial Brazil," in *Portugal and Brazil*, H. V. Livermore, ed. (London), pp. 283–301.

Martuscelli, Carolina

1950 "Uma pesquisa sôbre aceitação de grupos nacionais, 'raciais' e regionais, em São Paulo," *Boletim da FFCL*, CXIX, 57–73.

Menezes, Djacir

1937 *O outro Nordeste*. Rio de Janeiro.

Monteiro, Duglas Teixeira

1955 "A macumba em Vitória," *Anais do XXXI° Congresso Internacional de Americanistas*. São Paulo.

Morse, Richard M.

1953 "The Negro in São Paulo, Brazil," *The Journal of Negro History*, XXXVIII, 290–306.

1958 *From Community to Metropolis: A Biography of São Paulo, Brazil*. Gainesville, Fla.

1962 "Some Themes of Brazilian History," *South Atlantic Quarterly*, LXI, 159–82.

1964a "The Heritage of Latin America," in *The Founding of New Societies*, by Louis Hartz. (New York), pp. 123–77.

1964b "Negro-white Relations in Latin America," *Reports and Speeches of the Ninth Yale Conference on the Teaching of Social Studies*, April 3–4.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians
BRAZIL SL1

Nascimento, Abdias, *et al.*
1950 *Relações de raças no Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro.
Nash, Roy
1926 *The Conquest of Brazil.* New York.
Nist, Joan Stidham
1960 "Brasil e Hawaii: Pontos de contacto," *Anhembi*, XXXIX, 117, 537–40.
Nogueira, Oracy
1942 "Atitude desfavoravel de alguns anunciantes de São Paulo em relação aos empregados de côr," *Sociologia*, IV, 328–58.
1955 "Relações raciais no Município de Itapetininga," in *Relações raciais entre negros e brancos em São Paulo*, Roger Bastide and Florestan Fernandes, eds., pp. 362–554.
1959 "Skin Color and Social Class," in *Plantation Systems of the New World*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 164–79. (English translation of revised copy of "Preconceito racial de marca e preconceito racial de origem," *Anais do XXXIº Congresso Internacional de Americanistas*, 1955.)
Oliveira Martins, J. F.
1880 *O Brasil e as colônias portuguêsas*, 3rd ed. Lisbon.
Padua, Ciro T. de
1941 "O negro em São Paulo," *RAM*, LXXVII, 201–20.
Peregrino Junior
1938 "Os mocambos do Trombetas," *Mensário*, III, 419–20.
Pereira, Nunes
1947 *A Casa das Minas: Contribuição ao estudo das sobrevivências daomeianas no Brasil.* Rio de Janeiro.
Pereira da Costa, Francisco Augusto
1891 "A ideia abolicionista em Pernambuco," *Revista do Instituto Arqueológico, Histórico e Geográfico Pernambucano*, XLII, 247–72.
Pernambucano, Ulysses
1935 "Alguns dados antropológicos da população do Recife," *Arquivos da Assistência a Psicopatas de Pernambuco*, V, 1–2.
Pernetta, Emiliano
1898 "Cruz e Sousa," *Club Curitibano*, IX, 4.
Pierson, Donald
1943 "The Educational Process and the Brazilian Negro," *American Journal of Sociology*, XLVIII, 692–700. Portuguese

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians
BRAZIL SL1

translation: "O processo educacional e o negro brasileiro," *Revista Brasileira de Estudos Pedagógicos*, III, 7 (janeiro de 1945), 7–21.

1944 "The Brazilian Racial Situation," *Scientific Monthly*, LVIII, 227–32.

1950 "Race Prejudice as Revealed in the Study of Racial Situations," *International Social Science Bulletin* (UNESCO), II, 467–78. Portuguese translation: "O preconceito racial segundo o estudo de situações raciais," *Sociologia*, XIII, 305–24.

1951 "Race Relations," in *Cruz das Almas: A Brazilian Village*. Washington: Smithsonian Institution, pp. 189–94. Portuguese translation: "Relações raciais em Cruz das Almas," *Sociologia*, XIV, 64–75.

1955 "Race Relations in Portuguese America," in *Race Relations in World Perspective*, Andrew W. Lind, ed., pp. 433–62.

Poppino, Rollie E.

1963 "Imbalance in Brazil," *Current History*, XLIV, 258, 100–105, 118.

Porto, Aurélio

1942 "O elemento africano na formação étnica do Rio Grande do Sul." *A Manhã* (Rio de Janeiro), 15 de novembro.

Prado Júnior, Caio

1945 *Formação do Brasil contemporâneo*: I. *Colônia*, 2nd ed. São Paulo. Especially, "Raças," pp. 79–110; and "Organização social," pp. 267–95.

Prado, Orlando de Almeida

n.d. *Em defesa da raça negra*. São Paulo.

Raimundo, Jacques

1936 *O negro brasileiro e outros escritos*. Rio de Janeiro.

Ramos, Arthur

1938a "O espírito associativo do negro brasileiro," *RAM*, XLVII, 105–26.

1938b "O negro e o folclore cristão do Brasil." *RAM*, XLVII, 47–78.

1941 "Contact of Races in Brazil," *Social Forces*, XIX, 533–38.

1942 *A aculturação negra no Brasil*. São Paulo.

1943 "As culturas não-européias." in *Introdução a Antropologia brasileira*. 2 vols. Rio de Janeiro.

1947 "Social Pioneering," in *Brazil*, Lawrence F. Hill, ed., pp. 125–41.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians
BRAZIL SLI

1949 "Arte negra no Brasil," *Cultura*, I, 2, 189–212.

1951 "The Negro in Brazil," in *Brazil: Portrait of Half a Continent*, T. Lynn Smith and Alexander Marchant, eds. (New York), pp. 125–46.

1952 *Le Métissage au Brésil*. Paris.

Ramos, Guerreiro

1950 "O negro no Brasil e um exame de consciência," in *Relações de raças no Brasil*, Abdias Nascimento, *et al.*

1957 *Introdução crítica à Sociologia brasileira*. Rio de Janeiro.

Raposo, Ignácio

1937 *Mestre Cuia: Contos do tempo da escravidão*. Rio de Janeiro.

Ribeiro, René

1948 "O negro em Pernambuco," *Revista do Instituto Arqueológico, Histórico e Geográfico Pernambucano*, XCII, 7–25.

1952a *Cultos afro-brasileiros do Recife: Um estudo de ajustamento social*. Número especial do *Boletim do Instituto Joaquim Nabuco* (Recife).

1952b "Significado dos estudos afro-brasileiros," *Revista do Instituto Histórico de Alagôas*, XXVI, 7–16.

1953 "Situação étnica no Nordeste," *Sociologia*, XV, 210–59.

1954 "Xangôs," *Boletim do Instituto Joaquim Nabuco*, III.

1956 *Religião e relações raciais*. Rio de Janeiro.

Ricardo, Cassiano

1938 "O negro no bandeirismo paulista," *RAM*, XLVII, 5–46.

Rio, João do (João Paulo Coelho Barreto)

1906 *As religiões no Rio*. Rio and Paris. Especially, "No mundo dos feiticeiros"; "O feitiço"; "A casa das almas"; and "Os novos feitiços de Sanin."

Rubin, Vera, ed.

1959 *Plantation Systems of the New World: Papers and Discussion Summaries of the Seminar Held in San Juan, Puerto Rico*. Pan American Union Social Science Monographs No. VII. Washington, D.C.

1960 *Caribbean Studies: A Symposium*, 2nd ed. Seattle.

Saldanha, P.H.

1962 "Race Mixture Among Northeastern Brazilian Populations," *American Anthropologist*, LXIV, 751–59.

Santana, Edgard T.

1951 *Relações entre prêtos e brancos em São Paulo*. São Paulo.

Sayers, Raymond S.
1956 *The Negro in Brazilian Literature.* New York. Portuguese translation, *O negro na literatura brasileira,* by Antonio Houaiss, Rio de Janeiro, 1958.
Schurz, William Lytle
1961 *Brazil: The Infinite Country.* New York.
Senna, Nelson Coelho de
1938 *Africanos no Brasil.* Belo Horizonte.
Siegel, Bernard J.
1952 "Themes and Variations in Brazilian Culture," *Pacific Spectator,* IV, 98–112.
Smith, T. Lynn
1963 *Brazil: People and Institutions,* rev. ed. Baton Rouge. Especially, parts of Chap. IV, "Racial Composition," pp. 51–74; and most of the section, "Other Significant Elements in the Religious Mosaic," pp. 528–46.
Smith, T. Lynn and Alexander Marchant, eds.
1951 *Brazil: Portrait of Half a Continent.* New York.
Staley, Austin John
1959 *Racial Democracy in Marriage: A Sociological Analysis of Negro-white Intermarriage in Brazilian Culture.* Unpublished Ph.D. thesis, University of Pittsburgh.
Stein, Stanley J.
1957 *Vassouras: A Brazilian Coffee County, 1850–1900.* Cambridge, Mass.
Taunay, Afonso de Escragnolle
1936 "Cifras do tráfico," *Jornal do Comércio,* 30 de agôsto.
1941 *Subsídios para a história do tráfico africano no Brasil.* São Paulo.
Tavares de Sá, Hernane
1947 *The Brazilians: People of Tomorrow.* New York.
Unzer de Almeida, Vicente, and Octavio Teixeira Mendes Sobrinho
1952 *Migração rural-urbana.* São Paulo.
Valente, Waldemar
1953 "A função mágica dos tambores," *Revista do Arquivo Público de Pernambuco* (Recife), IX–X.
1955 *Sincretismo religioso afro-brasileiro.* São Paulo.

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians
BRAZIL SL1

1957 "Influências islâmicas nos grupos de culto afro-brasileiros de Pernambuco," *Boletim do Instituto Joaquim Nabuco*, IV.

Verger, Pierre

1957 *Notes sur le culte des orishas et voduns à Bahia, la Baie de tous les Saints, au Brésil, et à l'ancienne Cote des Esclaves en Afrique*. Dakar.

Vianna, Sodré

n.d. *Caderno de Xangô*. Bahia.

Wagley, Charles

1949 "Brazil," in *Most of the World: the Peoples of Africa, Latin America and the East Today*, Ralph Linton, ed. (New York), pp. 212–70.

1952 "Attitudes in the Backlands," *Courier*, V, 8–9, 12–13.

1955 "Preface" to *As elites de côr: um estudo de ascensão social*, by Thales de Azevedo, pp. 7–12.

1958 "On the Concept of Social Race in the Americas," *Actas del Congreso Internacional de Americanistas*, XXXIII. San José.

1960a "The Brazilian Revolution: Social Change since 1930," in *Social Change in Latin America Today*, by Richard N. Adams and others. (New York), pp. 177–230.

1960b "Plantation-America: A Culture Sphere," in *Caribbean Studies: A Symposium*, Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 3–13.

1963a *An Introduction to Brazil*. New York and London.

1963b "From Caste to Class in North Brazil," in *Race and Class in Rural Brazil*, 2nd ed. Charles Wagley, ed. New York, pp. 142–56.

1964 "Social Relations in an Amazon Community," in *Amazon Town: A Study of Man in the Tropics*, 2nd ed. (New York), pp. 128–44.

Warren, Jr., Donald

1965 "The Negro and Religion in Brazil," *Race*, VI, 3, 199–216.

Willems, Emilio

1942 "Realizações das Escolas Normais: O negro no município de Jaú," *Sociologia*, IV, 308–10.

1946 *A aculturação dos alemães no Brazil*. São Paulo.

1949 "Race Attitudes in Brazil," *American Journal of Sociology*, LIV, 5, 402–8.

1953 "Letter to the Editor" regarding "Social Stratification in Latin

4: Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SO11 Bahia Brazilians SO11
BRAZIL SLI

B
113

America," by Ralph Beals, *American Journal of Sociology*, LIX. 59–60. Rejoinder by Beals, p. 60.

Zweig, Stefan

1941 *Brazil: Land of the Future*. Translated by Andrew St. James New York.

B
BB
113

COMPARATIVE DATA AND THEORY

Beals, Ralph L.

1955 "Indian-Mestizo-White Relations in Spanish America," in *Race Relations in World Perspective*, Andrew W. Lind, ed., pp. 412–32.

Blumer, Herbert

1939 "The Nature of Race Prejudice," *Social Process in Hawaii*, V, 11–20.

1955 "Reflections on Theory of Race Relations," in *Race Relations in World Perspective*, Andrew W. Lind, ed., pp. 3–21.

1958 "Race Prejudice as a Sense of Group Position," *The Pacific Sociological Review*, I, 3–7.

Degler, Carl N.

1960 "Slavery and the Genesis of American Race Prejudice," *Comparative Studies in Society and History*, II, 49–66.

Elkins, Stanley M.

1959 *Slavery*. Chicago.

Faris, Ellsworth

1937 "The Natural History of Race Prejudice," in *The Nature of Human Nature*. New York and London, pp. 354–66.

Hoetink, H.

1961 " 'Colonial Psychology' and Race," *Journal of Economic History*, XXI, 4, 629–40.

Lind, Andrew W., ed.

1955 *Race Relations in World Perspective*. Honolulu.

Little, Kenneth L.

1947 *Negroes in Britain: A Study of Racial Relations in English Society*. London.

Mintz, Sidney W.

1961 Review of *Slavery*, by Stanley M. Elkins, *American Anthropologist*, LXIII, 579–87.

B
BB
113

Myrdal, Gunnar

1962 *An American Dilemma: The Negro Problem and Modern Democracy,* 20th Anniversary Ed. New York.

Park, Robert E.

1950 *Race and Culture.* Glencoe, Ill.

Patterson, Sheila

1953 *Colour and Culture in South Africa: A Study of the Status of the Cape Coloured People Within the Social Structure of the Union of South Africa.* London.

Smith, M. G.

1955 *A Framework for Caribbean Studies.* Jamaica, B.W.I.

Tannenbaum, Frank

1947 *Slave and Citizen,* New York.

1960 "Discussion" of "Race Relations in Caribbean Society," by Eric Williams, in *Caribbean Studies: A Symposium,* Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 60–66.

Williams, Eric

1944 *Capitalism and Slavery.* Chapel Hill, N.C.

1960 "Race Relations in Caribbean Society," in *Caribbean Studies: A Symposium,* Vera Rubin, ed., pp. 54–60.

[P. 408 is blank]

INDEX TO NAMES

600

Abreu, Capistrano de, 144
Adalbert, Prince, 86, 325
Agassiz, Louis, 91, 173, 226, 325
Amado, Jorge, 19, 183, 210, 317
Amaral, Alvares do, 42, 43, 53, 141
Amaral, Braz do, 30, 34, 35, 36, 37, 145, 164
Anchieta, Padre José de, 29
Andrade, Mario de, 98, 101
Andrews, C. C., 86
Aranha, Graça, 288
Araripe Junior, 145
Austregesilo, A, 214
Azevedo, Aluizio de, 173

Barros, F. Borges de, 31
Bates, Henry W., 93, 94, 325
Bennett, Frank, 87, 88, 90
Bilden, Rüdiger, 173
Blake, Augusto Victorino, 176
Blumer, Herbert, xv
Bomfim, Manoel, 112
Bomfim, Martiniano do, 293
Brasil, Étienne Ignace, 43, 317
Britto, Eduardo A. de Caldas, 42
Brown, G. Gordon, xiv
Bryce, James, xvii, 3
Burton, Richard F., 76, 83, 97, 98, 325

Calmon, Pedro, 31, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 45, 69, 111, 112, 118, 119, 124, 163, 170, 226, 229, 239, 247
Calogeras, João Pandiá, 29, 35, 123
Campos, João da Silva, 220
Carneiro, Edison, 216, 220, 222, 251, 307
Carvalho, Alfredo de, 144
Carvalho, Carlos Alberto de, 90
Caymmi, Dorival, 248
Claudio, Affonso, 30
Codman, John, 50, 82, 83, 85, 89, 90
Cooper, Clayton S., 81
Corvo, J. de A., 113
Costa, Francisco Augusto, 98
Costa, Joventino Silvino da, 68
Coutinho, José Joaquim, 55
Couty, Louis, 30
Cunha, Euclydes da, 12, 215
Cunninghame-Graham, R. B., 12

Dampier, William, 146
Danvers, F. C., 112, 113
Darwin, Charles, 15
Debret, J. B., 76, 77, 78, 81, 92, 94, 247, 325
Denis, Pierre, 67
Dent, Hastings Charles, 88
Dornas Filho, João, 30, 167
Dover, Cedric, 115

Edschmid, Kasimir, 205
Elliott, L. E., 90
Ewbank, Thomas, 46, 173, 226

Faris, Ellsworth, 336
Fernandes, Gonçalves, 317
Ferreira, José Carlos, 35
Figueiredo, Fidelino de, 112
Fletcher, James C., 39, 226
Fonseca, Luiz Anselmo da, 7, 37, 47, 48, 52, 53, 56, 59, 60, 62, 63, 65, 66, 116
Freitas, Octavio de, 107
Freyre, Gilberto, 68, 69, 70, 78, 81, 85, 94, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 111,

000

113, 115, 116, 118, 120, 129, 143, 144, 146, 159, 160, 163, 164, 165, 167, 168, 171, 173, 174, 175, 207, 216, 217, 219, 227, 228, 263, 325
Frézier, Amadeu Francisco, 29, 34
Friederici, Georg, 31

Gallet, Luciano, 101
Garcia, Rodolfo, 33
Gardner, George, 71, 86, 89
Gobineau, Count A. J. de, 167
Graham, Maria, 35, 77, 78, 81, 83, 84, 98
Grant, Andrew, 102, 104

Handelmann, Heinrich, 176, 326
Herculano, Alexandre, 113
Hill, Lawrence F., 30, 37
Hutt, A. McD. Bruce, xiv

Johnston, Harry H., 39, 67, 68
Jones, Alfred Winslow, xv

Keller, A. G., 29, 112, 113, 117
Kelsey, Vera, 288
Kerbey, J. Orton, 328
Kidder, Daniel P., 37, 39, 226
Koster, Henry, 32, 36, 41, 46, 52, 67, 68, 73, 75, 78, 80, 82, 83, 85, 87, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 104, 145, 146, 163, 219

Lacerda, Jean Baptiste de, 78, 86, 103, 147, 150, 173
Lane-Poole, Stanley, 79, 117
Laytano, Dante de, 105
Lima, Jorge de, 215
Lima, Manoel de Oliveira, 173
Lindley, Thomas, 8
Linton, Ralph, 146
Lowrie, Samuel H., 344

McKenzie, R. D., 321
Malheiro, Perdigão, 30, 31
Manchester, Alan K., 167
Marques, Xavier, 317
Marroquim, Mario, 105
Martin, Percy A., 30, 37
Martius, C. F. P. von, 85, 88, 164, 325
Mathison, Gilbert Farquhar, 88, 89, 93, 103
Mawe, John, 89, 92, 93
Mendonça, Renato, 105
Mitchell, Margaret, 139, 335
Moraes, Evaristo de, 30
Moraes Filho, Mello, 99
Moreira, Juliano, 216

Nabuco, Joaquim, 46, 61, 64, 80
Nobrega, Manoel da, 31, 51, 111, 118, 143, 326
Norton, Henry K., 65

Oliveira, J. B. de Sá e, 239
Oliveira, Velloso de, 29
d'Orbigny, Alcide, 118

Park, Robert E., 13, 114, 115, 117, 175, 321, 325, 331, 337, 340
Pereira, A. Pacifico, 124
Pinho, Wanderley de A., 37
Prado, J. F. de Almeida, 31

Querino, Manoel Raymundo, 37, 99, 176, 249, 291

Ramos, Arthur, 31, 33, 40, 42, 48, 103, 137, 145, 170, 212, 216, 217, 252, 290, 343
Raymundo, Jacques, 105
Rebouças, Antonio Pereira, 168
Reclus, Onesime, 34
Redfield, Robert, xiv
Rego, José Lins do, 208
Reis, Antonio Alexandre Borges dos, 142, 171
Ribeiro, João, 81, 84, 85, 87, 93, 96, 106
Ripley, William Z., 116

4; Pierson Z-4, 5 (1935-1937) 1967
SOll Bahia Brazilians SOll

000

Risley, Herbert H., 330
Rocha, Manoel Ribeiro da, 51
Rodrigues, Nina, 40, 43, 50, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 99, 100, 206, 211, 212, 213, 258, 275, 277
Romero, Silvio, 64
Roosevelt, Theodore, xvii, 126, 152, 173
Rugendas, Maurice, 76, 161, 325

Sampaio, Theodoro, 135
Santos, F. Marques dos, 246
Schmidt, Max, 107
Scott, S. P., 80
Sette, Mario, 208
Silva, Artur Lobo da, 124
Silva, Ignacio Accioli de Cerqueira e, 31, 40, 41, 42, 49
Silva, Manoel Joaquim do Nascimento e, 51
Simonsen, Roberto, 30
Soares, Gabriel, 29
Southey, Robert, 29, 46, 50, 67, 141, 326
Spix, J. B. von, 85, 88, 164, 325
Stephens, H. Morse, 7, 113, 117
Stewart, C. S., 77, 82, 89, 96, 101
Stonequist, Everett, 175
Sumner, William G., 115
Taunay, Affonso de E., 30, 33, 34, 68, 170
Taunay, Visconde de, 168
Thomas, W. I., xiv, xv, 115
Tollenare, L. F., 325, 330

Valle, Flausino Rodrigues, 101
Varella, João, 99, 121, 220, 227, 239, 317
Varnhagen, Francisco A. de, 111, 141, 144, 326
Vasconcellos, Salomão de, 29
Verissimo, José, 103
Vianna, J. F. de Oliveira, 69, 70, 123, 145, 159, 162, 163, 164, 165, 170, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 219
Vieira, Padre Antonio, 55
Vilhena, Luiz dos Santos, 164, 326

Wagner, Zacharias, 144
Wallas, Graham, xxi
Walsh, R., 51, 68, 161
Wells, James W., 89, 101
Whiteway, R. S., 113
Wied-Neuwied, Prince Maxmilian, 41, 325
Williams, Mary W., 30, 37
Wyndham, H. A., 162

Znaniecki, Florian, xiv, xv

[P.412 is blank]

SUBJECT INDEX

Abeokuta, 240, 243

Abolition: apprehension regarding, 66–67; effect of decline of sugar market upon, 64; effect on rural aristocracy of, 11; movement, 7, 54–67, 346–47; opposition to, 65–67

Acculturation, xiii, xv, 75–76, 92–107, 272–73, 337; obstacles to, 71, 73, 304; *see also* Assimilation, Cultural fusion, Religious syncretism

Adaptation: inadequate, 30; of the mixed-blood, 124, 214, 323–24

Africa: chiefs from, 75; cloth from, 239; costume from, 69, 74, 95, 127, 201, 246–47, 271; dances from, 75, 95, 99, 249–50; foods from, 74, 242, 249; fruits from, 239; gestures from, 244, 266; images from, 75; immigrants from, 239; languages from, 73, 244, 276, 277, 287, 292, 294, 297; memories of, 240–42; music from, 74, 249, 290; musical instruments from, 74, 201, 239, 251–52, 286, 287, 289–90, 303; names from, 245; religion from, 75, 263–70, 275–317; songs from, 95, 201, 249–50, 287, 291, 297; trade with, 238–39

Africans: deportation of, 42, 45; imported into Portugal, 31; land in Bahia owned by, 239; number imported into Brazil, 33, 33 n., 34–35, 36–37

Aleijadinho, 168

Amalgamation, xx, 337, 344; *see also* Miscegenation, Race absorption

Amas, slave, 86, 102, 159, 171, 220

Angola, 4, 32, 33, 33 n., 34, 35, 92, 244, 276, 279

Arabic characters, 45 n.

Artisans: free Negro, 67; slave, 38

Ashantis, 35, 145

Assimilation, xii, xiv, xviii, xx, xxi, 238, 305, 314–16, 344; incomplete, xiii, 237, 348–49; policy of Catholic church toward, 95; primary relations as favoring, 90–91; as an unwitting process, 272–73

Assis, Machado de, 167, 168, 175, 215

Attitudes, xvii, xx, 24–25, 206–33; of "Africanos" toward Europeans, 272–74; of blacks toward mulattoes, 228; of blacks toward whites, 220–25; of the Catholic church toward intermarriage, 115, 143, 323; of mulattoes toward blacks, 227; of mulattoes toward whites, 226–27; of the state toward intermarriage, 113, 115, 143, 323; of whites toward African culture, 270–71, 309–13, 336; of whites toward blacks, 148, 226, 229, 232–33; of whites toward mulattoes, 230–31, 233, 242

Azores, 6

Bahia: aristocracy of, 7, 11; hinterland of, 10–11; location of, 4, 9, 15; name of, 3 n.; as a passive cultural area, 12–13; population of, 4, 6, 9 n., 11–12, 13, 29–30, 129–33; position of, 7–9, 10; as a slave port, 6

Bahiana, 247–48; costume, 74, 201, 246–48, 271, 302, 366

Balangandan, 246 n.

Barretto, Tobias, 167, 168, 215

Batucada, 201, 202, 203

Batuque, 100–101, 249

Beji, 255, 275, 283, 307, 310

Benguella, 35, 276

Berbers, 116, 117

Bilac, Olavo, 167, 175, 215

000

Bilingualism, 75, 244, 294

Black Code, lack of need for, 88

"Brancos da Bahia," 148, 191, 193, 105, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 202, 233; in exclusive clubs, 186, meaning of, 139; in the occupations, 177–83, 189

Boers, 114, 325

Bornús, 35 n., 74

Calunga, 210 n.

Candomblé, xviii, 7, 16, 74, 100, 201, 207, 238, 244, 251, 265, 267, 271, 275–317; arbitration of disputes among members of, 284; attitude of mulattoes toward, 313, 314–15, 316; attitude of whites toward, 309–13; belief, 275, 292, 305; *de caboclo*, 276, 277, 278, 280, 284, 305; *camarinha*, 268, 279, 287; ceremonial costumes, 297; ceremonial season, 280; Congo-Angola, 276, 277, 278, 280, 308; deities, 265, 266, 267, 268, 275, 280–83, 296, 306–9, 310; fetish sanctuary, 279, 280; food offerings, 270, 280, 281, 285; functionaries, 280, 281, 284–86; Gêge-Nagô, 276, 277, 280, 281–83, 288, 307, 308; initiatory rites, 268, 281, 286–87, 296, 301–2; leadership, 275, 279, 285, 292–95; 296–98, 302; location, 278, 279, 292; number in Bahia, 278–79; pantheon, 275, 276, 280–81, 282–83; ritual and ceremony, 275, 280, 281, 285, 288, 300, 302–4; sacred dance pavilion, 279, 293, 295, 300–301; sacred groves, 279; sacred lakes, 279; sacred springs, 279; separation by sexes in ceremonies of, 288; social function of, 304–5; status in, 289, 294–95; types of, 277

"Cape Coloured," 322, 345

Cape Verde Islands, 6

Capitães do matto, 43, 48

Capoeira, 206, 250–51, 252, 368

Caramurú (Diogo Alvares Correia), 141, 142–43

Caste: absence of, 21, 25, 337, 340, 348; function of, 330; parental sentiments as deterrent to development of, 134, 324

Catholic ideology, as favorable to Brazilian racial policy, 193–94

Calimbó, 209; see also *Candomblé*

Cháchá, 35

Charms, 43, 253–54, 257–58, 266

Civil War (U.S.), effect of on racial attitudes in the United States, 347

Class, 25, 122, 172; identified with color, 69–70, 337; indices of, 18; and racial distribution, 177–205, 338–39; recognition of Negro rise in, 347–48 350, 353–61; rise of mulatto in, 159–76; and spatial distribution, 15–25; *see also* Race and class

"Color blindness," 327

Color categories, 127, 136, 139–40

Color line, xvii

Comparative method, 3, 321–22, 348

Competition, 21, 347, 348; biotic, 34 n., 38, 124, 125, 223; lack of between free Negroes and lower-class whites, 162; race and economic, 177–86; for status, 68–69, 159–76, 186–205

Concubinage, 6, 326; see also *Mancebia*

"Congos," 32, 35 n., 244, 276, 277, 278, 280

Congressos Afro-brasileiros, xviii, 206–11, 278

Contact, between living and dead, 260–61; *see also* Cultural contact, Racial contact

Cordão, 201, 202, 203

Cotegipe, Barão de, 167, 168, 215

Cowries, 239, 269, 282, 296, 301, 302

Criação, system of, 160

Cucumbys, 99

Cultural area, active, 343; passive, 12–13, 343

6 80

Cultural change, 271, 272–73, 321; and disparagement of cultural forms, 271; *see also* Cultural disintegration, Cultural fusion, Religious syncretism

Cultural conflict, 39–45, 272–74, 276–77, 278 n., 310–12

Cultural contact, *passim;* with Africa, 237, 238–43

Cultural diffusion, 16, 17, 101–7, 309–10; shift in interest from to acculturation, xiii

Cultural disintegration, 238, 288 n., 305; and competition for loyalties, 316; and jealousy, 316; and personal conflict, 273; and romanticization of the past, 313–14, 316–17

Cultural frontier, 112, 114, 345

Cultural fusion, 7, 73, 94–101, 238, 275, 276; *see also* Religious syncretism

Curandeiro, 245, 284

Designations: class, 18–19; color, 127–29, 135–36, 364, 365; racial, 126

Dias, Gonçalves, 167, 168, 175, 215

Dias, Henrique, 91, 176

Dispersion, xx, xxi, 115, 321, 322

Displacement, 335

Divination, 258–60, 269, 281, 284

Divorce, 327

Dominance, biotic, xvii, 125

Effans, 35

Egbas, 35 n., 71 n., 243, 277 n., 297

Emancipation, 52–64; character of in Brazil, 171–72, 331; *see also* Abolition, Manumission

Endogamy, 340; disintegration of, 341, 345–46

Evil eye, 252–53, 258, 266

Expansion: Arab, 322; "barbarian," 322; of Western Europe, xii, 331–32, 324

Exú, 279, 282, 285, 286, 307

Family: structure of, 14, 76–78, 144, 160, 329; tradition, 159

Feiticeiro, 245, 269, 284, 364

Fetish cult; see *Candomblé*

Fetish deities; see *Orixás*

Figa, 257, 266

Filha de santo, 208, 257, 268, 291–92, 295, 298–99; see also *Yauô*

Folk costume; see *Bahiana* costume

Folk culture, 237

Folk festivals, 95–96, 96–97, 97–98, 366–68

Folk gestures, 244–45, 266, 288, 289

Folklore, 260 n., 261–63

Forte de El Mina, 35, 145

Free Negroes, 82, 161; and abolition, 66; occupations of, 67–68, 82–83, 162; and slave revolts, 42, 45; and the slave trade, 68

Frente Negra Brasileira, 343

Fulâhs, 35, 145

Gé, 74

Gallinhas, 74

Gama, Luiz, 170

Garvey, Marcus, 243 n.

Gêges, 35, 39, 45 n., 73, 74, 244, 275, 278, 279, 296, 297

Goa, 113, 323

Goanese, 345

Grûnce, 74

Guinea, 32, 33, 34

Gypsies, 6, 367

Hair texture, as a symbol of status, 140, 228 n.

Haitian revolution, 65

Haussás, 35, 39, 41, 42, 44 n., 45 n., 74

Hawaii, 141, 337, 348

Historical process, 321–22

Homem, Salles Torres, 167, 168

Hypergamy, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 141

Ibeji; *see* Beji
Ifá, 281, 283, 307
Ige-shas, 35 n., 71 n., 277 n., 297
Illegitimacy, 144, 328
Immigrants, recent, xix, 122, 295, 344
Inbreeding, 70 n.
India, xiii, 3, 114, 141, 322, 324, 330
Indian (Brazilian): absorption of, 6, 118, 135; expulsion of, 6; extermination of, 6; intermarriage with, 6, 115, 141–44; superiority of hybrid, 124; survival of cultural traits, 238, 276
Inferiority, sense of as stimulus to cultural achievement, 349
Intermarriage, xvii, 25, 123, 141–56, 338; attitude of Catholic church toward, 113, 323; and class identification, 147, 148–53, 340; establishment of a tradition of, 111–17, 141–43, 345; and family structure, 144; as an incident of settlement on a racial frontier, 115, 324; with Indian women, 6, 115, 141–44; Japanese-Brazilian, 344; with mixed-bloods, 144–45, 146–47, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153–54, 160, 326, 345; with Negro women, 145–47; opposition to, 70, 118 n., 153; overcoming obstacles to, 155–56, 341–42, 346; in Portugal, 117; and rise in class, 174
Irókô; *see* Lókô
Isolation, vii, 12, 13, 348; customary, 18, 45, 71, 270

Java, 114, 141
Jews, xii–xiii, xx, 4, 232, 340

Kanúri, 74

Ladinos, 76
Lagos, 35, 39 n., 71 n., 240, 242, 243
Legislation affecting slaves, 51, 52, 62–63, 64, 84–85, 87, 92
Literature, the Negro in, 168, 169
Loanda, 35, 276
Lókô, 283, 307
Lundú, 100
Lynching, absence of, 222, 349

Macanese, 322, 345
Macumba, 208; see also *Candomblé*
Mãe Anninha, 292, 305, 306, 313, 316, 316 n.
"Mãe Preta," 91
Mãe de santo, 281; see also *Pae de santo*
Mães d'agua, 254–55, 280, 296, 299, 307, 310; *see also* Nanan, Oxun, Oxun-manrê, Yanson, Yemanjá
Magic: black, 252–53, 266, 269, 284, 312; protection against, 253–54, 257–58, 266; refusal to deal in, 297; *see also* Evil eye
Malês, 277 n.; uprising led by, 7, 43–45
Mancebia, 120, 122, 327–29
Mandingas, 35, 74
Manual labor, despised, 69, 161–62
Manumission, 39, 51–54, 331, 346
Maracatú, 208 n.
Marginal man, 174–75; circumstances not ordinarily conducive to appearance of, 342, 349
Mental world: lower class, 263–70, 281; upper class, 237, 270
Migration, xi, 4, 6, 112, 113, 162; *see also* Dispersion
"Minas," 35, 145, 146
Miranda, Carmen, 248
Miscegenation, xv, xvii, 111–56; circumstances favorable to, 113, 114, 115, 117, 119–23; considered as inevitable, xi, 212, 218; considered as natural, 135; considered as producing a superior stock, 214; as deterrent to race prejudice, 134–35, 345; as incidental to the expansion of a racial frontier, xi, 115; *see also* Mixed-bloods, Mulattoes

0 0 0

Mixed-bloods, 6, 115 n., 117, 118, 125, 131, 132, 141, 143, 144; as *capitães do matto*, 48; in the occupations, 177–83; proportion of, 124, 126; regarded as superior, 124; and status, 114, 324, 326, 337–40; *see also* Miscegenation, Mulattoes

Moema, 143

Mohammedanism: at Bahia, 7, 39, 40, 41, 43–44, 277 n.; and slavery, 79

Moors, 116, 117; cultural patterns taken over from, 326–29

Morale, group, 305

Moreira, Juliano, 169, 215

Morena, 136–38, 150, 199–200; as a symbol, 137–38

Mortality: of lower-class infants, 125; during the "middle passage," 34 n., 38; of mixed-bloods, 124

Mozambique, 32

"Mulatto," meaning of in Brazil, 138

Mulattoes: absorption of, 123, 345; absorption of blacks by, 123, 345; accepted into the white category, 127–29, 349; acclimatization of, 124; and community activities, 195–204; and economic level, 183–85; in educational institutions, 187–91; in exclusive clubs, 186–87; in the fetish cult, 295, 298, 301; free, 160–62; intelligence of, 160, 165, 230; intermarriage with, 144–45, 146–47, 140, 150, 151, 152, 153–54, 160, 345; and leadership, 168–70, 172, 173, 180, 181, 187, 191, 193, 196, 197–98, 204; location in Bahia of, 20, 21, 24, 278; and *mancebia*, 120, 122; mobility of, 162–63; in the occupations, 177–83, 347; physical variation among, 135; in play groups, 194–95; and political activity, 196; prominent, 167–70, 215–16, 217; proportion of, 118–19, 129–32; in religious institutions, 192–94; rise of, 159–76, 353–61; rise in class and personal characteristics of, 174–75, 230, 231; as slave overseers, 46, 80; as slave-owners, 80 n.; social advantages of, 159–61; and "social" functions, 195–97; in sports, 195; status of, xvii, 159–233, 347–48; *see also* Miscegenation, Mixed-bloods

Multiracial class society, 336–37, 348

Nabuco, Joaquim, 46 n., 61, 64 n., 80

Nagôs, 7, 45 n., 69, 71, 72, 73, 99, 244, 275 277, 279, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 313, 363

Nanan, 266, 275, 283, 299, 307

"Negro," meaning of, in Brazil, 127–29, 138, 130, 218–19, 220, 332, 342, 349

Negro: alleged body odor of, 175; alleged inferiority of, 211–17, 218; population in Bahia, 29–30, 130, 131, 132

Negro churches, 164

Negro clubs, 342–43

Negro fraternal orders, 68

"Negro problem," in Brazil, 212–13

Negro regiments, 68, 164

Negro religious brotherhoods, 68, 93

Negro saints, 93, 94, 99

Negro in the United States, xii–xiii, xiv, xx, 176, 185, 220, 229, 331, 332–35, 340–41, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349

Negros de ganho, 38–39, 71, 73; and slave revolts, 40, 41, 90

Obeisance, 288

Obligations: nonfulfilment of, 266–67; ritualistic, 285, 287, 288, 289, 300

Occupational pyramid, 339

Occupations, distribution of Negroes in, 177–83, 347

Ogans, 291, 295, 299, 306, 317 n.; function of, 285

000

Ogun, 266, 268, 275, 280, 282, 291, 299, 300, 306

Olorun, 280

Omolú, 255, 275, 280, 282, 299, 307

Ordeal, 287

Orixás, 95, 99 n.; fetishes of, 282–83; insignias of, 282–83; names of, 282–83; as personifying natural phenomena, 282–83; "possession" by, 281; sacred colors of, 280, 282–83; sacred cries of, 280, 282–83; sacred days of, 280, 282–83; sacred dress of, 280, 282–83; sacred foods of, 280, 282–83; sacred ornaments of, 282–83; sex of, 282–83

Oxagian, 280, 299

Oxalá, 266, 280, 282, 288, 295, 299, 306

Oxóssi, 267, 275, 280, 282, 299, 300, 306

Oxun, 275, 280, 283, 295, 299, 302, 307

Oxun-manrê, 275, 279, 283

Pae de santo, 245, 254, 264, 265, 268, 269, 278, 279, 281, 284, 285, 286, 288, 296–97, 298, 300, 306, 309, 310, 312; characteristics making for prestige of, 284

Palmares, 50, 207

Paraguassú, 141, 142, 143

"Passing" lack of necessity for, 342, 349

Patrocinio, José do, 61, 167, 169, 215

Peçanha, Nilo, 167, 170, 215

Personality: changes in, 174–75, 230–31; cultural disintegration and disorganization of, 305

Personification: of natural phenomena, 275, 282–83; of tribe, 276

Plantation: *see* Sugar *engenhos*

Population: character of at Bahia, 11, 12; concentration in Brazil of Negro, 36; scarcity of as influencing character of racial situation, 111–15, 323

Portugal, 8, 112, 116, 117, 323

Portuguese, xix, 4, 6, 30, 31, 112, 113, 116, 117, 118, 122, 141, 144, 145, 321, 326

Portuguese Empire, 8, 112, 113, 323

Position, 159–233

"Possession," 263–64, 267, 281, 285, 288, 291–92, 300; means of invoking, 286; means of preventing, 267, 300

Prejudice: class, 349; effect of miscegenation on, 134–35; *see also* Race prejudice

Prestige: in the *candomblé*, 284, 289, 294; shift in object of, 166, 167; of the white, 69, 121, 226–27, 232; of the "whiter" child, 120–22

Primary relations, xi, 14, 40–41, 218, 329, 330, 335, 347; as deterrent to race prejudice, 135, 345; as modifying the character of slavery, 45, 76–79, 80–83, 90; and rise of mulatto, 123, 160, 171, 345; between whites and Negroes, 25, 50, 91, 103, 171–72, 331

Procedencia, of Bahian Negroes, 32, 33–35

Professional class, rise of, 165–67

"Progressive Aryanization," xvii, 123, 125–26, 217–18, 345

Queitos, 35 n., 277, 292, 297

Quilombos, 42, 43, 48–50

Race: and class, xvii, xviii, 21, 25, 147, 151, 152, 155–56, 204–5, 232, 336–40; and economic competition, 183–86; etiquette, 81–82; interest in merely academic, xviii, 211–17, 220; and occupation, 67–68, 69, 119, 161–62, 164–65, 173, 177–83, 223–24; and resistance to disease, 124; and sex, 136–38, 144, 172–73; shift from racial descent to appearance as criterion of, 127; and spatial distribution, xviii, 15–25

Race absorption, xvii, 6, 118, 126, 322–23, 324, 325, 330, 345; circumstances conducive to, 323, 324; resistance to as constituting a race problem, 344

Race consciousness, xix, xx, 120; minimal, 116, 125, 219–20, 225, 342–44; and rise in class, 176

Race contact, *passim*

Race prejudice, 114, 342; circumstances in Brazil working against, 134–35, 331–35; comparative absence of, 118, 331, 349; components of the attitude of, 332; not instinctive, 336; primary relations as an obstacle to, 135, 345

Race problem, xi–xxi, 3; character of, in Brazil, 344, 350; Jewish, xii–xiii, 340–41; lack of, in Brazil with reference to the Negro, xvi, 344

Race relations, *passim;* circumstances in Brazil conducive to a deviant termination of, 323–35

Racial differences, 210; in mortality, 125; theories of, 211–18

Racial epithets, 138, 230, 363

Racial frontier, 112, 114, 115, 345

Racial "horizon," xii, xiii

Racial marks, 124–25, 155, 176, 228 n., identified with status, 69, 341, 346

Racial minority, xii, 340–41, 348

Racial policy, xvii–xviii, 113–15, 125–26, 218, 323, 330, 343, 344, 349–50

Racial situation, xi, xii, xvi, xix, xx, 3, 128, 151, 204; spatial distribution as an index of, 21–22; possibility of a statistical description of, 337–40

Rape, absence of "racial," 335, 340

Rebouças, Andre, 167, 168, 170, 215

Rebouças, Antonio, 167, 168, 215

Reconcavo, 11, 12, 30, 42, 43, 44, 159, 250

Reconstruction, effect on racial attitudes in the United States of, 347

Religious syncretism, 94–96, 98, 99, 207, 266, 277 n., 296, 301, 305–9; conditions favoring, 307–8; opposition to, 308

Samba, 206, 248 n., 249–50, 362, 368

Sampaio, Theodoro, 169

São Thomé, 32, 34, 68

Seclusion of women, 23, 329–30

Segregation, xviii, 20–21, 295; lack of racial, 21–25, 118, 348; psychic, xix; of sexes in *candomblé* ceremonies, 288

Sertão, 12, 135

Settlement, 4, 6, 21, 39 n., 73, 111, 141, 324; *see also* Dispersion

Sex, of *orixás*, 282–83; role of, in rise of mulatto, 166, 172–73

Sex ratio: unbalanced, 111; and miscegenation, 323, 324, 345

Sickness and its cure, ideas of, 252–58, 269

Slave: Mohammedan conception of, 79; tradition in Africa, 38; *see also* Slaves

Slave trade, 32–37; abolition of, 36–37, 51; articles used in, 33–34, 35; beginnings of Brazilian, 6, 31; and English capital, 37; and Free Negroes, 68; and mortality, 34 n., 38; ports of entry for, 6, 35; and United States ships, 37

Slavery: acculturation during, 71–107; atrocities during, 45, 46–48; and colored overseers, 46; general character of in Brazil, 80, 88–91, 346; Indian, 6, 30–31, 47 n.; life during, 45–51, 76–95; in Portugal, 31, 117; types of slave labor, 32, 38–39; *see also* Abolition, Emancipation, Manumission

Slaves: baptism of, 92, 159; festivals of, 93–98, 99–100; as field hands, 40, 90, 159; fugitive, 42, 43, 48–50; holidays of, 46; Indian in contrast to African, 30–31; marriages of, 83, 94, 159; mass flights of, 63, 167; number of, in Bahia, 30; owned by Negroes, 66, 68; prices of, 35-36; revolts of, 7, 39-45, 74, 207; rights of, 83-87; suicide of, 38; whipping-post for, 19 n.; see also *Negros de ganho*

Social change, and rise of mulatto, 172

Social distance, xviii, 18-19, 40, 90

Social mobility, 156, 162, 173, 341, 345, 350; of the mulatto, 159-76, 353-61; of the Negro, 331

Social sanctions, 115, 305, 323, 327

Social solidarity, xvi, 14, 273, 304; along class lines, 340; lack of along race lines, 340; need of as influencing the Brazilian racial situation, xix-xx; racial situation as constituting a threat to in the United States, xviii

Social unrest, 44

Societies, formation of new, 324

Soothsayer, 245; as a person, 294-95

South Africa, 114, 141, 322, 324-25

Souza, Thomé de, 111, 141, 143, 323

Status, 16, 116-17; in the *candomblé*, 289; identified with racial marks, 341, 346; lack of threat to, 332, 335, 347; of mulatto, xvii, 159-233, 347-48; of Negro, 22, 153, 338, 340; threat to, 339; of woman, 23, 327, 329-30; *see also* Class

Sugar cultivation, 7; decline of, 64, 167; and slave labor, 38, 250

Sugar *engenhos*, 7, 8 n., 209

Symbiosis, 37-38; as laying the basis for a moral order, 330-31

Symbols: of the Brazilian racial situation, 126, 128, 137-38, 152, 348, 350; of class identification, 8, 16, 163, 166, 170-71; of freedom, 51 n.; of race, 140, 228 n.

Taboo, 13 n., 268, 287, 288

Tapas, 35, 45 n., 74

Teachers, colored, 181, 189-91

Tension, 286, 300

Tobacco: and slave labor, 38; and the slave trade, 33-34, 35

Tshi, 74

Tuberculosis, 124, 210, 223

Tupinambás, 6, 141, 276

Tupiniquins, 6

Tupís, 6, 254 n., 276

União das Seitas Afro-brasileiras, 278, 317 n.

Venereal disease, 120 n., 253

"White," meaning of in Brazil, 127-29

"Whitening" process, 121-22, 125, 132-33; *see also* "Progressive Aryanization"

Whydah, 35, 39 n., 239 n.

Wishes, 305

Xangô, 208, 209, 254, 256, 266, 267, 268, 275, 280, 282, 295, 296, 299, 300, 307

Yansan, 275, 280, 283, 299, 307

Yauô, 286, 296, 301; initiation of, 286-87

Yemanjá, 255, 275, 280, 282, 299, 300, 307

Yorubas, 35, 35 n., 39, 43, 71 n., 99, 275, 277; *see also* Nagôs

563

/For information on various aspects of ethnic stratification in the state of Bahia, Brazil, see category 116, pp. xix-xxi, xxiii-lvi, lix, lxi-lxxi, lxxviii-lxxxiii, 3-4, 6, 19-25, 65-71, 73, 115-156, 159-205, 211-233, 237, 239-240, 270-274, 322-327, 330-332, 335-350, 354-355, 362-365, 368./